

# JOURNAL OF UKRAINIAN STUDIES

---

Summer–Winter 2000

---

## CONTRIBUTORS

Vira Aheieva  
Oleh W. Gerus  
Oleh S. Ilnytskyj  
Robert Karpiak  
Halyna Koscharsky  
Larissa M. L. Zaleska Onyshkevych  
Marko Pavlyshyn  
Nelli Prystalenko  
Myroslav Shkandrij  
Walter Smyrniw  
Maxim Tarnawsky  
Roman Weretelnuk

## GUEST EDITOR

Myroslav Shkandrij



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2016

*JOURNAL OF*

**UKRAINIAN**

**STUDIES**

---

Volume 25, Numbers 1–2

Summer–Winter 2000

---

Creating a Modern Ukrainian Cultural Space  
*Essays in Honour of Jaroslav Rozumnyj*

CONTRIBUTORS

Vira Aheieva  
Oleh W. Gerus  
Oleh S. Ilnytskyj  
Robert Karpiak  
Halyna Koscharsky  
Larissa M. L. Zaleska Onyshkevych  
Marko Pavlyshyn  
Nelli Prystalenko  
Myroslav Shkandrij  
Walter Smyrniw  
Maxim Tarnawsky  
Roman Weretelnuk

GUEST EDITOR

Myroslav Shkandrij

**Editor**  
Roman Senkus

**Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies**

**Editorial Board**

James Jacuta, Zenon E. Kohut, David R. Marples,  
Marusia K. Petryshyn, Serhii Plokhyy, Frances Swyrypa,  
Frank E. Sysyn, Maxim Tarnawsky

***Journal of Ukrainian Studies***

**Advisory Board**

Olga Andriewsky (Trent University, Peterborough, Ont.), L'ubica Babotová (Prešov University), Marko Bojcun (University of North London), Guido Hausmann (University of Cologne), Iaroslav Hrytsak (Institute of Historical Studies, Lviv State University), Tamara Hundorova (Institute of Literature, Kyiv), Heorhii Kasianov (Institute of the History of Ukraine, National Academy of Sciences of Ukraine, Kyiv), Bohdan Krawchenko (Academy of Public Administration and Local Government, Kyiv), Marko Pavlyshyn (Monash University, Melbourne), Iurii Shapoval (Institute of Political and Ethno-National Studies, National Academy of Sciences of Ukraine, Kyiv), Myroslav Shkandrij (University of Manitoba, Winnipeg), Vladyslav Verstiuk (Institute of the History of Ukraine, National Academy of Sciences of Ukraine, Kyiv)

The *Journal of Ukrainian Studies* is a semi-annual, peer-refereed scholarly serial published by the Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies, University of Alberta, 450 Athabasca Hall, Edmonton, Alta., T6G 2E8, Canada. Telephone: (780) 492-2972; fax: (780) 492-4967; e-mail: [cius@gpu.srv.ualberta.ca](mailto:cius@gpu.srv.ualberta.ca). Annual subscriptions are \$26.75 (GST incl.) for individuals and \$37.45 (GST incl.) for libraries and institutions in Canada. Outside Canada annual subscriptions are U.S.\$25.00 for individuals and U.S.\$35.00 for libraries and institutions. Some back issues are also available. Subscriptions are payable to the Journal of Ukrainian Studies at the above address by cheque, money order, VISA, or MasterCard. Please do not send cash.

The *Journal* publishes articles and book reviews in Ukrainian and Ukrainian-Canadian studies. Persons wishing to submit articles should first send a letter of inquiry and an abstract to the Editor, Journal of Ukrainian Studies, 1 Spadina Crescent, Room 111, University of Toronto, Toronto ON, M5S 2J5, Canada. Telephone: (416) 978-8669 or 978-6934; fax: (416) 978-2672; e-mail: [r.senkus@utoronto.ca](mailto:r.senkus@utoronto.ca). For additional guidelines, see the last page of this issue.

Copyright © Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies, 2002.

Printed 2002 in Canada. ISSN 0228-1635



## Contents

### Articles

Introduction / 1

Oleh S. Ilnytskyj

Rape in Shevchenko's *Trizna*: Textual Fact or Theoretical Fiction? / 3

Roman Weretelnky

On Varvara Repnina's "Devochka" / 19

Maxim Tarnawsky

Mykola Ievshan: Modernist Critic? / 33

Vira Aheieva

Mykola Khvylovy and Expressionism / 45

Myroslav Shkandrij

The Rape of Civilization: Recurrent Structure in Myroslav Irchan's Prose / 61

Nelli Prystalenko

Ielyzaveta Piskorska: A Rediscovered "Boichukist" / 73

Robert Karpiak

Demythifying a Universal Hero: Spyrydon Cherkasenko's Vision of Don Juan / 91

Marko Pavlyshyn

The Soviet Ukrainian Whimsical Novel / 103

Walter Smyrniw

The Function of Time in Lina Kostenko's Dramatic Works / 121

Halyna Koscharsky

The Poetry of Kostiantyn Moskalets, Natalka Bilotserkivets, and Viktor Kordun / 131

Larissa M. L. Zaleska Onyshkevych

Tradition and Innovation in Twentieth-Century Ukrainian Verse Drama / 139

Oleh W. Gerus

The Christian Experience in the Soviet Empire: Church-State Relations in Eastern Europe, 1917–1991 / 159

Nevenka Koscevic

Jaroslav Rozumnyj: A Bibliography / 181

## Review Articles

Natalia Shostak

A Pioneering Oral History of Collectivization / 195

Taras Kuzio

Nation Building in Ukraine and the Former USSR / 200

Borys Biletsky and Pavlo Mykhailyna

The First Ukrainian Historiography Textbook in Independent  
Ukraine / 209

Vsevolod Naulko

A Fundamental Work on the Ethnography of Bukovyna / 214

Andriy Hornjatkevych

What or Who Is Really a Threat to the Ukrainian Language / 219

## Book Reviews

Leontii Voitovych et al., eds., *Dokumenty rosiiskyykh arkhiviv z istorii Ukrainy*,  
vol. 1, *Dokumenty do istorii zaporozkoho kozatstva 1613–1620 rr.*  
(A. B. Pernal) / 231

John-Paul Himka, *Religion and Nationality in Western Ukraine: The Greek  
Catholic Church and the Ruthenian National Movement in Galicia,  
1867–1900* (Paul Robert Magocsi) / 232

Israel Kleiner, *From Nationalism to Universalism: Vladimir (Ze'ev) Jabotinsky  
and the Ukrainian Question* (Henry Abramson) / 235

Natalie Kononenko, *Ukrainian Minstrels: And the Blind Shall Sing*  
(William Noll) / 237

Grzegorz Motyka, *Tak było w Bieszczadach: Walki polsko-ukraińskie, 1943–1948*  
(Peter J. Potichnyj) / 240

Bohdan Nahaylo, *The Ukrainian Resurgence* (Robert Kravchuk) / 242

Taras Kuzio, *Ukraine: Perestroika to Independence*, 2d ed.  
(Bohdan Harasymiw) / 244

Paul D'Anieri, Robert Kravchuk, and Taras Kuzio, *Politics and Society in Ukraine*  
(Victor Chudowsky) / 246

Theofil Kis, Irena Makaryk, and Roman Weretelnik, eds., *Towards a New  
Ukraine*, vol. 1, *Ukraine and the New World Order, 1991–1996*  
(Robert S. Kravchuk) / 248

Taras Kuzio, Robert Kravchuk, and Paul D'Anieri, eds., *State and Institution  
Building in Ukraine* (Nancy Popson) / 250

Elizabeth Pond, *The Rebirth of Europe* (Marta Dyczok) / 251

Mary Buckley, ed., *Post-Soviet Women: From the Baltic to Central Asia*  
(Christine D. Worobec) / 254

Vira Aheieva, *Poetesa zlamu stolit: Tvorchist Lesi Ukrainky v postmodernii  
interpretatsii* (Myroslav Shkandrij) / 256

Natalya Dudash, comp., *Rusynsky/ruski pisni* (Bogdan Horbal) / 257

Ivan Salo, *Tvory*, vol. 1 (Myroslav Shkandrij) / 259

- Stanisław Stępień, *Ukrainoznawstwo: Materiały do bibliografii. Publikacje wydane na Ukrainie w latach 1996–1998* (John-Paul Himka) / 261
- Svitlana Pyrkalo, *Peršyj slovnyk ukrajins'koho molodižnoho slenhu* (Alexander Kratochvil) / 261
- Ivan Kernytsky, *Weekdays and Sunday* (Jarosław Zurowsky) / 263

## **Books Received / 265**

### **A Note to Our Readers**

After this issue had already been printed, it was brought to my attention that the book reviewed on pp. 209–13, V. P. Kotsur and A. P. Kotsur's *Istoriografii istorii Ukrainy: Kurs leksii*, had been castigated as a major example of plagiarism in Ukrainian scholarship. For details, please see Volodymyr Rychka, "Za kym b'iut 'Lytavry,'" *Ukrainskyi humanitarnyi ohliad* (Kyiv), issue 4 (2000): 138–42. Borys Biletsky and Pavlo Mykhailyna's review article is their personal assessment of the book in question, and in no way should it be considered as reflecting the position of the *Journal of Ukrainian Studies* or the Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies.

Roman Senkus  
Editor



Jaroslav Rozumnyj

# Introduction

This special issue of the *Journal of Ukrainian Studies* honours Jaroslav Rozumnyj. The theme, "Creating a Modern Ukrainian Cultural Space," brings together essays from a number of disciplines and perspectives that reflect his particular interests in cultural developments, both in Ukraine and in the diaspora communities. Professor Rozumnyj has been associated primarily with the University of Manitoba, where he taught for over thirty years and headed the Department of Slavic Studies (1976–89). He has also maintained close connections with other institutions. He has taught at the Ukrainian Free University in Munich and was the dean of that institution's Faculty of Philosophy in the years 1995–96. Since 1992 he has been a member of the International Advisory Board of the Kyiv-Mohyla Academy National University, and in 1996 he was made an honorary professor of that university. Professor Rozumnyj has also been a visiting professor or research scholar at the Ukrainian Catholic University in Rome, the University of Ottawa, and Macquarie University in Sydney, Australia.

Throughout his career, as the selected bibliography in this volume indicates, Professor Rozumnyj maintained scholarly interests in a number of fields. They include modern and contemporary Ukrainian poetry, the Ukrainian cultural experience in Canada, early modern Ukrainian writing, and postwar Ukrainian film. He was also a very active reviewer, a regular contributor to newspapers, and a constant participant in community life. This aspect of his work has been recognized by the presentation of a number of awards by the University of Manitoba, the Ukrainian Canadian Congress, and other community organizations.

Jaroslav Rozumnyj was born in 1925 and grew up in the village of Vychilky (now Honcharivka) near Ternopil in Western Ukraine. The Second World War interrupted his high-school education, which he was able to complete only after the war as a displaced person in Germany. He obtained a B.A. in philosophy and theology from the Ukrainian Catholic Seminary in Culemborg, Holland in 1951 before moving to Canada, where he completed an M.A. and then a Ph.D. in Slavic Studies at the University of Ottawa. His wartime experiences and early training in philosophy and theology left their mark on his work and activism. Throughout his life he has been constantly involved with historical and political issues and always vitally interested in detecting the unique spiritual imprint that a writer manifests in his or her work.

At the University of Manitoba Professor Rozumnyj introduced and taught a number of courses in folklore and nineteenth- and twentieth-century literature. The writers covered—Skovoroda, Shevchenko, Franko, Lesia Ukrainka, the generation of the 1960s in Ukraine, and the New York Group of poets—became the subjects of his articles and of the M.A. and Ph.D. dissertations that he supervised. In the 1960s, when it was still controversial to do so, and in the 1970s and 1980s he hosted and organized poetry readings for many writers from Ukraine, among them Vitalii Korotych, Dmytro Pavlychko, Ivan Drach, Roman Lubkivsky, and Borys Oliinyk. These visits led to the establishment of close links between Manitoba and a number of institutions, writers, and scholars in Ukraine. In the early 1990s Professor Rozumnyj established close relations with Viacheslav Briukhovetsky, who revived the Kyiv Mohyla Academy, the first university among the Eastern Slavs, and became the first president of the recreated institution. Today this is the leading reform university in Ukraine, a unique bilingual Ukrainian-English institution. Professor Rozumnyj was closely involved in its foundation and in gathering support for it in Canada and other countries.

Jaroslav Rozumnyj always understood the importance of conducting research into the life of the Ukrainian community in the United States and Canada. On his invitation several contemporary émigré poets associated with the New York Group visited Manitoba, among them Bohdan Boychuk, George Kolomayets, Patricia Kylyna, and Yuriy Tarnawsky. Professor Rozumnyj has edited two volumes of essays on Ukrainians in Canada and is currently involved in the preparation of the Canadian volume of the seven-volume *Entsyklopediia ukrainskoi diaspori*. A volume of his selected essays is also in preparation.

The contributions in this volume are a tribute to Jaroslav Rozumnyj's work and the impact it has had on Ukrainian studies. Many of the authors are his friends, all of whom have been shaped by his scholarship and influenced by his desire to advance knowledge of Ukrainian cultural achievements. We wish him success in the projects that he is now bringing to completion.

I would like to acknowledge the assistance of the *Journal of Ukrainian Studies*, particularly that of Roman Senkus, and of the contributors in putting this volume together.

Myroslav Shkandrij



# Rape in Taras Shevchenko's *Trizna*: Textual Fact or Theoretical Fiction?

Oleh S. Ilnytskyj

This paper is prompted by George G. Grabowicz's "Nexus of the Wake," still the most current, thorough, and influential examinations of Shevchenko's *Trizna*.<sup>1</sup> My focus here will not be the study itself, but rather the more confined yet quite indispensable claim made therein—namely, that *Trizna* depicts a rape. My argument will be that, on this particular point, Grabowicz's interpretation is fundamentally in error and that there is in fact no sexual violence in the passage he singles out for such a treatment.<sup>2</sup>

*Trizna* (1843) is one of three poetic works that Shevchenko wrote in Russian. The two others are "Slepaia" and a fragment of the drama "Nikita Gaidai." Grabowicz argues intriguingly that these works—and *Trizna* above all—"perform a meditating function" between Shevchenko's Ukrainian poetry and his Russian prose. *Trizna*, he says, stands strategically between the mythic mode of Shevchenko's Ukrainian poetry and his "ratiocinative" Russian prose. The poem tells the story of a yearly wake, an act of remembrance, for a deceased "best friend," a man described as a prophet who, to use Grabowicz's words, is characterized by a "message of love, freedom, and peace" (p. 327). The longest part of this lengthy narrative poem presents the "lifestory of the hero." Grabowicz draws attention to the autobiographical elements of the poem, emphasizing the "topoi of [Shevchenko's] symbolic autobiography" (e.g., solitude, alienation, mission in life). He writes: "This deeper form of autobiogra-

---

1. *Harvard Ukrainian Studies*, 3–4 (1979/1980): 320–47. Subsequent page references to this article appear within the text.

2. My teaching experience tells me that, on first reading, Grabowicz's argument about rape is nearly always accepted by students as very persuasive. I wrote this paper after my graduate class encouraged me to present an alternate view.

phy constitutes the initial basis for our considering *Trizna* as a representative, conjunctive expression of Shevchenko's inner world" (p. 330).

Grabowicz devotes only about three and a half pages of his article to seduction and rape, but the theme plays a prominent role in his overall analysis. It is also the first major topic to which he turns following a series of preliminary historical and summary comments. Grabowicz gives considerable weight to sexual violence in *Trizna*, invoking or alluding to it on several other occasions. He speaks of rape as the hero's "primal trauma" (p. 336), his "primal violation and fall" (p. 338). In another instance he affirms: "[the hero] is permanently marked by the violation and trauma that becomes for him his peculiar original sin" (p. 339). "[I]t is through death that the hero's profane nature, his 'original sin' and 'curse,' are purged and expiated, and his sacred nature finally established" (p. 343). Given both the narrow and wider repercussions of this theme, there seems ample reason to re-examine this particular aspect of *Trizna* more carefully.

Grabowicz prepares the ground for a sexual reading of *Trizna* with a brief review of "rape" and "seduction" in Shevchenko's oeuvre. Mention is made of "Kateryna," "Slepaia," "Vidma," "Naimychka," "Kniazhna," "Maryna," "Mariia," "Tsari," and "Buvaie v nevoli inodi zhadaui." Apparently trying to suggest beforehand what allegedly will occur in *Trizna*, Grabowicz makes the claim that "rape and seduction ... can also happen to a man" (pp. 333-4), citing the narrative poem "Petrus" as an example. Unfortunately, no convincing elaboration or analysis follows this questionable declaration, making it, at best, an extraordinarily strained explication.<sup>3</sup> Grabowicz does, however, quote one indisputable example of incestuous rape from "Kniazhna."

... Прокинсь!  
Прокинсья, чистая! Схопись,  
Убий гадюку, покусае!  
Убий і [Б]ог не покарає! (ll. 353-6)<sup>4</sup>

---

3. "Petrus" tells the tale of a poor noblewoman condemned to a loveless relationship when she is given away in marriage to a general, a seemingly kind man but one she does not love. A small bastard boy who accompanies her to her new estate as part of the dowry serves as a memory of her parental home and the object of her affection. She educates the boy; he matures into a handsome young man, and she falls obsessively in love with him. Although she entreats heaven to save her from her passion, she ultimately goes mad, poisoning her husband. The poem ends with Petrus taking the blame for the murder and being sent off to Siberia.

Given this plot, it is hard to imagine either of the two males as victims of "seduction" or "rape." One is murdered, the other sacrifices himself for a woman who loved him. Neither man's fate resembles that of Shevchenko's female sexual victims.

4. Taras Shevchenko, *Povne zibrannia tvoriv u dvanadtsiaty tomakh*, vol. 2 (Kyiv: Naukova dumka, 1990), 16. All poems will be cited from this edition. However, to avoid



Grabowicz argues that in such rape or seduction scenes as the one portrayed above Shevchenko typically resorts to a repetitive pattern of images, which inevitably include a dream, the rape itself, and fire. He says: "the dream (or sleep), rape (or seduction, or violation in general) and fire ... constitute a structural unit" (p. 334). This "set is explainable by the mechanism of psychic trauma and repressions: the repressed content (i.e., the 'rape') is revealed ... only when the defenses of the conscious mind are down, as in dreams. An integral component of the experience is the recollected shock, the total assault on the ego which is here symbolized by destructive fire, by a conflagration" (p. 335).

With this background and theoretical framework in place, Grabowicz then poses a rhetorical question: "What, one may ask, is the relevance of this for *Trizna*?" And he answers: "The relevance is, in fact, quite considerable" (p. 335). The evidence for extending to *Trizna* his interpretive paradigm about rape is found in the following scene. The highlighted text (ll. 89–111) is the one that Grabowicz quotes and on which he focusses most of his analysis. I have provided the other lines in order to establish a wider context and facilitate further discussion below.

85. В семье убогой, неизвестной
86. Он выросстал; и жизни труд
87. Как сирота, он встретил рано;
88. Упреки злые встретил он
89. За хлеб насущный ... В сердце рану
90. Змея прогрызла ... Детский сон
91. Исчез, как голубь боязливый;
92. Тоска, как вор, нетерпеливо,
93. В разбитом сердце притаился,
94. Губами жадными впиалась
95. И кровь невинную сосала ...
96. Душа рвалась, душа рыдала,
97. Просила воли ... Ум горел,
98. В крови гордыня клекотала ...
99. Он трепетал ... Он цепенел ...
100. Рука, сжимаясь, дрожала ...
101. О если б мог он шар земной
102. Схватить озлобленной рукой,
103. Со всеми гадами земными;
104. Схватить, измять и бросить в ад!..
105. Он был бы счастлив, был бы рад.

---

inconsistencies in line numbers, *Trizna* will be quoted from the same edition of Shevchenko that Grabowicz used: *Povne zibrannia tvoriv u shesty tomakh* (Kyiv: Vydavnytstvo Akademii nauk URSR, 1964).

106. Он хохотал, как демон лютый,
107. И длилась страшная минута,
108. И мир пылал со всех сторон;
109. Рыдал, немел он в иступленьи,
110. Душа терзалась страшным сном,
111. Душа мертвела, а кругом
112. Земля, господнее творенье,
113. В зеленой ризе и цветах,
114. Весну встречая, ликовала.
115. Душа отрадно пробуждалась,
116. И пробудилась ... Он в слезах
117. Упал и землю лобызает,
118. Как перси матери родной!..
119. Он снова чистый ангел рая,
120. И на земле он всем чужой.
121. Взглянул на небо: «О, как ясно,
122. Как упоительно-прекрасно!..
123. как там вольно будет мне!...»
124. И очи в чудном полусне
125. На свод небесный устремляет,
126. И в беспредельной глубине
127. Душой невинной утопает.

Grabowicz not only regards the foregoing as an obvious rape but asserts: "The parallelism, indeed, the structural equivalence of *this seduction-rape* [in *Trizna*] with the various others is not extraordinary by itself. What is extraordinary, however, is the fact that the usual encoding is dropped—the *victim* now is not one of Shevchenko's many seduced (or raped) and abandoned women, but the autobiographical, if symbolically, *projected persona of the poet himself*. The importance of this cannot be overestimated. It again reaffirms the pattern of identifications, and here specifically the pattern of Shevchenko's feminine identification. *It is a pattern that coheres into a fundamental structure of his creative personality ...*" (p. 336; emphasis added). In a footnote Grabowicz elaborates: "it should be noted that in terms of psychoanalytic theory, such feminine identification often points to a homosexual orientation." Lines 89–111 are given this specific exegesis:

From his dream of childhood the hero "awakens" through the agency of a "serpent" (!) into a terrifying reality, which is called at the end a "strašnyj son." *That the scene is full of sexual implications and veiled allusions to sexual violation is hardly in doubt*; it is enough to compare it with analogous scenes in "Knjažna," "Slepaja," "Maryna," or "Cari" to see distinct parallels. Significantly, too, the constant in these seductions-rapes is the image of the snake, the *zmija* (cf., for example, the exclamation of the narrator in "Knjažna" cited above or the mother's warning to her daughter in "Slepaja": "Ty ne znaeš, / Čto skoro vstretiš meždu nimi / Zmeju, užasnuju zmeju!"); lines 597–599). The serpent, moreover, is not

not merely a tempter, but, as the movement of the passage makes clear, a violator; and *the fate of the hero, as of all the ravished victims* in the various other poems, is *to be helpless*. Finally, here, too, we see *the recollected violation* presented through the image of cataclysmic fire: "I mir pylal so vsex storon." (p. 336; emphasis added)

In contrast to the preceding, I will argue that while the scene in question may contain words and phrases that are superficially suggestive, in context and as a whole it is bereft of *all* sexual connotations. Consequently it is my contention that *Trizna* generally, and this scene in particular, has no relevance to the rape/seduction theme in Shevchenko's work or his autobiography, symbolic or otherwise. I will show that the twenty-three lines that Grabowicz cites contain no "veiled allusions to sexual violation"; that the serpent is not a violator; and that the hero is neither a ravished victim nor helpless. The image of fire—despite some perfunctory resemblance to larger structural patterns in Shevchenko—is not linked in any way to a "recollected violation."

Before we turn to *Trizna*, one general comment is in order. It may be possible to come away from Grabowicz's text with the impression that the "structural unit" (of dream [sleep]/rape [seduction]/fire) applies to most, if not all, of the poems that Grabowicz enumerates as part of his seduction/rape theory: he speaks of these features as appearing "frequently" and "often" (p. 334). This, however, would be an erroneous conclusion. As a unit or set, these three elements are actually very rare and apply only to "Slepaia" and "Kniazhna"; they are absent (both as a unit and individually) in "Kateryna," "Naimychka," "Mariia," and "Petrus"; and they are only partially present in "Tsari" (which has neither a dream nor fire), "Maryna" (which has no sleep or dream), "Vidma" (which contains neither a dream nor fire), and "Buvaie v nevoli inodi zhadaui" (which has no dream or sleep, at least not one attributable to the victim). It should also be borne in mind that these poems speak about a very broad range of sexual and erotic topics, some of which hardly qualify as rape or violence, and may not even fall under the category of seduction. Thus, on one end of the scale we have a poem like "Tsari," which deals explicitly with rape and incest; and on the other we have "Kateryna," which, strictly speaking, is not even a poem about seduction, inasmuch as the woman freely and actively loves the man who abandons her. It seems, therefore, that Grabowicz brings together under one heading poems that rightly belong under several. Moreover, the set of contiguities or structural units that he speaks of, if they are at all valid, are based on very limited textual evidence, and hence his claims of their universal applicability (or obsessive repetition, cf. p. 335) in Shevchenko's oeuvre seem to be exaggerated.

To begin, perhaps the most rudimentary reason for questioning a sexual reading of *Trizna* is found in l. 115, which, curiously, Grabowicz neither cites nor discusses. Here Shevchenko explicitly states that the hero is emerging from

his dream feeling *cheerful*: “Душа *отрадно* пробуждалась.” If the dream is indeed a “recollected violation,” as Grabowicz posits, then this line is at best totally out of place or, at worst, grotesque: his thesis asks us to accept that the same “soul” that is racked, presumably, with remembered sexual torture in ll. 96–7 and 110–11 can come out of sleep happily. A similar objection is raised by l. 106—“Он хохотал, кака демон лютый” (He laughed like a mad demon)—which appears towards the end of the purported rape scene. How does one account for such laughter in a character who is ostensibly being sexually violated? Can these lines be brought into harmony with the idea that the protagonist is in the grip of “recollected shock” and “the total assault on [his] ego” (p. 335)? I suggest they cannot. If we introduce, as we must, these passages into Grabowicz’s interpretation, they not only confound his reading but suggest that *Trizna* does not partake of the typical “structural unit” that Grabowicz says governs rape/seduction in Shevchenko. Shevchenko, after all, typically expresses horror and revulsion at the very thought of rape. The example from “*Kniazhna*” above is an excellent illustration of this. The awakening to which the heroine is urged by Shevchenko’s lyrical voice is full of alarm and murderous rage.<sup>5</sup>

Grabowicz, however, in effect asks us to give credence to the notion that both the protagonist and the narrator in *Trizna* can recall an alleged rape and then blithely and joyfully proceed to other matters (note that ll. 111–14 are on the subject of spring). As I stated, he remains silent on the obstacles that these lines present to his interpretation, choosing instead to resume his construction of *Trizna* with ll. 116–19 (“Он в слезах / Упал и землю лобызает, / Как перси матери родной!.. / Он снова чистый ангел рая”), which lead him to the conclusion that the “hero ... is cleansed [from his rape] through tears” (pp. 336–7). This is a reading that is unsatisfactory not only from a purely psychological point of view but also the textual. Given that in “*Kniazhna*” even murder of the rapist is felt to be a barely adequate punishment for his heinous crime, it seems both strange and improbable that the victim in *Trizna* would find almost instant purification and solace through tears alone. (One might note that in “*Slepaia*” Oksana goes mad and kills her abuser; and vindictive madness also envelops “*Vidma*” for long stretches of time.) But more importantly, Grabowicz again refrains from commenting on why the victim would greet the return of a

---

5. In “*Buvaie v nevoli inodi zhadaui*,” the father is so upset by the recollection of his daughter’s rape that he appears to stutter as he recalls it, while the narrator (Shevchenko as a boy) betrays fear:

Вони, вони — не бійся, сину!  
Вони, ксьондзи, мою дитину  
З собою в хату завели,  
Замкнулись п’янії, я бачив.

repressed memory about rape with such obviously buoyant expressions of thanksgiving and joy as found in ll. 115–19.

Another reason to doubt Grabowicz's interpretation is found in the entire framing or motivation of the alleged rape. If this is a rape, then Shevchenko certainly foreshadows it in an atypical manner. Consider "Kniazhna" again: here rape is preceded by drinking and surreptitious entry into the girl's room, and the poem later includes fitting historical analogies to Beatrice Cenci (see ll. 357–9). Moreover, unlike in *Trizna*, the perpetrator is clearly identified:

Пляшки і гості, де що впало,  
Там і осталося. Сам не впав,  
Остатню каплю допивав.  
Та й ту допив. Встає, не пада,  
іде в покої ... Скверний гаде!  
Куда ти лізеш? Схаменись!  
Не схаменувся, ключ виймає,  
Прийшов, і двері одмикає,  
І лізе до дочки. (ll. 345–53)

"Buvaie v nevoli inodi zhadaui" anticipates the rape similarly, as does "Slepaia."<sup>6</sup> In *Trizna*, on the other hand, Shevchenko lays the ground for the dream (i.e., the alleged recollected rape) in an entirely different manner, resorting to a general mention of poverty, hunger, orphanage, and social conflict (ll. 85–9); in other words, he offers no obvious cue for a rape, which he does on most other occasions. Grabowicz dismisses these lines as simply "one or two cursory generalities about ... [the hero's] childhood." But in fact they are a crucial guide for what follows in ll. 89–111, signalling the start of a social and moral plane of exposition (instead of a sexual one) that confirms in another way the essential character of *Trizna* as a whole. Grabowicz submits that, unlike Shevchenko's other poems, which are heavily "encoded," this work is "virtually transparent," i.e., it bares its devices (p. 335; cf. also pp. 330 and 347). If that is the case, however, then *Trizna* turns out to be much more reserved and undemonstrative on the issue of sexual violence (assuming for a moment that it is present) than many other of Shevchenko's works, where this subject is treated openly and unambiguously. *Trizna* contains none of the forthrightness of "Kniazhna," for example, and therefore Grabowicz must engage in rather sophisticated decoding in order to establish the sexual argument. His deciphering of Shevchenko's sexual code should not blind us to the structure of the text itself, i.e., the obvious unity and connection that exist between what precedes and follows l. 89. Attention to this fact makes it obvious that the discourse and events of this section are not arranged to reveal a violent carnal encounter, but to register an

---

6. Cf. "Slepaia," l. 777: "И пан к страданице идет, / Бесстыдно пьяный ..."



intense psychological (perceptual) transformation that is engendered by social forces. To put it briefly, I contend that the scene in question is about the effect that society, *not* rape, has on the hero. The logical convergence of the text is not on the violated body but the mind, the soul, and the heart. The short episode is replete with words of this order (“сердце”; “разбитое сердце”; “душа”; “Душой невинной утопает” [l. 127]; “ум горел”), strongly suggesting that what is at stake is not sexual abuse but torments of the spirit.<sup>7</sup> It is life’s troubles (“жизни труд,” l. 86) and malicious recriminations (“Упреки злые,” l. 88) that inflict on the protagonist deep emotional wounds and provide him with painful knowledge about the world.

Obviously, much of the evidence for a sexual interpretation is tied up with ll. 89–90: “В сердце рану / Змея прогрызла” (Into the heart a wound / the serpent gnawed). The supposition is that the serpent is the violator, while the wounded heart represents the injured body of the youth. But does the context support this scenario? It may be useful to point out that Shevchenko’s poetry exploits the image of the serpent on many occasions without any obvious sexual connotation. For example, take these excerpts from “Ieretyk”:

Отак німота запалила  
Велику хату. І сім’ю,  
Сім’ю слав’ян роз’єднала  
І тихо, тихо упустила  
Усобищ лютую змію. (ll. 17–21)

У злодія вже злодій краде,  
Та ще й у церкві. *Гади! гади!*  
Чи *напилися* ви, чи ні  
*Людської крові?* (ll. 169–72)

While the lines above contain almost all of *Trizna*’s suggestive vocabulary, including the reference to fire and the drinking of blood, one would be hard pressed to find any true sexual innuendo there. Use of the word “serpent” appears in “Dumy moi, dumy moi” (1840):

Заховаю змію люту  
Коло свого серця,  
Щоб вороги не бачили ...” (ll. 81–3)

“Kateryna” betrays the main character’s despondency with these words:

---

7. This section basically illustrates what the poem established long before this: namely, that a sensitive, pure, and creative individual can do nothing but suffer in this life. The hero’s ontological emotional distress is already underscored in ll. 39 and 48; the first two lines of *Trizna* declare: “Душе з прекрасным назначеньем / Должно любить, терпеть, страдать ...”

Тяжко усміхнулась:  
 Коло серця — як *гадина*  
 Чорна повернулась (ll. 510–12)

and a nearly identical situation occurs in “Petrus”:

... Везла  
 Назад *гадюку* в серці люту  
 Та трошки в пляшечці отрути” (ll. 184–6).<sup>8</sup>

Such examples prove that there is ample precedent in Shevchenko's work for considering the imagery of the serpent in non-sexual terms and more specifically as the embodiment of evil, anger, and anguish, with the three meanings often so closely associated that they become mutually reinforcing. *Trizna* also resorts to such a conflation of meanings. In l. 90 “serpent” can suggest social evil if related to preceding lines about the hero's early suffering; moreover, only thirteen lines later the poem speaks of “earthly serpents” (“Со всіма *гадами земними*,” l. 103), which clearly do not represent all rapists.<sup>9</sup> Alternately, “змея” in l. 90 can be a very plausible metaphor for dark emotions and depression, as it is in Shevchenko's other poetry cited above. *Trizna* itself uses the word when the hero verbalizes his despondent mood:

«О дайте вздохнуть,  
 Разбейте мне череп и грудь разорвите,—  
 Там черви, там *змеи*, — на *волю* пустите!  
 О дайте мне тихо, навеки заснуть!»” (ll. 348–51)

Interestingly, just as in l. 97, the hero begs for freedom (*волю*) as the answer to his spiritual anguish.

The use of “змія” in the sense of a tormenting thought is also evident in a variant redaction of “Petrus.” Here the heroine is seen struggling with her illicit love for a young man (a bastard) whom she raised as her own boy:

Неначе лютая *змія*,  
 За серце грішная впилася  
 Любов нечистая ... не раєм,  
 А лютим пеклом розлилася  
 По грішній крові!.. і не знає,  
 Сама не знає, що робить.  
 І що їй діяти з собою?<sup>10</sup>

8. This same poem contains among the variants these lines: “В село небора привезла / Свою *змю*, ще гірше люту ...” (*Povne zibrannia tvoriv*, 2: 390).

9. The linking of “earth” and “serpent” invokes previously established significations in *Trizna* of the earth as sinful (“Почтили вы свято на *грешной земле*,” l. 17) and enslaved (“Воспойте свободу на рабской *земле*!” l. 20).

10. Cf. Taras Shevchenko, *Povne zibrannia tvoriv u dvanadtsiaty tomakh*, vol. 2 (Kyiv:

“Slepaia” offers an interesting insight into the other key words of lines 89–90, “В сердце рану.” As the following passage reveals, the “wounded heart” can clearly connote emotional or psychological wounds rather than sexual violation:

І вот она в грязи разврата,  
 Во славу дряхлых ваших дней,  
 Перед толпою черни пьяной  
 Пьет кубок .....  
 І запивает *сердца раны*. (ll. 101–5)

Aside from ll. 89–90, the most sexually suggestive passages are contained in ll. 92–100, which on the surface seem to outline both what is being done to the victim and his impotent flailing. The active or aggressive agent first manifests itself as the serpent (“Змея прогрызла ...”) but—and this is both strange and noteworthy—is transformed before long into “anguish” (“Тоска ... кровь невинную \ сосала ...” ll. 92–4). This metamorphosis should give pause to any speculation that the serpent stands for a rapist; instead, it rather strongly supports the idea of the serpent as a tormenting thought. The passive or helpless agents are the soul (l. 96) and, to a lesser degree, the mind (l. 97) and pride, with the former struggling, weeping, and begging for freedom: the mind is on fire; pride seethes. By l. 99 the poem speaks of the hero in the third person for the first time since l. 88, showing him trembling and turning numb, as it turns out, either because of pride or an impending rage. If I understand Grabowicz correctly, he sees the active and passive agents as distinctly separate, one identifying a pederast, the other his victim. But it is more than likely that there is in fact only one subject or actor in ll. 89–100, namely, a personified mental grief that is described in both passive and active ways. The “serpent” (змея), as in other instances of Shevchenko’s oeuvre, seems indeed to be just another name for “anguish” (тоска), for surely it is unlikely that “anguish” can serve as another name for “rapist.”<sup>11</sup> In *Trizna*, as on many other occasions, Shevchenko in effect reifies and dramatizes the emotions. It is, after all, usual for him to show the emotional struggle violently in terms of weeping, tearing, beating, fainting, and so on. Compare these examples:

- За чорнії брови / *Серце рвалося, сміялось*, / Виливало мову  
 (“Dumy moi, dumy moi,” ll. 29–31).

---

Naukova dumka, 1990), 390. Compare with analogous constructions without the word “serpent”: “А лютеє лихо / В самім серці ворухнулось / І світ запалило ...” (“Nevolnyk,” ll. 403–5); “Сховалося у серці *лихо*, / Як звір у темнім гаї” (“Naimychka,” ll. 92–3).

11. “Тоска” and its derivatives (e.g., “тосковал,” “тоскующей”) are used fifteen times in the poem, thereby underscoring the centrality of the theme.



- Що на Україні, / Серце *мліло*, не хотіло / Співать на чужині ... ("Dumy moi, dumy moi," ll. 37–9).
- Як і на чужині. / Чого ж серце *б'ється, рветься?* / Я там одинокий ... ("N. Markevychu," ll. 12–14).
- І сліду не стало. / Серце *мліє*, як згадаю ... / Чому не осталося? ("Haidamaky," ll. 373–5).
- Його сльози, давить душу, / Серце *роздирає*. / «Ой ви сльози, дрібні сльози!» ("Haidamaky," ll. 1471–3).
- Та не таким горем / *Карай* серце: *розірветься*, / Хоч би було камень. ("Haidamaky," ll. 1508–10).
- На неокраєнім крилі, / Нехай же серце *плаче, просить* / Святої правди на землі. ("Chyheryne, Chyheryne," ll. 36–8).
- Рвуться душу *запалити*, / Серце *розірвати*. / Не *рвіть*, думи, не *паліте*, ("Chyheryne, Chyheryne," ll. 49–51).
- В тілі душу закували, / Серце *запалили* / І галичі силу ("Son [Komediia]," ll. 211–13).
- Чого мені тяжко, чого мені нудно, / Чого серце *плаче, ридає, кричить*, / Мов дитя голодне? Серце моє трудне, ("Choho meni tiazhko, choho meni nudno," ll. 1–3).
- Що сам еси тепер москаль, / Що серце *порване, побите*, / І що хороше-дороге ("Nu shcho b, zdavalosia, slova ..." ll. 43–5).
- Неначе цвяшок, в серце *вбитий*, / Оцю Марину я ношу. ("Maryna," ll. 1–2).
- На серце падали Марії, / І серце *мерзло і пеклось!* ("Maria," ll. 194–5).

The so-called rape, therefore, is nothing more than an elaboration of the hero's emotional suffering, which is established in the opening sequences and reiterated repeatedly as the poem unfolds. Even the narrative voice shares in this Weltschmerz, begging the protagonist for relief:

Хоть на единое мгновенье  
 Темницу сердца озари  
 И мрак строптивых помышлений  
 И разгони, и усмири. (ll. 56–9)

Significantly, after the terrible ordeal above (i.e., ll. 89–100), we are told the following about the hero:

Надежды он не схоронил,  
 Воспрянул дух, как голубь горный,  
 И мрак сердечный, мрак юдольный  
 Небесным светом озарил ... (ll. 155–8)

These lines virtually summarize what Grabowicz's alleged rape scene (ll. 89–127) dramatizes: the hero's "darkness of the heart," his experience of "earthly darkness/gloom" ("ЮДОЛЬНЫЙ" here refers to the "vale" or "valley of tears," a word used also in l. 28), is alleviated only through an encounter with a divine natural world, the recognition of his own purity, and thoughts of the beyond.

Grabowicz, it will be recalled, stated that "From his dream of childhood the hero 'awakens' through the agency of a 'serpent' (!) into a terrifying reality, which is called at the end a 'strašnyj son' [terrible dream]" (p. 336). His formulation is not entirely clear,<sup>12</sup> but it seems to be suggesting that the hero, while sleeping, has a terrible dream of a childhood rape. A closer look at Shevchenko's poem reveals that the lines in question do not actually speak of an "awakening"; the dream, we are told, "disappeared": "Детский сон / Исчез" (ll. 90–1). (This detail is significant, as we shall show in a moment). Moreover, there is a complication: the hero is roused—this time quite literally and "joyfully" in ll. 115–16 ("Душа отрадно пробуждалась, / И пробудилась ..."), and this happens not "through the agency of a 'serpent'" but, apparently, spring. If "исчез" and "пробуждалась" are synonyms simply referring to a single dream of rape, then something is clearly amiss: after having such a nightmare, why would the hero wake up in joy? Perhaps this is a single dream consisting of two parts: one about childhood and the other about rape? Unfortunately, there seems to be little textual evidence for this, and, moreover, it still would not explain why the rape sequence would be followed by expressions of exultation. Speculation that this may be a sign of relief would also fail, since nothing in the poem warrants such a line of interpretation.

There is, however, a way out of this quandary if we are prepared to look at this so-called recollected rape dream from another perspective. The first step is to recognize that "детский сон" is not a "dream of childhood" but simply a "childish/childlike dream" that "disappears" not on waking, but under the duress of the hero's difficult life (this is made obvious by the preceding lines). In other

---

12. The sentence in effect says: the hero wakes up from a *dream* [of childhood] into a [terrible] *reality* that is called a [terrible] *dream*. If the "terrible reality" is the rape, then the hero is not recollecting it in a dream ("when the defenses of the conscious mind are down," p. 335) but experiencing it while awake. However, from other things said in the article, I am assuming that Grabowicz meant to say that the terrible reality is the realization of childhood rape that came to the hero during sleep. I am also assuming that the "dream of childhood" is something separate from the "cursory generalities about his childhood" mentioned by him previously (p. 335).

words, as the hero matures (N.B.: "Он вырастал," l. 86), his adolescent naïveté is replaced with the emotional distress ("тоска") of an adult. Lines 140–3 suggest as much: "И вздох глубокий, / *Недетский вздох*, он испустил; / Как будто в сердце одином / Надежду он похоронил." In short, there is no dream or sleeping implied by these lines: the word "сон" indicates the unrealistic view of life typical of a child, but one that the hero loses prematurely, thus explaining both his pain and wisdom. The poem makes a point of the hero's ability to understand the world for what it is while still maintaining an innocent and moral (literally "virginal") perspective, an achievement that comes at the cost of great spiritual suffering. Consider these lines:

Какой ужасною ценою  
Уму познания купил,  
И девство сердца сохранил. (ll. 180–3)

This message is repeated only a few lines later:

Пройти мытарства трудной жизни,  
[...]  
И сохранить полет орла  
И сердце чистой голубицы!  
Се человек!.. (ll. 184–91)

The references to the hero's continued purity and innocence that appear after l. 111 (cf. ll. 119 and 127) make considerably more sense when viewed as a preserved psychological condition that survives the trauma of unpleasant truth; it makes much less sense when seen as recovered sexual chastity obtained through tears following a rape.

The "terrible dream" ("страшный сон," l. 110) that Grabowicz interprets as part of the same "dream of childhood" actually refers to something entirely separate and different: these words describe the unusual state of wrath and anger into which the hero slips in l. 99. The poem, therefore, uses "dream" in two senses, neither of which is related to rape: (1) as something naïve that is lost and (2) as a fearful ("terrible") projection of how the hero will deal with an evil society. The "terrible dream" is prefigured by the phrase "terrible minute" ("И длилась страшная минута," l. 107), signalling the duration of time when the hero conjectures his unexpected acts of moral retribution while laughing madly like a demon. It follows therefore that "И мир пылал со всех сторон" (The world was aflame from all sides, l. 108) has nothing remotely in common with "the recollected violation [being] presented through the image of cataclysmic fire": it sooner invites comparisons with biblical scenes of destruction associated with the wrath of God, where fire is purging and purifying. Subsequently the content of this "terrible dream/minute" will find an analogue in one of the hero's supplications, in which God is asked to bless an act that is both "new and harsh," calculated to "redeem" the world:

Благослови всеильным словом  
 На подвиг новый и суровый,  
 На искупление земли,  
 Земли поруганной, забытой,  
 Чистейшей кровию политой,  
 Когда-то счастливой земли. (ll. 251–6)

Later the hero will be shown sermonizing about defending the people and punishing evil (“Стать за народ и зло казнить,” l. 289). And later still we have him advocating that “harsh” justice be meted out to the “people’s butchers”:

Сложите вы псалом суровый  
 Про сонм народных палачей. (ll. 429–30)

Even before the purported rape scene that we are analyzing takes place, the hero is beseeched by the narrative voice:

Скажи мне тайное ученье  
 Любить гордящихся людей  
 И речью кроткой и смиреньем  
 Смягчать народных палачей ... (ll. 66–9)

The preceding discussion puts to rest not only the idea of rape, but also the notion of the hero as defenceless victim. His “terrible dream,” it turns out, is far from the impotent episode Grabowicz makes it out to be. With line 97 (i.e., the reference to pride), the poem clearly indicates that the protagonist struggles to free himself from his emotional distress and disillusionment—by electing to purge the world of evil. Although phrased in the conditional mood (“О если б мог он ...” l. 101), it is obvious that he envisions himself in an active and dynamic light, to wit, as an outraged, wrathful god (alternately, a mad demon—“демон лютый”), cleansing the world of evil serpents. At this point the image of the hero is anything but helpless; there is no sign of victimization. The hero lashes out with an “embittered/outraged hand” (“озлобленной рукой,” l. 102); his laughter is demonic (“Он хохотал, как демон лютый”); his self-righteous frenzy (“исступление”) brings him to the point of tears and speechlessness (“Рыдал, немел он в исступленьи”). The thought of casting earthly evil into hell brings him joy (l. 105), a prefigurement of emotions that will be expressed even more completely just a few lines hence. The representation of the earth in this episode as being both morally foul (i.e., populated by evil serpents)<sup>13</sup> and divine (“Земля, господнее творенье,” l. 112) explains why the hero will fall down and kiss it in line 117. It is this latter epiphany, along with his liberating

---

13. The twin vision of the world as both evil and good recurs: “мир наш, темный и лукавый” (l. 47); “Планета наша, / Прекрасный мир наш, рай земной” (ll. 168–9); “на грешной земле” (l. 17); “на рабской земле” (l. 20).

vision of a "terrible" vengeance that cleanses him and brings him to express his delight. It follows, therefore, that there is no helpless victim here, but a perceptive and sensitive individual racked emotionally by life's injustices and determined to set them right. The "terrible dream," far from depicting a rape, is very much part of what Grabowicz later refers to as Shevchenko's "imperative of action ... [and] revolution" (p. 345), a somewhat subdued but nonetheless prominent motif in *Trizna*.

If we now recognize the alleged rape scene for what it actually is, it should also become obvious that the pattern of the hero's turbulent psyche, which it establishes in ll. 89–127, is essentially recapitulated in ll. 129–68.<sup>14</sup> Here again the hero falls into a state of melancholy and depression—"взор унылый" (l. 137), "Надежду он похоронил" (l. 143), "Туман душевный" (l. 147), "мрак юдовый" (l. 155)—but revives through the intercession of heavenly forces and inspiration (e.g., "И путь тернистый, / путь унылый / Небесным светом озаряй. / Пошли на ум твою святыню, / Святым наитием напой ...," ll. 149–52). This is an almost perfect structural parallelism to ll. 119–27, where the hero also recovers from his emotional darkness ("Он снова чистый ангел рая," l. 119) by turning his thoughts to heaven. With these two episodes the poem confirms what the narrator established at the onset of *Trizna*, namely, that the hero is "chosen" ("Душе с прекрасным назначеньем / Должно любить, терпеть, страдать," ll. 1–2; "Душа избранная, зачем / Ты мало так у нас гостила?" ll. 37–8), that he is an individual who belongs more to heaven ("рай") than to earth. Not surprisingly, he is called an angel several times, and the narrator even prays to him (ll. 51–2). Therefore his tenure on earth must, by definition, be painful. He stays long enough to spread his word of justice and freedom. He then returns to his natural abode, taking his place near God's throne, and contemplates the sad world:

И ты на небе в вечной славе  
У трона [Б]ожия стоишь,  
На мир наш, темный и лукавый  
С тоской невинною глядишь. (ll. 45–8)

In summary, it must be said that the notion of rape is entirely superfluous for an understanding of *Trizna*. It is a hypothesis that creates irresolvable textual contradictions in the poem and leaves much unexplained. The protagonist's personality is adequately motivated and explained without this contrived reading. He is fated to a life of lovelessness and angst not because of an early rape, but because of his unique and difficult stature as heaven's favourite: a visionary and an inspired prophet.

---

14. Note, for example, that ll. 112–18 are paraphrased, occasionally almost verbatim, in ll. 166–72.





# On Varvara Repnina's "Devochka"

*Roman Weretelnik*

Future historians, wrote a contemporary of Princess Varvara Repnina, "will without doubt number her among those pure, considerate individuals who have had a benevolent influence on society by virtue of their existence."<sup>1</sup> The prediction was accurate, and today Repnina is mostly remembered as a kind soul who brought Taras Shevchenko joy for a short period of time. Few of Repnina's contemporaries, however, could have imagined the world full of repressed emotion and passion that co-existed with the pious and devout exterior of this complex woman. It was her romance with Shevchenko during the years 1843–44 that prompted Repnina to turn her innermost feelings into words. She began an unfinished novel about Shevchenko, of which a fragment, "Devochka" ("The Young Maiden," written expressly for Shevchenko and later made part of the novel), she presented to the poet as a short story about her own life. This story and how it evolved out of the relationship that developed between Repnina and Shevchenko is the focus of this article.

Repnina was born in Moscow in 1808. She was the daughter of Prince Nikolai Repnin and Princess Varvara Rozumovska. Repnin, born Volkonsky in 1778, took his maternal grandfather's surname by order of the tsar in order to prolong the family name. He was a general in the Russian imperial cavalry and served as vice-regent of occupied Saxony after the War of 1812. In 1816 he was appointed governor-general of the tsar's army in Left-Bank Ukraine. Repnin served in that position until 1834, when he was removed from his post by Nicholas I because of a financial scandal in which he was accused of misappropriating government funds. But the underlying causes of his removal were the tsar's suspicion that Repnin, whose writings promoted the abolition of serfdom, sympathized with Ukrainian separatist tendencies, and because there was a mutual antipathy between the two men. The investigation surrounding the accusations against Repnin lasted almost ten years, almost ruining him financially in the process. Repnin's holdings were seized, and part of his property was

---

1. N. S., "Pamiati kn. V. N. Repninoi," *Kievskaia starina*, 1892, no. 37: 312–13.

auctioned. He was demoted and left Ukraine with his family, living in virtual exile for the several years in Italy, Switzerland, and Germany.

The family returned to Ukraine in 1842, settling on Princess Rozumovska's estate in Iahotyn. Repnin's wife was the granddaughter of Kyrylo Rozumovsky, the last hetman of Ukraine and brother-in-law of Empress Elizabeth I. She spent much of her time taking part in and organizing benevolent actions and cultural work. When the war ended in 1812 she organized a women's group in aid of orphans and widows, a benevolent institute for girls in St. Petersburg, and an institute for upper class girls in Poltava.<sup>2</sup> Rozumovska also brought her husband into contact with the Ukrainian gentry.

Varvara Repnina received an excellent domestic education, and by virtue of her father's postings and travels she acquired a wide circle of influential friends and acquaintances.<sup>3</sup> By the time Shevchenko first met her in 1843, she was an unmarried woman of thirty-five and a woman of many contradictions. Although very solidly entrenched in the gentry and respectful of its mores, Repnina had developed critical views of the world in which she lived. These views were largely coloured by her father's experiences. She was especially incensed by the tsar's treatment of her father, and she could not have remained unaffected by the fate of her uncle, Sergei Volkonsky, who had received a twenty-year sentence of hard labour for his part in the Decembrist uprising. It is clear from her writings that Repnina, like her father, was troubled by the existence of serfdom.<sup>4</sup> The intensity of her pain caused by the knowledge that Shevchenko had been a serf was great. Repnina was also proud of her Ukrainian heritage on her mother's side. In her room she kept the scythe that her great-grandfather had used when he was still a simple Cossack. She regarded Hetman Ivan Mazepa as the tragic hero in the Battle of Poltava.<sup>5</sup> More importantly, Repnina became a believer in the future of Ukrainian as a literary language.<sup>6</sup>

2. See Varvara Repnina's description of her childhood years in "Iz avtobiograficheskikh zapisok kniazyni V. N. Repninoi," in *Russkii arkhiv*, 1897, no. 11: 479-90.

3. For instance, the Repnins played host here to the tsar's sister, Catherine, and to her family. Ibid.

4. Repnina wrote to Eynard about Shevchenko: "C'était un pauvre serf. Oh, vous noble fils d'un pays libre, vous ne pouvez comprendre dans toute son étendue l'horreur de ce mot!" (M. Gershenzon, *Russkiiia propilei*, vol. 2 [Moscow: Izdanie S. Sabashnikovikh, 1916], 188).

5. See the account by Petro Seletsky, who visited the Repnins in Iahotyn in 1843. Together with Repnina, Shevchenko, and others, they planned to compose an opera about Mazepa. Everyone except Seletsky wished to portray Mazepa in a heroic light. Furthermore, everyone but Seletsky wanted the libretto to be written in Ukrainian. See "Zapiski Petra Dimitrievicha Seletskogo," *Kievskaiia starina*, 1884, no. 9: 621-2.

6. Repnina later expressed the desire to learn Ukrainian in order to read all of



Such was the woman that Shevchenko met in July 1843 when, during his first trip to Ukraine since his boyhood, he travelled to Iahotyn in order to make several copies of Repnin's portrait. Although by this time Shevchenko's reputation as a poet, earned through the success of his *Kobzar*, had brought him significant popularity among the Ukrainian gentry, Repnina was not aware of his existence or of the *Kobzar*, most likely because her family had just returned to Ukraine from abroad. The two saw each other on three occasions in 1843. After their first meeting in July, Shevchenko returned to Iahotyn twice, in October and December, for lengthier visits. It was during these last two stays that an intense friendship between them developed. Their encounter, which eventually resulted in Shevchenko writing "Trizna" (The Wake) for Repnina and in her response in the form of "The Young Girl," is well documented in a variety of sources. Among them are reminiscences by contemporaries; the letters between Repnina and Shevchenko; a long letter from Repnina to her Swiss "confessor" and confidant Charles Eynard (1808–76), in which she recounted the story of this most significant period of her life; and Repnina's unfinished and untitled novel about Shevchenko, which she wrote almost immediately after the poet's departure from Iahotyn in January 1844.<sup>7</sup>

From these documents it is evident that Repnina and Shevchenko's encounters represented, on the one hand, the somewhat awkward and painful coming together of two vastly different individuals and, on the other, the fusion of two kindred souls. On a social level, the difference between the poet and the princess was enormous. At the time Shevchenko was still completing his education at the prestigious St. Petersburg Academy of Arts. Although he was the favourite student of the celebrated painter Karl Briullov and was part of St. Petersburg's cultural elite, barely five years had passed since his freedom from serfdom had been purchased. Meanwhile Repnina, despite her father's downfall, had emerged from the most privileged sector of imperial Russian society. Whatever societal walls may have stood between the two, they were ultimately of no concern to Repnina. Indeed, perhaps it was precisely the fact that Shevchenko had been a serf, and thus a martyr in her eyes, that initially made him so attractive to her.

Repnina wrote that if Shevchenko had returned her expressions of tenderness towards him (even to the least degree imaginable), she would have responded with an open declaration of love for him (p. 189). It is certain that she wished

---

Shevchenko's poetry. See her letter to Shevchenko dated 20 December 1844 in *Lysty do Tarasa Shevchenka*, ed. V. S. Borodin (Kyiv: Naukova dumka, 1993), 31.

7. Repnina's letters to Eynard, her unfinished novel, and "Devochka" were published in Gershenzon's *Russkiiia propilei*, 2: 179–263. All subsequent page references in the body of this article are to this collection.

to marry Shevchenko; this fact is attested by the concern that their growing intimacy caused her mother, sister, and family friend and advisor Oleksii Kapnist, who had originally brought Shevchenko to Iahotyń and introduced him to Repnina. At first Shevchenko was on guard with the Repnins. As Repnina describes, this apprehension soon disappeared once Shevchenko had become convinced of the genuine warmth and empathy with which the Repnins greeted him in their home (p. 189). Repnin's reputation as a humane liberal and Ukrainophile, his wife's ancestry, and his daughter's extraordinarily perceptive understanding of the burgeoning Ukrainian cause all contributed towards making Shevchenko feel secure in Iahotyń.

Shevchenko's sense of security in the Repnin household and, by extension, in the environment of the Ukrainian gentry was accompanied, however, by a growing internal rage that he felt during his first visit to his homeland as an adult. Thus, although genuinely moved by his reception and the growing national awareness of the Ukrainian elite, the poet must have been terribly pained by what he interpreted as the seemingly irreversible tragedy that he saw around him. Largely owing to his contractual work in 1843, Shevchenko wrote only two poems during that year: "Rozryta mohyla" (The Plundered Grave) and "Trizna." He wrote the latter in Russian for Repnina and dedicated it to her. "Rozryta mohyla" vividly reveals Shevchenko's awakened rage and marks a sharp departure from his earlier ballads. "Trizna" is an intensely autobiographical work in which Shevchenko, motivated by his trust and admiration for Repnina, attempted to reveal to her the deepest corners of his soul. The creation of the poem was probably sparked by his doubts that Repnina fully understood him. Shevchenko's sincerity toward Repnina, as expressed through his poetry, not only drew her closer to him, but had the unforeseen effect of helping her confront her own, perhaps more repressed but still very real, rage and loneliness.

By the time Shevchenko presented Repnina with "Trizna" and read the poem for her and some friends in her closest circle in December 1844, he belonged to her "starry heaven," as she wrote to Eynard (p. 188). In Repnina's words, Shevchenko's poetry had "totally overcome" her (p. 195). Her intense reaction to "Trizna" was preceded by no less a strong impression that Shevchenko had left by his reading of "Slepaia" (The Blind Woman).<sup>8</sup> It is to Repnina's credit that she immediately recognized Shevchenko's greatness as a poet and inspirational force. It is also noteworthy that she saw no contradiction in the fact that he expressed his genius in Ukrainian. Repnina's impressions of Shevchenko's

---

8. Although no record exists of Repnina's reactions to Shevchenko's Ukrainian poetry up to that time, in a later letter she wrote to him about her intention to learn Ukrainian in order to understand his poetry better. This likely means that that Shevchenko had also read his poetry to her. See *Lysty do Tarasa Shevchenka*, 31.

poetry were voiced from a mature and sensitive perspective, a keenness that characterized her critical enthusiasm for the writings of Nikolai Gogol (Mykola Hohol), Shevchenko's compatriot and also her acquaintance.<sup>9</sup>

Apart from the wide yet ultimately bridged social gulf that lay between Shevchenko and Repnina, there existed another, less easily definable gap. By this time in her life Repnina had found comfort in leading the life of a pious and devout Orthodox believer, and she was intent on bettering herself through prayer and faithful devotion to Christian ideals and a strict moral code. Her trust in Eynard, whom she had met earlier in Geneva, was unwavering. Eynard, a friend and adherent of the views of the theologian Alexandre Vine and something of a mystic, was sought after by a number of women as an advisor and confessor. To reflect the highest esteem that she felt for Eynard, Repnina customarily addressed him as "cheri Directeur" or "cheri maître" and signed her letters "votre pupille" (p. 197). Repnina's letters to Eynard are extraordinarily frank and detailed, both from a personal and spiritual point of view. In one letter, for instance, she describes a "not innocent" kiss that she gave Shevchenko and candidly expresses her shattered sense of belief in her devotion to Christ because of what she had experienced with Shevchenko; she adds that, even more to her dismay, she feels no shame about this (p. 198). In general Repnina's letters to Eynard are replete with self-chastisement, self-effacement, and pleas for guidance from her spiritual master. Eynard's responses are in turn unwaveringly stern, advising Repnina to resort to prayer and self-discipline and to subdue her ego and sense of individuality.

Other people close to Repnina provided her with advice similar to Eynard's. Repnina writes about a letter that she had received from her younger sister advising her to be less selfish and more content with fulfilling her role within her family rather than gratifying her own personal (romantic) needs. Although Repnina's mother, who years before had ended her daughter's romance with a young officer (an episode that Repnina painfully remembered as a personal tragedy), was sympathetic to Shevchenko, she did not approve of the growing intensity of the relationship between her daughter and the young poet (p. 198). During Shevchenko's stay in Iahotyn Repnina therefore kept her feelings for Shevchenko secret. She later told her mother about the whole affair, but only after ascertaining that Shevchenko would never respond to her overtures.

Another confining influence on Repnina was the person who was most instrumental in ending the "Shevchenkian period" of her life—Vasyl Kapnist. A Decembrist, liberal thinker, Ukrainophile, and admirer of Shevchenko, Kapnist met Repnina's open admissions of her strong feelings for Shevchenko with shock and quickly decided to put an end to what he correctly identified as a potential

---

9. See Repnina's article "O Gogole," *Russkii arkhiv*, 1890, no. 10: 227–32.

romance. He managed to achieve this by convincing Repnina that any union between her and Shevchenko would be harmful for the future of the poet. Kapnist's tactics were effective, and in the end Repnina herself "asked" Kapnist to suggest to Shevchenko that he not return to Iahotyn. Despite her ultimate trust in Kapnist's advice and her desire that Shevchenko remain Kapnist's friend, Repnina must have felt betrayed by her advisor (she referred to him as "le mauvais Kapnist" in her letter about the affair to Eynard [p. 199]). Kapnist, who had not met Eynard but was well aware of Repnina's "confessor," counselled her to follow the advice of her stern spiritual guide in the hope that it would help drive her further away from the poet.

Repnina's strongly influenced and guided sense of morality was at times annoying (yet ultimately appealing) to Shevchenko. In his travels in the region Shevchenko had met Repnina's neighbours. One of the Zakrevsky brothers who owned nearby Berezova Rudka, Viktor, was also a liberal and a Ukrainophile, and the self-styled leader ("*ioho vysokopianishestvo*"—his high-drunkenness) of the "*mochemordia*" (wet-snout) fraternity, a rowdy collection of young Ukrainian noblemen bent on carousing whose motto was *in vino veritas*. Another prominent wet-snout was the landowner Iakov de Balmen, to whom Shevchenko took a particular liking and who presented Shevchenko with a Polish translation of the *Kobzar*, which he himself had illustrated. Despite their rambunctious façade and open displays of shocking behaviour (Zakrevsky had been cashiered from the officer corps for filling a bust of the tsar with wine during a soirée), the wet-snouts were a group of dedicated, well-connected, young men with serious oppositionist tendencies.

Repnina, with her strict personal moral code, found the behaviour of the "wet-snouts" to be particularly offensive and refused to be associated with them. Shevchenko's friendship with and open admiration for them not only disturbed Repnina but even enraged her. As a result she showed Shevchenko her irritation and began giving him allegorical "moral lectures," both in person and through notes that she had passed on to him. She advised Shevchenko to stay away from the wet-snouts, fearing that they would corrupt him, the lofty ideals of his pure soul, and what she now saw as his holy cause. Thus even though Shevchenko perhaps longed for and needed the woman in Repnina, he received "Eynardian" lectures instead. It was precisely after one such lecture that he chose to open his soul to Repnina through "Trizna." This was probably a sincere attempt on his part to intimate to her that his behaviour with the wet-snouts and open sympathy toward them represented a more complex phenomenon than actions stemming from a weak moral stance. For Shevchenko and the other wet-snouts their fraternity represented a manifestation of the despair and impotence that they felt.

The intense sincerity that Shevchenko expressed in "Trizna" and the poem's literary brilliance proved to be even more powerful than he may have expected. Repnina's growing irritation with Shevchenko's behaviour completely disap-



peared once he had read "*Trizna*" to her. "Once more," she writes, she "was overcome" (p. 189). Repnina, whose trust in Shevchenko's talent had been immediate and genuine and who by this time was deeply in love with the poet, realized, perhaps for the first time, the depths of the tragedy that pained him. Hearing Shevchenko read "*Trizna*" gave her enough courage to write that same evening about the tragedy of her own life "in a final attempt to bring Shevchenko close to me" (p. 199). The result was a short story entitled "*Devotchka*," an autobiographical account of a woman's feelings at various stages of her life.

The story is divided into four parts, representing different ages in the woman's life: twelve, eighteen, twenty-five, and thirty-five, the last being how old Repnina was when she met Shevchenko. In this powerful story and confession about her own life, she appears far more complex and different than her pious exterior may have led those around her, including Shevchenko, to believe. The story begins with the thoughts of a young girl who sees two lovers in a park. The girl is aroused by a myriad of new emotions, even more so when, as a twelve-year-old, she finds a note from *him* to *her* and imagines herself "wed to *him* in her own thoughts" (p. 234). "During the day she is a carefree child—she idles, learns, accepts scoldings, cries, plays—while in the evening she is the seedling of sensual woman" (p. 234). Repnina portrays a girl opening herself to a concept of love that is at once pure and beautiful, yet sensual and not chaste. "But here the thoughts of others slowly begin to crowd her mind, and she begins to suffer" (p. 234). The girl is told about the Antichrist and the meaning of the word "sin," and she begins to fear the Antichrist and, even more, that she is sinful. "She understood sin—and the magic of sin" (p. 235). The girl is caught in a whirlwind of confusion:

...pity, Eve ate only part of the forbidden apple and left it to be finished by her descendants! The dream of love, about which she would be ashamed to tell her own mother, appears to her for the first time as being sinful, yet she feels that sin is magical and that she does not have the strength to overpower it. She feels this and fears the Antichrist, and persecuted by her fear and tribulations she gets up from her child's bed and lies down with her sister so that she can fill the terrible vacuum through the presence of a living entity.... Days pass, years pass; she plays and suffers, she takes on certain appearances, foreign thoughts; she's invisible, a bland girl, like all girls, and here she is, already eighteen years old. (P. 235)

She continues to live her double life. Inside she burns with passion, obsessed by her beautiful thoughts of love. "Only in her heart the pure fire of passion for everything beautiful flashes—and what better thing is there than love?" (p. 235). As before, however, her sensuous thoughts and passions are quickly doused:

She enters society, looks at people, smiles at everyone, she is grateful for everything; conventionality is demanded of her, she is not to be overly cheerful nor is she to engage in thought too much; the blandness in which the

young girl was cloaked is now made into an obligation for the young woman. Those around her forget that within her lies a heart, that a soul has been awakened, that her lips want to cry out a hymn of gratitude and happiness—that everything within her screams love, love! The young woman's "holy" passion for an unnamed lover is transformed into a shameful weakness by those around her, who, falsely understanding what constitutes morality and innocence for a woman, contaminate her ... and again new thoughts with cruel names painfully creep into her, thoughts that cause her to blush, that convulsively choke her heart, force burning tears out of her ... that forbid her, in the name of decency, to love, to be enraptured, to cry! (P. 236)

Despite the pressures that the young woman feels, she somehow emerges with the one "spark" that her heart manages to protect from the intruders, and she knows that this spark, though "small and weak, will reign" (p. 236).

The young woman falls in love and once again is overtaken by the emotions that she first felt as a child: "she was reborn, the love within her killed her honour" (p. 236). Bliss turns into yet more pain, however, when she learns that *she* is but one of many for *him*. "Mother speaks the truth when she says that one should not believe them" (p. 236). She begins to see that falsehood exists in this world, "and she believed that so it must be; she quietly submitted, anguished, became serene—and surrendered" (p. 237). She begins to attend balls again and listens to empty compliments and meaningless phrases. She cries and remembers her earlier dreams, and although her "honour returns and is reborn and attempts to rule the orphaned place of love ... faith in happiness is not killed within her; it is only frightened, and she loves again, suffers again, again awaits only not to be rewarded" (p. 237).

Days and years pass, and the young woman is now twenty-five. The crisis of her duality reaches its apex. "She withers, becomes frail, ages, but the heart is young, unchangingly young; in loneliness it cries over its own past" (p. 237). The woman comes to love again only to remain unnoticed once more. "Emptiness, fear, fatigue" are the result (p. 237). She embarks on empty romances, becomes frightened that she may be "evil," and turns to books, expecting to find answers in the romances of others. Instead she finds "cold, boring" depictions of emotions that irritate her. "The heart does not allow falsehood into itself—it needs the truth" (p. 237). But the young woman begins to fear that the truth is not meant for her: "Will I always be as I am now? Am I born for this?" (pp. 237–8). For the first time her mind and reason triumph. But the triumph is unwelcome:

the mind, which was completely secondary when she expected and loved, now reigns; its time has come, a pitiful reign; it is good when the mind remains the servant of the heart—but when it takes the lead—oh no!—its triumphs are tiring, mired in sadness, and dig a deeper and deeper canyon in the soul. She is an orphan, [she] searches, still expects, and is again deceived. She still stands atop

the holy peak, but evening is setting in ... accompanied by a fog ... her eyes are cloudy, the sun is setting, faith is dwindling ... she is drowning in darkness—and descends from the peak, quietly at first, then more rapidly. (P. 238)

This part of the story ends with an entirely new thought. The young girl's and young woman's rebellious nature is finally overpowered. The passion that she has longed for over the years and the battles that she has fought in order to remain true to her hopes are sidelined in the wake of something new: "O God! Only You can stop her. There is a canyon at the foot of the peak—she will die there. But miracles are possible for You, and You want to save her; Your holy grace can stop the suffering. She is sinful, but You are holy! She is weak, but You are strong! She will perish, but You are the Saviour! She believes, she is saved, she is free!" (p. 238). The young woman to whom sin has always been such a foreign concept finally resigns herself to accepting what she has always been told—that she is a sinner.

The final part of Repnina's story begins with the words, "What is an old maid?" (p. 238). The woman is now thirty-five. Thoughts of emotion, passion, and bliss are no longer present. There are no more expectations of love, sensuality, and truth. Instead a powerful new ideal has set in: "True faith glows in this canyon, all the broken strings have flown to heaven from having received grace, and the one who has suffered in this world with her heart awaits in heaven a hundred times more glory, joy, and love than she could have had in this treacherous valley" (p. 238). The woman sees her new ideal as a powerful liberating force ultimately offering her much more than her previous expectations. Her earlier feelings seem to her no more than a prelude, a preparation for the person that she has become. She thus triumphs, having found her own way to happiness and accompanying wisdom. Yet doubt lingers as to what might have been had her earlier dreams and desires been realized.

Repnina could not have imagined Shevchenko's reaction to her literary response, which was intended to "bring him closer" to her and answer his admissions in "*Trizna*." So overwhelmed was the poet that he wrote the following in a note to Repnina the same night that he read her story:

the feeling that I am now experiencing is my all-engrossing pain—art is powerless and incapable. I suffered, opened myself to people as to brothers, and submissively begged for at least one cold teardrop in exchange for a sea of bloody tears. Yet no one wetted their sunburnt lips with but one drop of life-giving dew. I groaned—"he groans very well," they said—Oh, but I am a feeble, small-spirited man! A girl, simply a girl (stone would groan and gush blood if it would hear the cry of that simple girl) ... yet she remains silent, proudly remains silent, and I... O God! Multiply my pain tenfold, but do not deny me the hope for the hours and the tears that You have sent to me through your angel! O good angel! I pray and

cry before you: you have confirmed in me faith, shaken through inexperience, in the existence of saints on earth!<sup>10</sup>

Shevchenko's exalted response to Repnina's story marked a turning point in the relations between them. Perhaps for the first time the poet would truly notice the depth of his hostess and friend and the pain at the heart of her existence. In her unfinished novel about Shevchenko Repnina later wrote that his note to her filled her heart with euphoric "pure, live joy" (p. 228).

The following evening Shevchenko appeared to be "cold, unfocussed, and evasive" (p. 228). Seeking an explanation, Repnina asked Shevchenko why he was avoiding her. He responded by turning his attention again to "Devochka": "This is poetry, terrifying poetry—what suffering, and how it is rendered! I have never encountered anyone whose soul would be such a good pair for my soul as yours!" (p. 229). As a result of this meeting, Shevchenko would from now on regard and refer to Repnina as his "spiritual sister," a designation that he understood and used with the utmost reverence. The new closeness that emerged between them is seemingly devoid of what could be considered romantic intimacy between a man and a woman, the attainment of which was one of Repnina's main goals in writing her story for Shevchenko. Thus her attempt to "bring the poet closer" to her as a man seems to have been a failure.

It would be tempting to classify Shevchenko's response to Repnina's overture to him as a nineteenth-century example of a man's inability to relate to a woman as an equal, viewing her instead as either inferior or superior—in this instance as an angel on a pedestal. This supposition has some validity. In his poetry Shevchenko shows a very complex and tortured relationship with women. George Grabowicz writes:

one basic opposition [in Shevchenko's poetry], that between male and female, between the male and female worlds, has not and cannot be resolved.... In terms of mythical transformation ... the opposition of male and female is resolved in desexualizing the relationship. In the utopian new order that relationship is cast either as pre-sexual ... or as a conflation of the pre-sexual and the post-sexual ... Ševčenko often depicts marriage itself as asexual.... sexuality, especially male sexuality[,] is removed precisely because it had so insistently been identified with the coercive and exploitative nature of structure and authority in society."<sup>11</sup>

Grabowicz's observations hint at the extraordinarily complex world of male-female interaction in Shevchenko's poetry and the great awareness with which the poet approaches the topic. What emerges is the picture of a man whose

10. *Povne zibrannia tvoriv Tarasa Shevchenka*, vol. 3, ed. Serhii Iefremov (Kyiv: Derzhavne vydavnytstvo Ukrainy, 1929), 16.

11. George G. Grabowicz, *The Poet as Mythmaker: A Study of Symbolic Meaning in Taras Ševčenko* (Cambridge: Harvard Ukrainian Research Institute, 1982), 154–5.



designation of a woman as a "sister," a term that in his poetry sometimes has the connotation of wife, represents a multi-levelled and perhaps coded response. If, for Shevchenko, the truest form of male-female relationship, the form that is desirable and accounts for past wrongs (patriarchal transgressions), is one symbolically devoid of sexuality and replaced by a feeling of kinship, then his reference to Repnina as his "spiritual sister" can be understood on several levels. Rather than being just a patriarchal response, it is a response that perhaps deals critically with patriarchy.

Repnina must have been both overjoyed and deeply disappointed by the effect that her story had on Shevchenko, whose response mirrored her own internal divisions. On the one hand, she became convinced that Shevchenko would now accept her lectures and moralizings in a new light, which in effect occurred. Upon reading "Devochka," Shevchenko seemed to have crossed over a threshold in his understanding and tolerance of Repnina's moralizings, regarding them as the outcome of deep suffering rather than of misguided piety. On the other hand, he did not cross over that other threshold, the one that stood between him and Repnina as a man and a woman. For despite her description in her story of faith as the replacement for passion, Repnina never gave up hope of finding earthly happiness as a woman in union with a man. In her confessional letter to Eynard, she writes that, despite everything, "I do not deny that if I felt from him romantic love, I perhaps, would answer him with passion" (p. 199).

Shevchenko left Iahotyn soon after reading "Devochka" and never returned. "In tears I threw myself to embrace him, made the sign of the cross on his forehead, and then he ran out of the room," reads Repnina's description of their parting (p. 229). In the following years Repnina and Shevchenko often corresponded. She involved her highly placed friends in helping him to sell his series of lithographs "Ukraine in Pictures," which he had made in order to earn enough money to buy the freedom of his still ensnared siblings, and the Repnins helped Shevchenko secure a position at Kyiv University. After Shevchenko's arrest in 1848 and his subsequent imprisonment and exile, Repnina and her friend, the landowner Andrii Lyzohub, were the only two people among Shevchenko's friends who dared to correspond with him. Their letters from this time are filled with extraordinarily tender feelings and genuine expressions of deepest mutual respect. Repnina sent Shevchenko books, among them the Bible, and Gogol's *Selected Correspondence of Friends*. She also took it upon herself to intercede on Shevchenko's behalf with the authorities, writing a letter to the chief of the Third Division, her distant relative Count Aleksandr Orlov, asking him to allow Shevchenko to paint. Orlov's response was stern: "By decision of His Highness the Emperor, I have the honour to advise your Excellence as to the inadvisability of such intercessions on behalf of Private Shevchenko, and also that it would be wiser for you to involve yourself less in the matters of Little Russia, otherwise you yourself may give reason to become the subject of

investigation.”<sup>12</sup> Other warnings followed, and the desired affect was achieved. The last letter from Repnina to Shevchenko dates from 1851.

Shevchenko and Repnina were to meet again in 1858, after the poet's release. Travelling through Moscow, he looked forward to seeing his dear friend. The meeting proved to be particularly awkward and painful for both of them. Repnina thought that the poet had grown old and looked “extinguished.”<sup>13</sup> Shevchenko, with a touch of irony, wrote in his diary that “she had changed for the better. She is prettier and younger.... Has she, perhaps, met a good confessor in Moscow?”<sup>14</sup> One brief visit followed shortly after, but there is no documentation about this encounter.

In 1882 the first biography of Shevchenko, Mykhailo Chaly's *Zhizn i proizvedeniia Tarasa Shevchenka*, was published. While writing it, Chaly corresponded with Repnina. She was very co-operative and answered all of his questions. She even sent him a self-portrait that Shevchenko had given her in 1843, along with a drawing of the house in which he was born. In her letter she advised Chaly that he should keep these mementoes since she was in ill health. When her health improved, Repnina wrote to Chaly asking him to return the drawings.<sup>15</sup> Repnina's correspondence with Chaly indicates that Shevchenko remained a central figure in her life, “part of her starry heaven,” in practice as well as in her thoughts. For example, when she learned about the neglected state of Shevchenko's grave, Repnina contributed money toward its upkeep and made sure that the situation was rectified. At Shevchenko's funeral in Kyiv in 1861 eyewitnesses noted the presence of a mysterious woman dressed in black who emerged from the crowd, placed a wreath on the poet's casket, and disappeared just as mysteriously as she had appeared. It has always been believed that this woman was Repnina, the “maiden” who had come to mean so much to the poet.

Perhaps no other time in her life was both as joyous and as frustrating for Repnina as her “Shevchenkian months.” Repnina's romance with Shevchenko gave her the courage to make an open attempt to live by her own convictions. Although she did not succeed in confirming for herself her own personal vision of the truth, she vividly elaborated her personal tragedy in “Devochka,” showing how her time and place circumscribed the feelings that she had developed as a young woman growing up in her stern world. It was this unfinished novel that

12. Orlov's letter to Repnina in *Taras Shevchenko: Dokumenty ta materialy do biohrafiï, 1814–1861*, ed. Ie. P. Kyryliuk (Kyiv: Vyscha shkola, 1982), 188–9; see Repnina's letter to Orlov in *ibid.*, 160–1.

13. Pavlo Zaitsev, *Zhyttia Tarasa Shevchenka* (Kyiv: Naukova dumka, 1993), 167.

14. *Ibid.*, 167.

15. See “Iz perepiski T. G. Shevchenka s raznymi litsami,” *Kievskaiia starina*, 1897, no. 11: 151–75.

crystallized for Shevchenko and for history the remarkable story of a nineteenth-century woman.



# Mykola Ievshan: Modernist Critic?

*Maxim Tarnawsky*

In 1926 Andrii Kovalivsky characterized the fundamental indistinctness of Ukrainian modernism as an understandable outgrowth of the vicious circle of underlying cultural conditions: “Модернізм у всіх його ріжноманітних формах (що в нас розрізнялися дуже слабо) ховає в собі глибоку суперечливість. Він хоче творити «вищу культуру», індивідуалістичну, по суті своїй незрозумілу «юрбі», «натовпові» і т. д. Але, з другого боку, думки про цей «натовп» нашим модерністам не дають спокою.”<sup>1</sup>

Kovalivsky's words describe the dilemma of trying not to think about elephants. How can a writer escape the pernicious effect of always thinking about the *narod* when he is always trying not to think about the *narod*? Much of the theoretical discussion about Ukrainian modernism involves an explicit or implicit examination of the inability of Ukrainian writers to escape from this vicious circle. But the circle includes not only the writers who attack this problem in practice but also critics who deal with it theoretically.

For the Ukrainian modernist critic, no less than for the writer, the dilemma of modernism inheres in the definition of the task itself. What does it mean to be a modernist critic? Let us look at some obvious answers.

1. The modernist critic is a champion and spokesperson for modernist principles. But does he preach high culture and individualism, as Kovalivsky defines it, to the uncomprehending masses, in which case this is clearly a waste of time; or does he promote these values among the cultural aristocrats and individualists who accept them, thus preaching to the converted?

---

1. “Modernism in all of its various forms (which were differentiated very poorly among us) conceals within itself a deep self-contradiction. It wants to create a ‘higher culture,’ individualistic and in its essence incomprehensible to ‘the mob,’ ‘the rabble,’ etc. But, on the other hand, our modernists are continually troubled by thoughts about this rabble” (Andrii Kovalivsky, “Krytyka ‘Ukrainskoi khaty,’” in his *Z istorii ukrainskoi krytyky* [Kharkiv: Derzhavne vydavnytstvo Ukrainy, 1926], 64).

2. The modernist critic reviews and analyzes the works of modernist writers. But does he examine the works of these writers objectively and scientifically with the goal of discovering in them the essence of modernism, or does he praise and chide various authors according to whether they measure up to a personal yardstick of modernist writing? The first case does not denote a specifically modernist critic, since any other critic can describe contemporary literature. In the second case the critic follows specifically modernist critical imperatives. But what if the writers he analyzes do not?

3. The modernist critic is not a reflector but rather a creator of modernism, with no obligation to either the masses or the artists. Such a critic is a philosopher advancing modernist ideas. But this answer begs the essential question: which definition of modernism must this philosopher examine—Oscar Wilde's and Aubrey Beardsley's, or James Joyce's and Virginia Woolf's? Should Schopenhauer and Nietzsche be quoted, or Darwin and Freud?

These three answers and the oppositions I have sketched out within them are not, of course, so overwhelming as to defy resolution. They indicate, however, inherent ambiguities in the concept. In our context these ambiguities are compounded by the peculiarities of the Ukrainian cultural climate, particularly the fact that the battle for a modernist aesthetic in Ukraine was waged against both a political and cultural opponent.

The dilemma that results from this ambiguity is clearly evident in the literary criticism of Ukrainian modernism. Although a number of writers whose views can be considered modernist wrote about literature—for example, Ostap Lutsky and Osyp Makovei—and a number of essayists held what amounted to modernist views—for example, Andrii Tovkachevsky and Mykyta Sribliansky (Shapoval)—the consensus of opinion among scholars holds that of the modernists only one was genuinely a literary critic, namely, Mykola Ievshan (Fediushko). This view may be in need of revision. Ievshan's critical essays, which appeared for the most part on the pages of the journal *Ukrainska khata* between 1909 and 1914, are prime examples of the theoretical ambiguity that characterizes Ukrainian modernism. Whether he is examining the nature and function of art, the psychology of creativity, the development of literary styles, or the peculiarities of a particular writer or work, Ievshan is directly encircled by the unifying polarity of his subject. Moreover, at times his ideas clearly depart from what in contemporary criticism are regarded as modernist principles.

In his programmatic essay on the nature and function of the creative drive in man, entitled "Problemy tvorchosti" (The Problem of Creativity), the first essay in his collection *Pid praporom mystetstva* (Under the Flag of Art), Ievshan combines Nietzschean elitism, romantic messianism, and socialist idealism. In discussing the relationship between art and everyday human existence, he explicitly compares art to religion both in the perspective from which they are viewed by the common person and in the effect they can have on him. Both art



and religion allow the individual to escape mundane reality. This ennobling moral function, however, then re-establishes a link between art and life by influencing the individual's behaviour.

Усвідомлюючи в собі стремління до того ясного ідеалу, який несвідомо кладе печать на всіх правдиво великих творах людського духа, здобуваємо собі те становище, з якого людина бачить все життя не як нужденний фарс, і воно стане набирати змислу в тім, що кожна одиниця має змогу стремитись до щодня більшого самодосконалення; з творів всіх великих геніїв буде спливати на неї щодня більше світло, в якому побачить, що в людині є сила, щоб спровадити високі постаті ангелів на землю, коли тільки вона виробить в собі досить моральної сили, яка робила б її відпорною супроти всякої порочності та гріху землі. Таким чином творчість являється в житті одиниці великою реальною силою, коли усвідомити її в стремлінню до витворення в собі святого, мудреця і артиста, які — по бажанню Ніцше — були б завершенням культури і виявляли силу людського генія.

А в цьому — мистецтво стає вже одним з моторів самого широкого життя; мистецтво промовляє не тільки до одиниці людської, але до загалу.

Тут воно стає елементом наскрізь революційним, коли почне виводити нові правди, нові кличі.<sup>2</sup>

Great literature raises readers' eyes away from the sordid corruption of human existence and towards the heavens where they behold angels. But in beholding angels these same readers discover that they, mere mortals, are capable of angelic thoughts. This may sound ridiculous, but we are still in the domain of simple dialectics. In his essay Ievshan repeatedly uses these dialectical paradoxes, whereby art benefits the individual and therefore the community and ideals are only fruitful if they arise from matter. But then Ievshan's argument makes a

---

2. Perceiving within ourselves the striving toward a bright ideal, which unconsciously leaves its mark on all the truly great works of the human spirit, we ascend to that position from which a person sees all of life not as a miserable farce, and it begins to take on meaning in the realization that every individual has the opportunity to strive toward an ever-greater self-perfection; that from the works of all great geniuses will flow to him an ever-greater light, in which he will see that in humans there is the power to bring the great figures of angels down to earth if only he develops within himself sufficient moral strength to make him immune to the various faults and sins of the earth. In this way creativity appears in the life of the individual as a great and real force, when one is aware of it in the striving to transform oneself into a saint, a philosopher, and an artist, which—according to Nietzsche's wish—would be the culmination of culture and reveal the power of the human genius. And in this, art becomes one of the engines of grand life itself; art speaks not only to the human individual, but to the everyone. Here it becomes a thoroughly revolutionary element when it begins to announce new truths and new slogans" (Mykola Ievshan, *Pid praporom mystetstva* [Kyiv: Petr Barsky, 1910], 9).

dramatic leap of faith. The realization that art makes the human an angelic creature makes art a fundamental force in the daily reality of both the individual and society. The notion that an individual's personal illumination and ennoblement readily translate into a general social force is outside the bounds of dialectics. What goes unspoken here is Ievshan's profound sense of the social responsibility of the individual. Just as the individual cannot escape his or her social obligation, so too art is fundamentally constrained by a public, social orientation. Having turned the dialectical argument inside out, Ievshan unabashedly announces: "В приготуванню тої возвищеної атмосфери серед загалу, у вихованню одиниць і цілих поколінь в тім напрямі, щоб зробити їх серця здібними до прийняття та плекання в собі всього гарного, радісного і величнього, лежить і найбільша місія усього мистецтва."<sup>3</sup> It is difficult to see what distinguishes these sentiments from those that might be uttered by Serhii Iefremov.

The central idea in Ievshan's view of the function of art and, indeed, in his view of literature in general is the notion of life—життя. For him life is a combination of biological and existential conditions. But it is also a system of values. He describes the current cultural climate through the metaphor of disease and mortality. Decadence in art, the constant search for something fresh, new, and exotic, and the absence of an organizing force in art has led to the decline of creative thinking in all fields, to a general spiritual morbidity.

Таким чином і виявляється неминуха потреба іншої естетичної культури для творчості, культури, яка вивела б нас знов на свіже повітря, дала б нам знов здоровле душі.

Отже відносно тієї нової естетики всяка інша шкільна, солодково філістерська тратить всяку вартість, бо вона вже втратила всякий вплив на життя і не вміє скріпити його підвалин. Нова мусить зайняти її місце. Станути мусить передовсім лікарем покаліченої душі людської, лікарем життя, а відтак будівничим нових життєвих вартостей, які могли б вияснити і поглибити весь зміст життя.<sup>4</sup>

---

3. The greatest mission of all art lies in the preparation of that rarefied atmosphere among the general masses, in the rearing of individuals and whole generations in that direction that will make their hearts capable of accepting and nurturing within themselves all that is beautiful, joyful, and grand" (ibid., 12).

4. "This reveals the unavoidable need for a different aesthetic culture for creativity, a culture that would lead us back into fresh air, that would renew our spiritual health. Therefore, in relation to this new aesthetic every other [aesthetic], [be it] bookish or sweetly philistine, loses all value because it has already lost all influence on life and can not strengthen its foundations. A new [aesthetic] must take its place. It must, in the first place, become the healer of the crippled human soul, the healer of life, and thus a builder of new values for life that could explain and deepen the very content of life" (ibid., 5).

The juxtaposition in this passage of “лікар людської душі” with “лікар життя” is a symptom of Ievshan’s peculiar understanding of the concept of life. His reference to a sick and dying culture is consistent with traditional modernist high culture. His frequent references to Nietzsche and his complaints about philistinism confirm this association. The fact that he indicts decadent, art-for-art’s-sake movements does not itself represent a conflict with traditional modernist canons, although it raises suspicion. But the rough equivalence Ievshan draws between the human soul and life points to a failure to distinguish an essential polarity of modernism.

One of the benchmarks of modernist thinking is precisely the incompatibility of the material and the spiritual, of the practical and the ideal, of the utilitarian and the aesthetic judgement. The concept of life that appears in Ievshan’s works is always infused with abstract, spiritual significance. Favourable references to Goethe and Rousseau alongside those to Schopenhauer and Nietzsche suggest that this vision of life’s significance is part of the neo-Romantic surge that characterizes much of Ukrainian literature in the first two decades of the twentieth century. But Ievshan’s notion of “life” is not the subjective, individualistic, and natural force we find in Lesia Ukrainka’s *Lisova pisnia* (The Forest Song) and *Kaminnyi hospodar* (The Stone Host) or in Mykhailo Kotsiubynsky’s “Intermezzo” and “Tsvit iabluni” (Apple Blossom). Nor is it, on the other hand, the abstract, existential notion we find in Olha Kobylianska’s *Tsarivna* (The Princess) or Volodymyr Vynnychenko’s *Chesnist z soboiu* (Honesty with Oneself). It is, on one hand, a reflection of the influence of Ivan Franko’s utilitarian view of literature and, on the other, an early forerunner of the ideologically committed, voluntaristic attitudes that will be found in Ukrainian literature in the 1920s and beyond, on both sides of the Zbruch River.

Ievshan’s allegiance to Franko should, generally speaking, disqualify him as a modernist critic. In many of his essays he chides various modernist authors for shortcomings in their works. In his judgement of the aesthetic value of many of these works, Ievshan is right to bemoan a general decline. But the ideological yardstick he applies to their contents is often hostile to the essential tenets of modernism. This is most evident in his essay “Poeziia bezsyllia” (The Poetry of Impotence), in which he approvingly quotes Franko’s indictment of modernists as writers who are hiding their lack of understanding life or their cynical indifference to it. Here Ievshan makes fun of those writers who see art as an exclusively aesthetic activity. He mockingly quotes Vasyl Pachovsky’s dictum “То є штука — я не пхаю тут ідей” (This is art—I’m not pushing ideas here) and criticizes the authors who produce this literature without ideas thus:

Не маючи змісту, вони форму беруть за зміст і утішаються нею; не уміючи дати собі ради з матеріалом творчим і обробити його, вони тим більше дбають про гарний стиль. Замість великих картин і малюнків, які

були-б в силі своєю щирістю та виразом знайти відгомін в серцях людських — вони дають образи такі, що передовсім засліплюють очі, ударяють своєю яскравістю, надзвичайністю та несподіваністю. З фальшу та самих дісонансів—вони наміраються дати гармонію. І те все кладуть високо по-над життям, і поклоняються тим ідолам, як би це дійсно було їх святе мистецтво.<sup>5</sup>

Let us not mince words here. This is heresy, for modernist critics do not say such things. Ievshan is not only dismissing the quality of significant modernist writers, such as Pachovsky, Bohdan Lepky, and Mykhailo Iatskiv, but also attacking those very qualities that constitute their modernist credentials. Perhaps the concept of modernism is not as clearly defined as we would like, but the ascendancy of form over content, of innovation over tradition, of dissonance over harmony, and of shocking the average reader rather than coddling him are certainly part of its general profile. What kind of a modernist critic is it who attacks known modernist writers for their adherence to precisely those values that constitute the modernist position?

The answer to this question is far from simple or unambiguous. As the above example demonstrates, there is sufficient *prima facie* evidence to dismiss Ievshan from the modernist pantheon. But this drastic solution does not resolve all outstanding questions. First of all, why has he been considered a modernist by three generations of literary critics? Are there any features of his literary views that explain his preliminary approach to the rejection of modernist ideas?

The answer here, as in so many aspects of Ukrainian modernism, lies in the peculiarities of the rejection of literary realism and political populism by the wave of young cultural reformers in early twentieth-century Ukraine. What makes Ievshan a modernist for most Ukrainian literary historians is his rejection of the past. To wit, anyone who is an enemy of my enemies must be my friend. From such a perspective Ievshan is a modernist because he attacks ethnographic realism. Moreover, his argument against realism is couched in the politically correct modernist phraseology of anti-populist propaganda. For example, in *Kuda my pryshly* (Where We Have Arrived) Ievshan reads a catalogue of the faults of ethnographic literature. The problem, he says, is Ukrainophile romanticism, which consists of “Широке поле, степ розлогий, рідна пісня, кохання, дружба, веснянки, співи, воля, щастє всіх, краса природи, етнографія,

---

5. “Having no content, they take form to be content and take pleasure in it [instead]; unable to cope with creative material and to craft it, they pay even greater attention to a nice style. Instead of large canvasses and images that would through their sincerity and expressivity resonate in people’s hearts, they provide images that primarily blind the eye, that strike [one] with their brightness, unusualness, and unexpectedness. From falsity and dissonances alone they intend to produce harmony. And they place all of this high above life, and they bow to these idols as if this were really their sacred art.” (ibid., 15).



покритка, нетоплена хата, галушки, частушки, сватання, писар, старшина, парубки, дівчата, молодичі — і так без кінця, цілого пів століття!”<sup>6</sup> Ievshan very perceptively notes that an essential characteristic of the writers of the previous generation is that they never say “I” but always “we.” They are tearful patriots who naïvely worship the so-called national spirit and “poetic archaeology.” But they are also indolent and frightened. Their resistance to change and ideology is essentially a function of their bourgeois social position and values. According to Ievshan, their only ideal is “the easy life.”

Like most critics of ethnographic literature, not all of whom are modernists (Dmytro Chyzhevsky, for example), Ievshan singles out drama for particular scorn. First, he chides Marko Kropyvnytsky for the artistic decline of his later dramas. But then Ievshan excuses Kropyvnytsky, who is one of the better writers, on the grounds that he is one of the originators of ethnographic drama, which in those early days was redeemed by its patriotic goals. But, declares Ievshan, the current crop of dramatists is even worse, and their influence is growing:

Вони стають панамі положення, вони друкують по кілька видань, вони виставляють свої твори в театрі, вони «репрезентують» українську драму! Бо вони знають, як треба писати, щоб підійти під смак хоч би останнього сорта публіки, як її забавити. Вони уміють зробити свій твір сценічним. Поза ними майже вся нова українська драма, всі найкращі твори — книжкові, тільки читаються. Вони тяжкі, серйозні, поважні, — вони не зробили би каси. І тому вони не йдуть на сцену.<sup>7</sup>

Ievshan's attitude sounds remarkably like the collective, envious lament arising today from the members of the Ukrainian Writers' Union who find that their unreadable, highbrow, bookish, traditional, and patriotic works cannot

---

6. “The open field, the endless steppe, the native song, romance, friendship, spring rituals, singing, freedom, happiness for all, the beauty of nature, ethnography, the fallen woman, the unheated home, dumplings, satirical songs, engagement rituals, the scribe, the officer, lads, lasses, young married women—and so on endlessly for an entire half century! (Mykola Ievshan, *Kuda my pryishly* [Lviv: Naukove tovarystvo im. Shevchenka, 1912], 7).

7. “They become masters of the situation, they publish their works in several editions, they perform their works in real theatres, they “represent” Ukrainian drama! For they know how to write in order to appeal to the tastes of the very lowest sort of audience, how to entertain it. They know how to make their work[s] scenic. Besides them, almost all other Ukrainian drama, all the best works, are [mere] books, [they are] only being read. They are difficult, serious, grave—they would not make it at the box office. So they are not staged” (ibid., 10).

compete in an open marketplace with Russian pornography. Ievshan, too, assumes this plaintive tone:

І так вся найновіша «драма», та, що виставляєть ся в театрі, зійшла на найбільше ординарну фарсу. Се всьо самі «жарти», перевертанє козлів на сцені, поштуркуване; актори — се кльовни, що обтовкають собі з надмірного скакання коліна та ліктї, а сцена хиба призначена на те, щоб вигнати останні рештки інтелігенції з душі...

І так собі гонить наперед кудись п'яна кумпанія блазнів, і заходить ся божевільним реготом. — Під прапором «українського» мистецтва! ...<sup>8</sup>

It is entirely appropriate for a modernist to berate popular, lowbrow culture, and there is really nothing surprising in the vehemence with which Ievshan attacks philistines. After all, T. S. Eliot and Ezra Pound also turned high modernism into a religion and believed that only the faithful were worthy of respect. The titles of Eliot's works speak plainly: "The Waste Land," "The Hollow Men." Compare Ievshan's judgement to Ezra Pound's denunciation of non-modernists in a brief essay entitled "The Constant Preaching to the Mob":

Time and again the old lie. There is no use talking to the ignorant about lies, for they have no criteria. Deceiving the ignorant is by some regarded as evil, but it is the demagogue's business to bolster up his position and to show that God's noblest work is the demagogue. Therefore we read again for the one-thousand-one-hundred-and-eleventh time that poetry is made to entertain....

Either such statements are made to curry favor with other people sitting at fat sterile tables, or they are made in an ignorance which is charlatanry when it goes out to vend itself as sacred and impeccable knowledge.<sup>9</sup>

Pound shares many of the emotional excesses that Ievshan shows in his analysis of popular culture. They both regard their opponents as demagogues, liars, bourgeois epicureans, and ignoramus. But, unlike Ievshan, Pound does not blame them for their success. He is not embarrassed for them. Despite his reference to demagoguery and evil, his judgement of them is aesthetic and intellectual, not ethical.

Not so Ievshan. His image of a drunken company of clowns suggests a moral judgement. His horror that this commercially successful buffoonery takes place

---

8. "And so all the newest 'drama'—the one that is performed in the theatre—has descended to the most ordinary farce. It is nothing [on stage] but 'jokes,' cartwheels, [and] stunts; the actors are clowns who end up with bruised elbows and knees from their excessive jumping, while the production is apparently aimed at driving the last vestiges of intelligence from the soul.... And so this drunken band of buffoons races on and erupts with insane laughter. [And all of this is done] under the banner of 'Ukrainian' art!" (ibid., 10).

9. *Literary Essays of Ezra Pound*, ed. T. S. Elide (New York: New Directions, 1968), 64.



under the pennant of Ukrainian art belies his presumed aesthetic detachment. The problem with lowbrow art for Ievshan (as later for Chyzhevsky and others) lies not in the mere fact that it is not highbrow, but rather in the damage it does to the cause of promoting and stimulating Ukrainian culture. If Charlie Chaplin and Buster Keaton had made their films in Lviv, no doubt Ievshan would have been embarrassed too. The problem with lowbrow art for him is that it infects the social organism and thus prevents the salutary inoculation of high culture among the masses, which Ukrainian culture needs for its national salvation. By the same token it prevents the infected masses from passing their life-giving energy to the now barren and static highbrow art.

The notion of a sustaining vital link between high art and the masses is the essence of Ievshan's view of life. This is the basic criterion that he uses to judge the work of individual writers. He applies it, for example, in his analysis of Kotsiubynsky, whose individualism and existential relativism are not value choices by the author, but rather the outcome of a logical sequence of steps that begins, of course, with the failure of the link between the artist and society.

Творча думка не могла мати терену в серцях людей; а не маючи такого терену, не маючи до кого звертати ся, не знаходячи ніякого відгомону, — мусіла або відразу капітулювати, або опинити ся зовсім самотньою, відокремленою від тенденції всього життя, в опозиції до його. І бачимо як дійсні творці, дійсні наші письменники виходячи від ширших інтересів, від згоди своєї з тенденцією життя суспільного, від бажання жити спільністю інтересів з ширшою громадою, — йшли щораз більше в противному напрямі, поки не опинювали ся самі тільки, перед проблемою індивідуалізму. Душа опинюєть ся нараз сама серед широкого космосу і говорити може тільки з [Б]огом; вона бачить неможливість жити широким життям і єдинити ся духом з оточуючою громадою. Тут її трагедія. Вона бачить повний образ прози життя, всю безвиглядність втілити свої думки. І починає мріяти. Понад сірою буденщиною заточує веселчані коліри, на крилах пісні летить на стрічу новому [Б]огови. І не можучи виливати перед загальний скарбів своєї душі, нагромаджує їх в собі, культура своєї душі являєть ся самотнім суспільним завданням і післанництвом ...<sup>10</sup>

---

10. "Creative thought could not have a place in the hearts of people; and not having such a place, not having anyone to turn to, not finding any response, it had either to capitulate immediately or end up entirely alone, separated from all of life's tendencies, in opposition to it. And we see how the true creators, our true writers who began with broad interests, from their agreement with the [general] tendency in the life of society, from a desire to live according to their common interests with the community at large, went increasingly further in the opposite direction until they ended up only by themselves, facing the problem of individualism. A soul suddenly ends up entirely alone in the entire cosmos and can speak only with God; he sees the impossibility of living a broad existence

This could hardly be further from the truth. Throughout his creative life Kotsiubynsky focussed attention on the enormous gulf between the individual and the community. But Ievshan, having found his theory, is not likely to be swayed by the facts. One after another, he examines various notable and less significant writers under the distorting lens of this modernist–cum–romantic–cum–vitalist approach. Needless to say, he finds most of the figures that he examines to be lacking the sincere commitment to life that his approach predicates as the supreme value. Indeed, the closer a given writer stands to real modernism as it is generally understood, the more likely Ievshan will find him or her wanting. The members of the Moloda Muza are perfunctorily dismissed. Petro Karmansky is an insincere pessimist who writes about the kingdom of darkness and captivity, but has not himself experienced its passions. Pachovsky is a poet of album verses who writes only on a limited range of subjects and therefore cuts himself off from experience. Iatskiv receives qualified praise, but the characteristics for which he is praised are anything but modernist: “Помимо великої, правдиво європейської культури артистичної, він все таки не перестав бути мужиком у своєму досадному, ляконичному, простому способі писання, а чиста українська мова і здоровий український елемент лучить його з тим народом, з котрого вийшов.”<sup>11</sup> For a modernist, this is surely damning with faint praise.

Perhaps the most revealing of Ievshan's analyses are those that result in outright approval. Few of the writers he examines in *Pid praporom mystetstva* few receive his admiration. Among them are Kobylanska and Vasyl Stefanyk. Kobylanska's chief theme, the process of compromise between the idealized values of the artist and practical human needs and desires, is fundamentally in harmony with Ievshan's theoretical approach. But the critic fails to see much of what is central to Kobylanska's writing. According to him, the life she depicts is idealized. It is reality viewed from the perspective of eternity. Ievshan, however, completely ignores or perhaps entirely fails to realize that female sexuality is, in fact, the primary engine of the vital forces that Kobylanska

---

and uniting in spirit with the surrounding community. Here lies his tragedy. He can see the full view of life's prose, the total impossibility of realizing his ideas. And he begins to dream. Above monotonous daily life he unfolds the colours of the rainbow, [and] on the wings of a song he flies to meet the new God. And unable to pour out the treasures of his spirit, he accumulates them within himself, [and] the cultivation of his spirit becomes his only social responsibility and mission” (Ievshan, *Kuda my pryishly*, 14–15).

11. “Despite [his] great, truly European artistic culture, he did not cease to be a peasant in his angry, laconic, and simple manner of writing, while [his] pure Ukrainian language and healthy Ukrainian element bind him to this people [*narod*] from which he emerged” (Ievshan, *Pid praporom mystetstva*, 33).

depicts in her works. (The fact that this sexuality is never actually described or portrayed is not a positive feature of her work.)

A similar misunderstanding occurs in Ievshan's reading of Stefanyk. He praises the author for his laconic portrayals of human suffering. According to Ievshan, Stefanyk outdoes all of the ethnographic writers who depicted the Ukrainian peasant even though he never actually describes them; he lets them speak for themselves, his portrayals are completely objective, and he identifies completely with the subject of his writing. Whether or not this notion of objectivity represents a misunderstanding of Stefanyk's method, it is a symptom of the real problem in Ievshan's understanding of the writer. The real source of the critic's satisfaction with this writer lies in the critic's sense that Stefanyk has a personal interest in the subject: "Творчість Стефаника — чи не найсильніше слово з усієї української літератури. Він показав не лиш, що таке дійсний артист з [Б]ожої ласки, але й те як артизм може йти в парі з іншими, моральної натури, цілями."<sup>12</sup> But Stefanyk is not an artist by the grace of God, and his works do not carry a moral imperative.

In the final analysis, Ievshan cannot escape the vicious circle of Ukrainian modernism. He cannot stop thinking about elephants. He is, by personal inclination and ideological necessity, a critic of hybrid, mixed approaches. Of the three kinds of modernist critics described above, Ievshan is, of course, a little of each of them. He is, in varying measures, simultaneously a preacher, a judge, and a visionary. But is he a modernist? I think not. He is a Ukrainian modernist.

---

12. "Stefanyk's oeuvre is likely the strongest word in all of Ukrainian literature. He showed not only what a true artist, by God's grace, can be, but also how artistry can go step in step with other goals of a moral nature" (ibid., 108).



# Mykola Khvylovy and Expressionism

*Vira Aheieva*

The phenomenon of expressionism in literature has generally been viewed as receiving its fullest development in German-language works. Other literatures, it has been argued, felt the German impact and influence to a greater or lesser degree. In Ukraine in the first three decades of the twentieth century, neo-Romanticism was ascendant. At various times individual writers adhered to various models of it. In fact, in the 1920s a vigorous discussion took place about the terms "romantic vitalism" and "active romanticism," which had been introduced and promoted by members of the Vaplite writers' group, particularly Mykola Khvylovy.<sup>1</sup> However, expressionist influences were also most evident in the style that these writers proposed.

It is quite clear that Ukrainian lyrico-expressionist prose of the 1920s was greatly influenced by its Russian and German counterparts. One can detect these influences in the works of individual writers and in the formation of the entire neo-Romantic current. In fact, neo-Romantic and expressionist elements are closely interwoven in the styles of many Ukrainian prose writers of the day.

The revolutionary rupture and terrible reality of the ensuing civil strife and Russo-Ukrainian war impelled many authors to search for new forms and devices that would adequately depict the spirit of their age. Expressionism, with its agitational intensity and attention to socio-political aspirations and issues, was held dear by those writers who genuinely wished to hear the "music of revolution." Bold experimentation and sensitivity to the newest European aesthetic searchings were germane to the first post-revolutionary years, with their atmosphere of "the dawn of history" and renunciation of the past. Impartial representation or the worship of sensual beauty now appeared anachronistic. At the same time, however, the influence of impressionist traditions remained very

---

1. Khvylovy raised the issue of romanticism as an appropriate style for the times in his first pamphlet series, "Kamo hriadeshy" (1925), repr. in his *Tvory u dvokh tomakh*, vol. 2 (Kyiv: Dnipro, 1991), 419–20.

strong. Mykola Khvylovy appears to be the most interesting figure to investigate in the light of such an “ornamental” interweaving of various stylistic features. His manner as a writer changed abruptly and often unpredictably. He combined an expressionist, agitational, and debunking emotional intensity in his work with an impressionist attention to psychological nuances, beauty, and the multifacetedness and rich tones and colours of the external world. The author frequently acted simultaneously as an observer and a divulger in his works.

The stylistic features of Khvylovy's novelle can be traced to various literary influences. At specific times he was an admirer of Nikolai Gogol and Panteleimon Kulish, Mykhailo Kotsiubynsky and Vasyl Stefanyk, Andrei Bely and Boris Pilniak, and German expressionism and the Russian Serapion Brothers. The term “lyrico-expressionist prose” defines only a part of Khvylovy's creative output. Some of his works are marked by a clearly impressionist manner, while others can easily be classified as neo-Romantic. Each case of attributing direct influences to Khvylovy or charging him with imitation—a criticism that Khvylovy's contemporaries so misused—should be treated with caution.

Khvylovy's “romantic vitalism” or “active romanticism” has much in common with the prevailing neo-Romantic and expressionist concepts of his day, particularly with the “activism” of German expressionism. Various memoirs confirm that writers and artists in Ukraine were closely acquainted with the latter. The influential Ukrainian theatre director Les Kurbas, who had studied in Vienna, played a pivotal role in this regard. In 1919 he published an enthusiastic assessment of the German expressionists,<sup>2</sup> and under his direction expressionist plays predominated in the repertoire of the Berezhil Theatre in Kharkiv. The expressionist influence is also evident in Oleksander Dovzhenko's early films, Andrii Holovko's prose, and Mykola Kulish's plays. In the 1920s as well, Ukrainian translations of the works of Kasimir Edschmid and Georg Heym and a collection of Ukrainian articles on expressionism and the expressionists<sup>3</sup> were published, and the Neoclassicist group of Ukrainian poets showed a sustained interest in German expressionism. In short, Ukrainian writers, actors, and artists were well versed in the new style that succeeded the last “great” literary and artistic trend of the nineteenth century—impressionism.

The expressionists rejected the impressionists' “pure” observational manner and strove to communicate all-encompassing, powerful, even ecstatic, emotions. High ideals and authorial passion again became legitimate, and consequently authors chose to depict exceptionally dramatic images. This new literary approach also seemed best suited for the turbulent post-revolutionary years in Ukraine.

---

2. “Nova nimetska drama” (New German Drama), *Muzahet* (Kyiv), 1919, 1–3.

3. S. Savchenko, ed., *Ekspressionizm ta ekspresionisty* (Kyiv: Siaivo, 1929).



In many of his novelle Khvylovy openly declares his evaluative, confessional, and even judgmental point of view. Moreover, he pays virtually no attention to depicting recognizably realistic or believable circumstances, which occasionally seem deliberately exaggerated. Here one can see many points of contact between the poetics of Khvylovy and prominent expressionist writers. The character in lyrico-expressionist prose is most often not a private individual but a public one—a person in a crowd, at the podium, at a meeting, i.e., the active subject.<sup>4</sup> Such protagonists appear in Khvylovy's first collection *Syni etiudy* (Blue Etudes [Kharkiv: Derzhavne vydavnytstvo Ukrainy, 1923]), in the stories "Solonskyi Iar," "Chumakivska komuna" (Chumak Commune), "Baraky, shcho za mistom" (The Barracks outside Town), and "Legenda" (Legend); in his second collection *Osin* (Autumn [Kharkiv: Chervonyi shliakh, 1924]), in the stories "Liliuli" ("Liluli") and "Ia (Romantyka)" (I [A Romance]); and in his unfinished novel "Valdshnepy" (Woodcocks).<sup>5</sup> Similar characters appear in Leonhard Frank's wartime works "Der Vater," "Das Liebespaar," "Die Mutter," and "Die Kriegswitwe"; in Heym's "Der fünfte Oktober" (1913); and in Edschmid's "Der Bezwingen" (1916).<sup>6</sup>

The soldiers' widows and bereaved parents in Frank's stories are generally "small," unnoticeable people whose experience of grief, tragedy, and devastation awakens a need to protest and a desire to wreak vengeance on those guilty of the total evil brought on by war. The obedient waiter, whose only son was what gave his life meaning, is conditioned to serve and conform by his very profession. He finds an outlet for his unbearable spiritual suffering in summoning others to struggle against evil. He appears, with a napkin on his arm, at the head of a large anti-war demonstration. Similar mass scenes can be found in many of Frank's stories. Homiletic passion finds its outlet in fervid speeches at large gatherings. Maillard, the French revolutionary hero in Heym's "Der fünfte Oktober," and Frank's insurgents and war victims belong to different historical epochs. A comparison of these works reveals that the historical background and the characters' socio-psychological traits are conventions in expressionist prose. The temporal and the plot in general are meant to serve only as a means for emphasizing a basic idea. This feature was remarked upon by Oswald Burghardt

---

4. Cf. Mikhail Bakhtin, "Formy vremeni i khronotopa v romane," in his *Literaturno-kriticheskie statii* (Moscow: Khudozhestvennaia literatura, 1986), 145.

5. Part one was published in *Vaplite*, no. 5 (1927); the issue of *Vaplite* containing the next installment was confiscated by the authorities before it could be distributed and has not survived.

6. Frank's stories all appeared in the collection *Der Mensch ist gut* (Zurich and Leipzig: Rascher, 1917). Heym's story appeared in his collection *Der Dieb: Ein Novellenbuch* (Leipzig: Ernst Rowohlt, 1913). Edschmid's story appeared in his collection *Timur: Novellen* (Leipzig: Kurt Wolff, 1916).

(a.k.a. Iurii Klen): "Read Maillard's speech in the first story [of "Der fünfte Oktober"], and you will find in it that entire dynamic of gestures and words that you now see in the meeting scene of Kurbas's production of [Georg Kaiser's] *Gas*."<sup>7</sup>

In Khvylovy's "Legenda" the expressionist emphasis on open agitation is quite obvious. Its insurgent heroine also delivers her ideas in front of a crowd of listeners as a "great prophet," a leader: "Through death life will reign for us. Leave the forests, the thickets, the darkness. Fly like butterflies to the light... Listen! Listen! Do you not hear how the ages are sounding the alarm?! Do you not see how we are climbing out of the chasm!? One more step and we will be in the azure land, but if we fail to make the step we will remain in the abyss, dark and slippery as a frog ..." This speech's words and intonation are reminiscent of Maillard's speech in Heym: "Again you will crawl into your caves, the torch of freedom has become but a small night light, a poor taper, bright enough only to illuminate the way to your holes."

The elevated, symbolic figures of the protagonists are placed in extreme, exceptionally dramatic circumstances that are frequently consciously theatrical. Khvylovy's characters are given to emotional gestures, loud monologues, and excessive passion, which is usually balanced by the author's ironic commentary. This raises the issue of the relationship between the author's voice and characters' voices (or points of view, in Bakhtinian terms<sup>8</sup>) in lyrico-expressionist prose. In Khvylovy's writing there are many divergences from the expressionist tradition. When one compares works that deal with a similar problem or topic, the difference is most obvious in the narrative structure. One of the most important expressionist motifs is the eruption and sudden transformation of an ordinary, average person under extraordinary, dramatic circumstances. The use of contrast and internal psychological conflict illuminates the very moment of spiritual flight by individuals who hitherto had appeared quite unremarkable. In Khvylovy's early novelle (written during the years 1920–22) this motif was his favourite. It occurs in his stories "Kit u chobotiakh" (Puss in Boots), "Solonskyi Iar," and "Legenda." Typologically similar characters occur in Vsevolod Ivanov's "O kazachke Marfe" (About the Cossack Girl Martha, 1926) and Frank's "Michaels Rückkehr" and "Der Vater." The representative, common nature of the social situation and the hero's fate are underlined in a number of ways. In Ivanov's story the Cossack girl joins a Red Army unit as a cook to save her son

---

7. Osvald Burhardt [sic], "Georg Haim [Heym]," in Georg Haim, *Novely*, trans. Osvald Burhardt, Maksym Rylsky, and Viktor Petrov (Kyiv: Slovo, 1925), 8.

8. See Mikhail Bakhtin, "Avtor i geroi v esteticheskoi deiatelnosti," in his *Estetika slovesnogo tvorchestva* (Moscow, 1986), 75–90.

from execution. Although she initially serves to “pay off her debt,” she eventually becomes a celebrated commander.

As an art form, expressionism reflected an unstable, stormy, dangerous, and explosive reality. To underline their characters’ exceptional nature, authors often limited their narrative to short, dramatic time frames. When the dramatic tension of the situation they were depicting waned and the high wave passed and life returned to its normal channels, these characters disappeared. Extraordinary heroes can operate only in unusual circumstances, i.e., when an epoch lifts and carries them aloft.

In his story Ivanov uses the folkloric, stylized, first-person *skaz* form of narration. He never expresses his own evaluations and views. Frank’s “Der Vater,” like his “Michaels Rückkehr” and “Die Mutter,” are written using “objective” third-person narration: agitational intensity is restricted to the heroes’ speeches, declarations, and monologues. There are, however, no lyrical digressions by the author as narrator or direct authorial comment in the narrative. In contrast, the lyrical element in Khvylovy’s work, as in all Ukrainian expressionist and impressionist prose of the 1920s, is significantly stronger.

The German expressionists rejected the extremes of naturalism—in particular its excessive deference to nature—and apotheosized the great idea and the internal drive. Expressionist prose was wedded in particular to the growth of a powerful anti-war protest. Faith in humanity’s indefatigable spirit of rebellion sustained the work of almost all representatives of this new trend. The tragic, entirely hopeless borderline situation was overcome by the hero, even if through death.

Ukrainian neo-Romantic and expressionist prose of the 1920s developed in an atmosphere of anticipated social renewal and national rebirth and zeal for insurgent heroics. But this atmosphere lasted only a few years, for a fleeting historical period of time that Khvylovy later depicted as a brief moment of embodied ideals. In keeping with contemporary romantic convictions, it was a time of battles and armed uprisings. Khvylovy’s characters view these legendary days as the idealized embodiment of their romantic visions, as a passing moment in which their dreams and reality have coincided, and consider them as truly their own time. The collapse of their illusions places them in a position of being superfluous. Their enthusiasm gives way to disillusionment and sober realization that, contrary to their dreams of a “light-blue distance,” society has once again fallen under the sway of “federation-wide philistinism” and the “undefeated boor.”<sup>9</sup> Khvylovy’s heroes are often dispirited, devastated, impotent, and no longer capable of continuing the struggle. The tragedy of the depicted situation

---

9. See Khvylovy, “Synii lystopad,” in his *Tvory*, 1: 215, 210.

and no escape from it is transcended only through the author's passion and declaration of faith.

Expressionist influences are most evident in those novelle by Khvylovy where active heroes are at the centre. Works in which the protagonists are given to reflection and inclined towards passive observation are marked by an impressionist preoccupation with collecting and conveying sense impressions and capturing unforeseen nuances of moods. Initial chaotic impressions are somewhat ordered through authorial intervention. The work by Khvylovy that is most interesting in the way that it combines expressionist and impressionist elements is his story "Redaktor Kark" (Editor Kark) in *Syni etiudy*. It is constructed as the hero's indirect internal monologue, which is frequently interrupted by authorial commentary, evaluation, and even inserted sections in which the author directly addresses the reader. Kark is a Ukrainian *intelligent* and a romantic, superfluous man in an unstable and mercantile time who has become disillusioned with the reality of post-revolutionary life. He is fixated completely on a past filled with deeds of heroism and self-sacrifice. The symbol of this past is his revolver, which serves as the first link in a chain of memories and associations. Kark's reminiscences are fragmentary and touch on various periods during his life: "The history of the Browning is as follows: a forest, a road, escapees, enemies, and houses, and trees, and no one cares, no air to breathe any more, your lungs are on fire and burning up, burning up ... A shot ... A dark history." His thoughts are summarized by another voice, which is most likely the author's: "But this is not a diary, it's a real contemporary novella."<sup>10</sup> Kark is a hero with a penchant for self-reflection. His disillusionments and non-acceptance of the present take on global proportions as historical analogies are introduced one after the other. At the same time the past and the present are continually juxtaposed in his consciousness as heroism and mundane reality, as inspired motivation, on the one hand, and drab conformism on the other. Thoughts of suicide never abandon him.

Kark is indifferent to his personal future, completely inactive, and because of this exceptionally sensitive to the minutest manifestations of vital, natural life. His impressions are recorded without logical connection to the action of the plot, and his internal monologues are interrupted by the author's apostrophes to the reader. On the one hand, these apostrophes serve to deliberately destroy the expected novella form: "My dear readers! Here's a simple and understandable letter. I fear that you will not read my novella to the end. You are in the grip of *prosvita* literature. And I respect this. But there is a time for everyone. To create is to create."<sup>11</sup> The apostrophes also have another important function. In impressionist prose the author carefully notes changes in mood or a character's

10. Khvylovy, "Redaktor Kark," in his *Tvory*, 1: 137.

11. *Ibid.*, 140.

stream of impressions without evaluating them or interjecting himself into what is being represented. Khvylovy is similarly attentive to nuances in his hero's moods and impressions, but at the same time he wishes to distance himself by underscoring a personal dissimilarity. He stresses his own optimism, creative élan, and faith in future successes. This strikes a dissonant note with the hero's mood ("I step onto the new path and I am joyful. Before me shines the star just as it once shone"<sup>12</sup>). The author dismays the reader by turning to his "vital thoughts" (*zhyvoi mysl'i*) and laughing at his traditional views. In the end he candidly explains his work's chaotic composition: "I want to speak off-topic and I am. I want to compose an agitational leaflet."<sup>13</sup>

"Redaktor Kark" presents an interesting example of a divided self, not within the hero but within the author. Kark is whole, almost unambiguously so. His context appears to be encompassed by two circles of the author's evaluation. Khvylovy undoubtedly sympathizes and identifies with him. This is evident in many instances when what is being said in the author's voice almost fuses with the thoughts of the hero. They have common memories; they were together on the revolutionary barricades. Khvylovy particularly underlines this. He confesses that the meaning of seeking a new form, a new creativity, lies in having the reader "Feel the struggle of my class! My class—the proletariat—bloodied among the weeds and on the paths of struggle for freedom, equality, and brotherhood."<sup>14</sup> (This is the same style that he justified when he stated that he wanted to write an agitational leaflet.)

The propinquity between the author's and the hero's evaluative positions is evident. But this is only one aspect of their relations. From another perspective Khvylovy never ceases to underline his dissimilarity. Kark is a candidate for suicide; he is tired, dejected, and indifferent to the future. Khvylovy, meanwhile, presents himself to the reader as someone who is stepping "onto the new path," as someone who will "joyfully wander along unknown paths of wild thyme" and "create in a new way."<sup>15</sup> He suddenly abandons his hero at the moment of the latter's darkest despair, when all of Kark's thoughts are centred on his revolver, and he announces that his "novelle is finished." A final comment follows, composed as Khvylovy's conversation with a reader who is mistrustful and irritated by unfamiliar stylistic innovations. He again distances himself from the hero and his despair: "My dear reader, this is Kark's diary (for the purpose of revealing the nature of [his] type), and only seldom did I intrude."<sup>16</sup>

---

12. Ibid., 144.

13. Ibid.

14. Ibid., 145.

15. Ibid., 144.

16. Ibid., 154.



By revealing his hero's mood in detail, Khvylovy is, on the one hand, allowing everything represented to be the basis of an evaluation of the hero without any prompting or commentary by the author. The hero speaks for himself through the chosen interior monologue form favoured by the impressionists. On the other hand, however, the author is unable to restrain himself from making his own judgements; he finds the framework of impartial representation confining. The contradiction is resolved by dividing the author's "I," especially through the use of irony. Lyrical intensity, a refined ambience, and trenchant irony, with nearly poster-like agitation and caricature, are interwoven in the style of many of Khvylovy's works and result in unexpected artistic effects.

Khvylovy's active manifestation of his original conception allows him to bring balance to the amorphous plots of his works. Among the characteristic features of "classic" expressionist prose, especially the German, were an exotic plot (even and particularly in terms of the geographic setting) and the depiction of extraordinary passions and adventures. In Khvylovy's novelle the plot is, for the most part, hardly noticeable. His prose is tied thematically to post-revolutionary Ukraine, and the spatial-temporal parameters of the concrete action are not too broad. There are no distant wanderings or fantastic adventures typical of romanticism. However, numerous lyrical digressions and other extra-plot elements, whose role in the structure of the stories is exceptionally large, impress the reader with their uncontrolled abundance of "manifold analogies and associations" (*"strokatykh analohii i asotsiatsii"*), as they are called in Khvylovy's "Arabesky" (Arabesques, 1927). It is there that the temporal frame of what is being depicted is widened through direct authorial interference. The poetics of these digressions are often expressionist. We see a fascination with exotic, distant lands and the heroic, perilous escapades of remarkable people during various historical epochs. In Khvylovy's early collections *Syni etiudy* and *Osin* his digressions are replete with exotic names and terms that are completely irrelevant to the basic action of the plot. In the novelle "Na hlukhim shliakhu" (Off the Beaten Track, 1923), for example, he writes: "Over there, somewhere in the Great Zondskys on the Volcano Smer."<sup>17</sup> In "Elehiia" (Elegy, 1924) he writes: "and the mountain grew, [becoming] taller than Havryzankar, [and] deeper than the ocean's depths."<sup>18</sup> Even in the later "Arabesky" he writes: "Then I love Spain because it is far away, because I am a fantasizer, because I recognize and adore the city not as others do, because the city is Cervantes Saavedra, Miguel, because during the battle of Lepanto, because captivity by Algerian pirates."<sup>19</sup>

---

17. Ibid., 177.

18. Ibid., 294.

19. Ibid., 301.

The direct parallels with various expressionists' invocations of historical figures and events are an interesting study in themselves. In Khvylovy's abundant use of names there is a marked preference for those associated with Romantic literature—the authors who he most frequently mentions are Gogol,<sup>20</sup> E. T. A. Hoffmann, and Cervantes. He also pays a great deal of attention to ideas and images that constitute his concept of the "Asiatic renaissance," of "awakened, universally significant Asiatic energy."<sup>21</sup> Both these traditions were very significant in the poetics of expressionism. The Romantic elements are linked, understandably, with the very origins of expressionism, while the slogan of activism and orientation on the strong, dynamic personality who determines his own fate conditioned an interest in "primal," "savage," unspent youthful energy not weighed down by the demands of civilization and humanity's various cultural taboos. In expressionism "the human being arrives at the point from which it began a thousand years ago. It is as free and naïve as a newborn child, and its joy of living is not clouded by issues concerning the conditions of earthly existence and inheritance."<sup>22</sup>

This kind of hero is most clearly depicted in Edschmid's *Timur* (1916), in Heym's "Der Irre" (1913), and in a number of Boris Pilniak's stories. Edschmid's *Timur* is truly a "free and naïve" person untrammelled by any socio-cultural restraints: "They sent him as a fourteen-year-old from the yurt on his first hunting trip. He killed thirteen deer in the hip-high snow. His uncle Haji Berlas smeared his thumb and gave him a wife. In the orchard by the river he played with her all evening. During the night he killed and ate her, swam across the river, freed a whole herd of horses, and galloped off like a whirlwind across the place called Kesh."<sup>23</sup> Heym also underscores the totally extra-social nature and barbaric, total permissiveness of his character, a patient who has spent many years in a psychiatric hospital and who, intoxicated after suddenly receiving the right to govern his own life, destroys everything that crosses his path: "It seemed to him that he was walking across a wide square. Many, many people were lying there, all of them having fallen to and facing the ground.... 'Kaaba, Kaaba,' he repeated with every step. He pronounced these words like a mighty curse, and each time he stepped right and then left on the myriad white heads. And then the skulls cracked; it sounded like someone breaking a nut with a hammer."<sup>24</sup> This

---

20. In *Über den Expressionismus in der Literatur und die neue Dichtung* (Berlin: Reiss, 1920) Kasimir Edschmid refers to Gogol as a forerunner of expressionism.

21. See Khvylovy, "Ukraina chy Malorosii," in his *Tvory*, 2: 613–14.

22. *Ekspressionizm: Sbornik* (Petrograd and Moscow, 1923), 54.

23. Ihor Kostetsky, ed., *Vybranyi Kazimir Edshmid* (Munich: Na hori, 1960), 69.

24. Haim, *Novely*, 26.

widely used motif in expressionist literature appears in the title of one of Pilniak's stories—"Smertelnoe manit" (The Fatal Attracts, 1918).<sup>25</sup>

Khvylovy is much more restrained in the use of naturalistic details, and his heroes are less courageous in violating social norms and customs. In the lyrical authorial monologues incorporated into the structure of many of his stories, however, he often turns to similar historical figures—the carriers of a primeval, "pre-cultural" force and vitality. Usually they are Asiatic military commanders and rulers known for their ruthless tyranny and unfettered power, such as Tamerlane or the semi-legendary Attila. Perhaps the most characteristic example is found in this excerpt from "Na hlukhim shliakhu":

[M]y dear friend, here is a miniature fragment from a forgotten lost poem called "Asia":

... In the fifth century—savage and distant—from the crests of the Ural mountains, from the cliffs of the Volga to the placid azure waters of the Danube: Huns, Sarmatians, Germans [came] ... And Mundtsuk's son killed his brother Bled. The rabid Attila, king of the Huns.

... Centuries passed. And a desolate century arrived—the fourteenth. And in the unknown Asiatic heights there arose the figure of Tamerlane."<sup>26</sup>

Khvylovy also searches in the Ukrainian past for symbols of jacqueries that destroy century-old restrictions and injustices: in "Redaktor Kark" he mentions "popular revolts, village uprisings, the Khmelnytsky rebellion, Pavliuk, Triasylo," Gonta and Zalizniak (of course, with their Romantic, Shevchenkian, halos intact), the "roar of the *haidamaky*," and, finally, the *Makhnovshchyna* as "the tragedy of Left-Bank Ukraine's intelligentsia."<sup>27</sup> This attention to times when elemental forces that have been dormant for centuries had awakened, and even though they were repeatedly anarchic and destructive, was one of the important features of the expressionist style.

A particular poeticization of the elemental, an unreflective submission to coarser feelings and instincts, is also evident in the expressionists' treatment of intimate themes. In this regard Khvylovy is sometimes close to Edschmid and especially to his Russian contemporaries Ivanov and Pilniak. In Edschmid love is often a duel, a contest between egotistical temperaments (for example, in Timur's relations with the female Chinese soothsayer). In "Maintonis Hochzeit" (1915) the character of the heroine, a submissive girl who is devoted in her love, suddenly appears in a contrasting light in the final episode. The shy betrothed is transformed into a ruthless avenger of the death of her beloved: "And then Maintoni did what was greater and more terrible than anything Rodriguez had

25. Originally published in the newspaper *Utro Rossii*, March 1918.

26. Khvylovy, *Tvory*, 1: 176.

27. *Ibid.*, 138, 143.

given when he rescued her on the cliff ... she stepped broadly onto the face of the dying man; his head fell back awkwardly."

In various ways Pilniak emphasizes his characters' sensual, instinctive, animalistic feelings. A model for understanding the features of his approach to the theme of intimacy can be found in the early story "God ikh zhizni" (A Year in Their Life, 1917).<sup>28</sup> A settlement of hunters lives according to primitive, natural laws of survival. The author wants to give the impression of an existence that is outside society and separated from the world. The protagonists, a young married couple, are portrayed as symbols of this healthy, unspoiled existence, and there is no immersion into their individual psychology. There is also another protagonist—the tame bear Makar—and the internal world of all three of them receives equivalent treatment. "From the day she was born," the girl "grew like a thistle on a precipice, free and alone." The hero is "robust and broad-shouldered, with dark eyes that were large, calm, and kind. He smelled of the taiga, healthily and strongly. He dressed, as did all the hunters, in furs and in a homespun, coarse white cloth." The story of their love is accorded one sentence: "Demid went to the ravine to see the girls, took Marina from the ravine to his place ... and Marina became Demid's wife." The "love story" ends with a description of the births that are "accepted" by the bear, which then finally senses the call of freedom in the forest and disappears into the taiga.

There are more such examples in Pilniak's prose. The arbitrariness of instincts is poeticized in a juxtaposition to cultural conditioning and the superficial, unstable veneer of civilization. All of this echoes Pilniak's holistic view of Russian history, in which the revolution is seen as a return to the old, peasant Russia. The contrast between "civilization" and "nature" is a central feature of his work.

This opposition also occurs in Khvylovy's "Zhyttia" (Life, 1922) and "Legenda", but it is never a fundamental one. Interesting parallels can also be found by comparing his "Arabesky" and the works of central European expressionists. This novelle may be considered a key to many features of Khvylovy's style. It contains almost all of the basic ideas, conflicts and struggles, and even character types in his prose. The brief presentation of the love escapade of Brygita, the woodsman's daughter, is entirely in the expressionist manner. But the fundamental opposition in this story is not between the elemental and animalistic, on the one hand, and the civilizational and constraining, on the other, as is the case in Pilniak. It is between the freely taken individual choice and the decision taken under coercion. Near her hut, the solitary forest-dweller Brygita encounters a duke while he is hunting. Although he is as handsome as a "fairy-tale knight," he is a brutal ruler. Khvylovy borrows here from the poetics of

---

28. Published in *Almanakh Spolokhi* (Moscow) 11: 134–48.

knightly romances, in which great deeds and selfless service are as common as untrammelled violence. Although the duke initially says that she is as hideous as a monkey, gradually an instinctive attraction draws them to one another: "There she met the duke again. He climbed off his horse, patted his pointer, and walked up to Brygita. He pressed her to his breast and cried out. Brygita did not take fright, but merely sighed deeply. The young duke grabbed her and placed her on his horse. Then they trotted along the forest paths" to his estate. But the freedom—loving captive escapes from the intimidating duke, who puts all his faith in his unlimited powers. Back at her hut, however, "all night she thought about the duke. And in the morning she herself followed the tracks of the horse's hooves back to the duke's estate. There! And so my arabesques are suddenly *finis*."<sup>29</sup> In the expressionist tradition this love story is presented as a duel of temperaments. The denouement does not present the triumph of a conqueror over a conquered victim, however, but the confirmation of individuals' rights to decide what is best for them in all circumstances.

Expressionist activism defined not just the specific type of protagonist but also the circumstances in which he or she acted and the entire temporal and spatial organization of a work. The exceptional, even excessive, interest of Ukrainian prose writers in the 1920s, particularly Khvylovy, in life's horrors (a trait also of expressionist poetics) has been much discussed by literary critics, both positively and negatively. The "primitivization" of the primeval, powerful, and totally uncontrolled hero understandably led to stylized settings and recreation of the horrific and monstrous in reality. (This was also a reaction to impressionism, which always preferred the colourful and festive side of life.)

The motifs of repeated destruction, of the death of the old, and the birth, in difficult convulsive sufferings, of the new were frequently suggested by the epoch of tectonic revolutionary shifts itself. In expressionism the beautiful and the monstrous are equals. What was important was not to represent reality as closely as possible—not to seek harmony—but to try to shock, to take what was being depicted beyond the mundane automatism of seeing things. Expressionist poetics are frequently founded upon the exceptional and the emphatically disharmonious, especially upon the contrast between the run-of-the-mill hero, who is typical of the masses, and unusual circumstances that demand heroic efforts and struggles. One contributor to the journal *Die Aktion*, Iwan Goll, stressed that the programmatic requirement of expressionism was: "The self-satisfied, sober person ought to learn again how to scream.... Art must transform the adult once more into a child."<sup>30</sup> Primitivization and the emphasis on grotesque details served as a device of illumination and sometimes even of agi-

---

29. Khvylovy, *Tvory*, 1: 316–17.

30. *Die Aktion*, 1917, 599.



tational schematization of a basic idea. This is probably why a tragic, somber tone dominated in German expressionism. A comparison with Ukrainian lyrico-expressionist prose of the 1920s bring us back again to the role of the author's lyrical voice.

In Khvylovy's early prose the contrast between the monstrous and the uplifting and beautiful is one of the basic expressionist devices that he uses. While affirming (generally through agitational declarations) the beauty of the just-born world and the future, he also contrasted this picture with a somber, naturalistic, and even sarcastic presentation of episodes from the past or of the "new savagery" that was starting to prevail despite romantic expectations. At the same time one senses an affection for all that was disappearing forever. Of course, it is precisely these motifs that bring together Khvylovy and Pilniak as closely as possible while also differentiating them.

Pilniak's revolution appeared to be a purificatory flood that had removed the thin layer of Europeanization and allowed the old, pre-Petrine Russia to be reborn. In those novelle by Khvylovy that are most expressionistic there is indeed a great deal that reminds one of Pilniak, particularly attention to the anomalous and horrific as characteristics of the time, and treatment of the present as the dissolute reign of the savage and Asiatic. Analogous references to *tatarshchyna* and *aziatshchyna* occur in both writers. The exceptional, which has been reduced to the commonplace and even habitual, characterizes the entire transitional epoch, a chaotic "time of troubles" in which the established order has been destroyed and the customary hierarchy of values has been violated. All of European expressionism was based on such a perception of the world.

The hues in which Ukrainian post-revolutionary writers depict life are generally softer and more pastel-like. Khvylovy, for example, is almost never satisfied to use only monotonous, dark tones. He introduces lyrical authorial observations, commentaries, and landscape details that contrast with a story's primary emotional colouring. In most cases he brings the tragic finale out of the shadows and introduces a calming lyrical or sunny, invocatory mood. The concluding emotional shocks and black, gloomy tones that one finds in Edschmid and Pilniak are foreign to Khvylovy's poetics. The one exception is his entirely romantic novelle "Doroha i lastivka" (The Road and the Swallow) in *Syni etudy*, with its pleasant and colourful memories of childhood, landscapes, and the swallow's beautiful view of a room decorated with refinement. The contrasting final note is therefore startling: "Then I picked up [the dead swallow] by the wings, contemptuously glanced at the wings, and threw it into the refuse pit where wandering city dogs scavenged."<sup>31</sup>

---

31. Khvylovy, *Tvory*, 1: 300.

In contrast, Pilniak often resorts to the most hideous and depressing naturalistic details. There are almost none of the bright and hope-engendering motifs that Khvylovy loves to insert. Edschmid is even bolder in his orchestration of the shocking ending. The often anthologized "Maintonis Hochzeit" and "Der Bezwinger" are classical examples of this expressionist stylistic element. In the latter we read: "Having approached the woman, who had fallen blinded, he raised her, took the cord from the fork of his bow and pulled it out and wound it around her neck. Then he gnawed into her [neck], took a mouthful of her blood, and gave the signal to raise the curtain, went down to the tents, completely inspired by the idol that had called forth and selected him, and in that finale his immortal face glowed like pure gold." In Edschmid elements of literary horror become indispensable devices of expression without which his experimental style loses its attraction. It is notable that in none of the quoted passages is there direct authorial intrusion into the narrative. In Khvylovy, however, contrasting bright colours are introduced in the author's or first-person narrator's voice.

Declaring a rupture with the preceding tradition, the expressionists sought new verbal devices, boldly reforming phraseology and syntax. In his manifesto *Über den Expressionismus in der Literatur*, Edschmid wrote: "Sentences lie bent in a rhythm differently than is customary. They are subordinated to a single intention, to that same current of spirit that only the distinctive can give.... Sentences serve ... the spirit that forms them.... Then filler words fall away. The verb is stretched and sharpened, taut, in order to grasp the expression clearly and properly. The adjective fuses with the carrier of the verbal idea. It too should not describe. It alone must convey in the most purposeful manner the essence and only the essence."<sup>32</sup> These thoughts are consonant with Khvylovy's many appeals to refuse customary, lifelike descriptions and with his treatment of romantic vitalism as an art of "new observation, new perception of the world, new complex vibrations."<sup>33</sup> The expressionist writer "never ever allows people to speak the way they would in reality—hesitantly, timidly, allegorically, haltingly, searching for words. On the contrary, the innermost feelings of these people burst out into the open with a frankness and clarity that would be impossible in ordinary life.... This transition-deprived precipitousness in the expression of a feeling is one of the most characteristic traits of such speech. Another is spiritually and musically distinct rhythmic separation."<sup>34</sup>

32. Quoted here from Kostetsky, *Vybranyi Kazimir Edshmid*, 10.

33. Khvylovy, "Kamo hriadeshy," 420.

34. Ihor Kostetsky, "Stefan George," in *Vybranyi Stefan George po-ukrainskomu ta inshymy, peredusim slovianskymy, movamy*, ed. Ihor Kostetsky (Stuttgart: Na hori, 1968), 147.

The weakening of the artistic structure on one level must in some way be compensated other levels. The amorphous plots of Khvylovy's novelle lead to a strengthening of the role of the text's rhythmic organization through refrains, leitmotifs, and descriptions of sounds. Lyrical refrains set the tone for the overall mood. In "Na hlukhim shliakhu," for example, the refrain is: "And the pines drone and drone. Why do the pines drone so? A tempest. Winds. Oh, you, my pines—the Asiatic land!"<sup>35</sup> In "Arabesky" fleeting visual images, "the Japanese lanterns," serve this function. This same structuring role is also played by literary associations or by musical or sound images, which are common in Khvylovy's early prose. The musical instrumentation of his novelle is evident on the compositional level and in the syntactic structure of his phrases and dialogues. (In the published versions of his works, Khvylovy to highlight this in the way punctuation and sentences were graphically presented). It is also evident in his frequent use alliteration and consonance—for example, the memorable "*Latviia — latattia*" in "Svynia" (The Pig, in *Syni etudy*), or "*dzvonalna zvena*" in "Liliuli"—and in his passion for exotic names and terms, which were frequently selected only because of their sound,

A text's sound instrumentation was a primary device not only for Khvylovy but also for many other Ukrainian writers of the 1920s, particularly Iurii Ianovsky, Arkadii Liubchenko, and Mykhailo Ivchenko. It is, in fact, a fundamental trait of Ukrainian lyrico-expressionist prose as a whole. Ihor Kostetsky, the Ukrainian translator of Edschmid, drew attention to the similarities in rhythmic and syntactic patterns that can be found in Edschmid's "Der Bezwinger" and Ianovsky's *Vershnyky* (The Riders) and to the resemblance between the poetics of the battle scenes in Ianovsky, Dovzhenko, and other European works.<sup>36</sup> Expressionist influences are most remarkable, however, in the prose of Khvylovy. Although these influences did not develop into an independent trend in Ukrainian prose, the interweaving of expressionist and impressionist elements played an important role in the work of Khvylovy, Ivchenko, Holovko, Vasyl Vrazhlyvy, and Ivan Kopylenko.

The phenomenon of Ukrainian lyrico-expressionist prose deserves serious comparative analysis—one that is not limited simply to enumerating authorial influences, borrowings, and mimicry. This prose evolved out of a powerful national romantic tradition through the assimilation and transformation of various elements from different, sometimes "incompatible" stylistic systems, which at the time were making their mark in modern Ukrainian literature.

*Translated by Myroslav Shkandrij*

35. Khvylovy, *Tvory*, 1: 179.

36. Kostetsky in *Vybranyi Kazimir Edshmid*, 67.



# The Rape of Civilization: Recurrent Structure in Myroslav Irchan's Prose

*Myroslav Shkandrij*

There is a recurrent pattern in Myroslav Irchan's storytelling: a relatively peaceful, if not entirely idyllic, existence is disrupted by a powerful and evil intruder. The latter is in most cases a war or a brutal colonization and conquest. In both scenarios the intervention is the product of hatred and greed, and the conflict rapidly dehumanizes the combatants.

The stories are framed within a larger question: whether contemporary civilization is fatally flawed. Irchan's most disturbing and brutal scenes deal with national, ethnic, and political violence, in which one side justifies the imposition of its will on the grounds of cultural superiority and the march of progress. The writer suggests that contemporary socio-political forces are indeed driving the world to destruction. Irchan's plot structures and endings incorporate his ultimate message of socialism, which he saw as the only idea capable of rising above national hatreds and ending class competition. His heroic characters typically look forward to a reconstructed, "new" world from which the horrors of armed conflict have been eliminated. There is no doubt that Irchan himself expected and encouraged such a Marxist interpretation of his work: he himself spoke of the "decoding" that his style required, suggesting in this way that it should be viewed as symbolic act and ideology.<sup>1</sup> However, whereas on the surface his

---

1. In his "Avtobiohrafiiia" (Autobiography, 1927) the author explains that as a "proletarian writer" he "consciously sacrifices himself for his reader" because he tries "to write in a manner that corresponds to his [reader's] intellectual level. Therefore, in many cases I have not kept up with the modern way of writing" (Myroslav Irchan, *Proty smerty: Opovidannia* [Montreal: Ivan Hnyda, 1927], 157). In a second autobiographical sketch, "Pro sebe" (About Myself, 1932), he complains that almost no critic has "decoded [rozshyfruvav] from a reading of my works those ideas that gave birth to them" (Myroslav Irchan, *Vybrani tvory*, vol. 2 [Kyiv: Derzhavne vydavnytstvo khudozhnoi literatury, 1956], 459).



message appears clear, a careful analysis of his form uncovers complicating messages that to a large degree subvert the stated intention.

The recurrent pattern can be detected in all of Irchan's major prose works.<sup>2</sup> The collection of reminiscences *V burianakh* (In the Weeds, 1925) is concerned with the war of 1919–20 between the Army of the Ukrainian National Republic and the Poles on one side and the Red Army on the other. Another such collection, *Tragediia pershoho travnia* (The Tragedy of May First, 1923), recounts the experiences of a regiment of Sich Riflemen in the same period; it charts and attempts to justify the evolution of a section of the army to Bolshevik positions. The story collection *Karpatska nish* (Carpathian Night, 1924) describes the destruction of a simple man's life during the First World War and his ensuing sufferings as an immigrant labourer in Canada. The story "Batko" (The Father, 1921) describes a poor Jewish trader whose happy family life and sanity are destroyed when a group of anti-Semitic soldiers rape and kill his two daughters. In "Moloda maty" (A Young Mother, 1923) it is a young woman who is robbed of her dream of family life when her husband is killed in a mining accident in Canada. "Smert Asuara" (The Death of Asuar, 1927) concerns the fate of an Inuit boy who, along with 248 other children, is forcibly deported from Alaska to the United States, placed in a non-native family, and robbed of his culture. The Inuit community is depicted as the victim of industrial development and cultural genocide.

In all of his works Irchan is mindful of the larger political message. For example, in *Kanadska Ukraina* (Canadian Ukraine, 1930), an essay on Canadian history and the role of the Ukrainian emigration, the connection between four hundred years of colonialism and the treatment of Ukrainian immigrant labour is made explicit. The Anglo-Saxon establishment is bent on exploiting and assimilating the new immigrant in the same manner as they earlier treated the native. As the author claims, this fact is frequently denied or ignored by Ukrainian writers familiar with Canada: "The Ukrainian intelligentsia, which went on tours to its 'brothers overseas' or settled in Canada, wrote only

---

2. His most important prose publications were: *Smikh Nirvany: Narysy i noveli* (Lviv: Komisariat Ukrainskykh sichovykh striltsiv v Volodymyri Volynskim, 1918); *Filmy revoliutsii: Narysy i noveli* (Berlin and New York: Kultura, 1923); *Tragediia pershoho travnia: Spomyny z horozhanskoï viiny na Ukraini*, vol. 1 (New York: Molot, 1923); *Karpatska nish: Opovidannia* (Winnipeg: Robitnycho-farmerske vydavnyche tovarystvo, 1924); *V burianakh: Spohady z hromadianskoï viiny na Ukraini*, vol. 2 (Toronto: Komitet budovy Ukrainskoho robitnychoho domu v Toronto, 1925); *Proty smerty: Opovidannia* (Montreal: Ivan Hnyda, 1927); *Na pividorozi: Narysy i opovidannia* (Kharkiv: Derzhavne vydavnytstvo Ukrainy, 1930); and *Vybrani tvory*, 2 vols. (Kyiv: Derzhavne vydavnytstvo khudozhnoi literatury, 1956).

encomiums prepared in an English sauce and painted Canada as a real heaven on Earth."<sup>3</sup>

In all of these cases, the cruelty, violence, and ideological blindness of the disruptive force is stressed. Rapes, pogroms, and profiteering in wartime have their analogies in judicial murder, genocide, and the swindling of the labour force in peacetime. The deeper plot in these works is the discourse on civilization and savagery. The narrator intervenes at various points to express ironic commentary on the claims of the powerful to cultural sophistication; he exposes their faith in a "civilizing mission" as merely a pretext for conquest. Military intervention and assimilationist ideas provide the drive to dominate politically and profit economically. The veneer of gentility and respectability that covers representatives of the exploiting classes is a sham; beneath it lies a naked desire for personal enrichment. In *V burianakh* the narrator openly condemns the "pillars of Western European culture, the super-civilized bankers, factory owners, property owners, and 'holy' fathers, who ... howl about the wild East."<sup>4</sup> Later in the same work he expresses outrage at the behaviour of "cultured" Polish gentlemen. His Belarusian friend comments: "Those people are still living the 'holy' inquisition and consider themselves messiahs, the sole defenders of civilization against the Eastern Vandals. The present war against us is in their eyes a crusade."<sup>5</sup> In a similar vein, "Bila malpa" (The White Monkey, 1926) aims to show that the Anglo-Saxon middle class is shamelessly concerned with financial gain. Both men and women exploit immigrants to obtain the material possessions that they covet. In the story a beautiful and respectable woman living in an elegant home on Machray Avenue (at the time a middle class Anglo-Saxon enclave in Winnipeg's immigrant-dominated North End) accepts the sexual advances of the immigrant narrator, along with the expensive presents he gives her. She feels no pangs of remorse when her husband, George Murphy, returns. The Murphys are polite, understated and, above all, controlled in their behaviour. Both husband and wife accept the overriding importance of two precepts: the need to maintain respectable appearances and the desirability of acquiring possessions. The key to their characters, however, is the immigrant narrator's observation that nothing would ever penetrate George Murphy's sang-froid: he is incapable of compassion and self-sacrifice. Like the judge and the policeman in "Smert Asuara" who sent the hapless Inuit boy to the electric chair, he represents a complacency that depends on limited vision and an edited social conscience. It is these characters' atrophied moral sensibility that makes them defective and rather pathetic human beings.

---

3. Irchan, "Kanadska Ukraina," repr. in his *Vybrani tvory*, 2: 340-1.

4. Irchan, *V burianakh*, 26.

5. *Ibid.*, 44.

The hopes of humanity rest not with the exploitative and individualistic bourgeoisie or their servants, but with simple people who reject the gospel of acquisitiveness. They are the farmers, labourers, and traders who are linked to the land, their extended families, and their communities. In many cases the uprooting of their lives through war or emigration has caused a loss of bearings. Their integration into the world of foreign military adventures and industrial expansion, where they are to be mere cannon fodder or raw material for industrial production, has been a traumatic dehumanizing experience. Several stories describe the acculturation to the new reality as the indirect cause of personal tragedy. "Nadii" (Hopes, 1926), for example, is written with the purpose of demonstrating that two children of immigrants in Winnipeg's North End have been raised on false dreams of escaping from a life of labour. Their aspirations for professional careers as a musician and actress, respectively, are thwarted by poverty and lack of opportunity. At the same time, however, the children have turned their backs on their parents and their land of origin. They have assimilated the nativist contempt for immigrants. Cut off from the higher civilizing influences of both the old and the new culture, they are destined to lead spiritually impoverished, disappointed lives.

In "Apostoly" (Apostles, 1927), another story set in immigrant Winnipeg, it is a group of whisky-distilling Christians who represent the degeneration of the community: their faith is a parody of Christianity, a mind-befuddling opium. The equation of alcoholism and religion is a clear Marxist dismissal of false consciousness. The dying socialist at the story's conclusion juxtaposes the claims of this degenerate cult with the teachings of the great enlightener and social activist Ivan Franko, making it clear where true virtue and salvation lie.

In this way Irchan's stories set up an opposition between civilization and barbarism that reverses the habitual metropolitan representation of peripheral and defenseless "native" people as backward and the raw material for assimilation into a higher civilization. "Proty smerty" (Against Death), the opening story of the collection with the same name, distills Irchan's thoroughly orthodox Marxist philosophy into a parable.<sup>6</sup> It paints the development of humanity as a remarkable and wondrous phenomenon that has been poisoned by the desire of one class or nation to rule another. When this disfiguring and corrupting characteristic is eliminated, presumably after the construction of a socialist society, full human potential can be realized. Imperialist, metropolitan views might paint the resistance of colonized cultures as blind, anarchic, and chaotic forces whose passionate opposition to assimilation threatens to unleash destruction, but in Irchan this equation is reversed to portray the dominant power as the force of dissolution and anarchy, and the traditional cultures as forces for constructive

---

6. Irchan, *Proty smerty*, 5–12.

cultural life. This underlying structure enables him to link exploited nations and peoples in a perspective of global resistance.

The author does not accept a Schopenhauerian view that the blind Will that drives human conduct is a terrible and absurd force from which one must escape. His message is to urge the victims of war and class exploitation to resistance. The longer prose works reveal a kind of *Bildungsroman* structure in which the leading character reaches a higher sense of personal and political understanding at the end and begins waging a conscious struggle with political evil. Rather than negating the Will, the author's position drifts toward the Nietzschean embrace of the Will's power to effect change. The dull, inarticulate individuals who have lost all sense of history or have degenerated into alcoholism or violence can, in some cases at least, be rescued and made into a force for good. The thin, alcohol-distilling Indian whom the narrator finds fishing on the banks of the Red River in "Vudzhena ryba" (Smoked Fish, 1925) is described as an example of the degenerate condition to which the native population has been reduced. His counterparts can be found in the Inuit Asuar of "Smert Asuara," in the brutal Lithuanian of *Karpatska nich*, and in the psychotic Ostafii of "Za krov" (For Blood, 1923). However, although the native fisherman and the perverse Ostafii appear irredeemable, the Lithuanian undergoes a transformation that leads to a rejection of senseless and cruel violence. Asuar's act of murder is described as a conscious act of political revenge, with which the reader is led to sympathize. The law court and the judge, with their pedantic formalities and circumscribed field of vision, cannot understand the overriding issue of genocide or the reasons for Asuar's conduct: the facts of colonial expansion are not admissible as legal evidence, nor can their discomforting reality be allowed to impinge on the awareness of Western Canada's establishment.

The same closing of the mind that allows the objectifying of people is described in the pogroms of Jews and the Communist victimization of local Ukrainian villages in Western Ukraine in 1919 and 1920. These scenes are depicted with shocking candour in *Tragediia pershoho travnia*. The revolting attitudes and unspeakable acts of cruelty are, in fact, an important element in justifying the narrator's turn to communism. He makes it clear that he believes in the new Communist regime's will to restore "civilized" behaviour and end the violence. But the message is a wider one. Savagery, it is clear, can stem not only from upper-class prejudice and military aggression; it can rise from the unenlightened and oppressed village of one's compatriots. As he witnesses scenes of destruction, he remembers the description of the *haidamaka* uprisings in Polish literature and of lawlessness in Panteleimon Kulish's historical fiction. A fear of the blind violence that in the past accompanied the striving of Ukrainian peasants to overthrow their oppressors, which is inevitably released in times of war with ensuing decivilizing tendencies, haunt the writer.



The author's attempts at introducing this orthodox Marxist political message in his prose were not without complications. Firstly, he fails to achieve a tidy narrative closure. In however muted a form, he criticizes the violence and cruelty of the Communist side. It is the Bolsheviks of Jewish origin who poke out the eyes of the icons and forcibly requisition and sell peasant property for personal profit.<sup>7</sup> Behind the Bolshevik front lines there are hordes of useless "panic commissars" ready to line their pockets and then run at the first sign of danger. The lines between ethical and unethical conduct, between civilized and uncivilized behaviour, are not as clear as a rigidly partisan approach might require. It is, indeed, the confusion of these zones that makes Irchan's work particularly interesting and, of course, made him a suspect figure to the Soviet authorities.

The complications of the ideological plot are intensified by the author's choice of literary forms. Irchan's reliance on impressionistic devices frequently works against the projection of a simple, unambiguous message. In fact, it often produces inconsistencies. He himself noted in his "Avtoportret" (Self-Portrait, 1927) that there was an opposition in his work between class obligations and personal feelings. The typical modernist stress on the introverted, the psychological life of individuals, the narrow but intensely lived time frame, the flow of impressions, and the divided and conflicted consciousness were all part of his technique. Irchan articulates this interest in self-consciousness by deploying devices such as stream of consciousness, interior monologue, *style indirecte libre*, portrayal of the divided self, and fragmentary composition.

When he chooses common people for his heroes and heroines or depicts a group experience, he is describing one collective individual—the development of a social psychology. Sometimes, as in his descriptions of soldiers in combat, this technique of characterization is analogous to the portrayal of the collective hero in Eisenstein's *Battleship Potemkin* or constructivist dramas of the 1920s. But impressionistic techniques are rather poor tools for didactic writing, which prefers the abstract and typical, eschewing the concrete and individual. Almost by definition, an impressionistic portrayal is limited and subjective, does not grasp the entire picture, and cannot, therefore, move towards easy and complete closure. Its organizing principle is, more often than not, the focus on the fluctuations in mood, often in a character who is not central to the political or historical events described. As he delves into individual psychology, the author's orthodox politics disintegrate.

"Avtoportret" captures the writer's own conflict between a sense of social responsibility and a self-exploratory urge. He admits that his consciousness has split. One persona requires him to write something that his public will recognize

---

7. *Tragediia pershoho travnia*, 78.



as socially significant in order to meet an editor's deadline. The other persona advises him to write about himself, to compose an individual portrait. "But then I shall be a futurist!" he declares. The role of futurism is identified here with self-promotion, self-indulgence, and egotism. His "futurist" alter ego, however, accuses him of cowardice and insists that only such self-examination will produce originality. The two egos co-exist. Together they succeed in composing a personal interview in which the individualist-subjectivist poses questions and the collectivist-rationalist responds. "Avtoportret" is an exploration of Irchan's personal dilemma. His prose does in fact demonstrate the presence of both personalities. This story is one of his most successful.<sup>8</sup>

The problem for Irchan lies not so much in the fact that this attention to psychology paralyzes the political energy of the individual as in the recognition that it becomes self-absorbing to the point of rendering the historical moment irrelevant. A typical setting for the impressionist exploration of the mind is to be found in the use of the *entr'acte*. This is usually a scene in which the hero has been cut off from normal existence because he is in hiding or because he has been forced into a period of detached reflection.<sup>9</sup> During these periods the hero's thoughts (Irchan invariably chooses a male protagonist) are often presented as a stream of consciousness or through *style indirecte libre*. His free-flowing, meditative, and detached observations drift into unexpected and seemingly irrelevant details and manifest a variegated consciousness that has to be brought back to "reality." The narrator reveals himself as primarily interested in the mingling of sense data as an end in itself. Most commonly these moments allow him to exploit two favourite devices of impressionism: the dream sequence and the hallucination.

A memorable moment of the *entr'acte* occurs in *V burianakh*. The hero is caught behind enemy lines and crawls into a thick hedge, where he hides for four days. The reader, like the hero, observes the war and the working of the character's own mind from this molelike perspective, in which the arrival of chickens seeking shade and the hoeing of a couple in a neighbouring field are

---

8. In "Pro sebe" (p. 442) the author notes that the piece was "honest" and that he received admiring letters from readers.

9. Vira Aheieva has written: "Time in the impressionist novella is often an episode of escape from society, from the habitual round of social and daily duties, tiresome traditions—a situation of temporary separation from almost all external relations. (A similar removal, dissociation from the social maelstrom, can be found in the novels of impressionists, even in one as voluminous as M. Proust's *A la recherche du temps perdu*.) The impressionists were interested not in the continuity of history, but the individual moment specially isolated from it" (Vira P. Aheieva, *Ukrainska impresionistychna proza* [Kyiv: Instytut literatury im. T. H. Shevchenka Natsionalnoi akademii nauk Ukrainy, 1994], 157).

the day's highlights. Hunger and delirium deform the hero's thoughts. A similar pattern occurs throughout Irchan's stories. The distorted perspective is often that of a character with limited understanding (as in *Karpatska nich* and "Asuar") or one who is at a distance and lacks familiarity with the details of the life being observed. The narrator in "Vudzhena ryba" views the old fort across the Red River, contemplating the fact that it is now a restaurant and place of upper-class amusement. In "Bila malpa" the disoriented narrator stands outside the house on Machray Avenue, from where he expresses his contempt for middle-class hypocrisy. These moments of reflection provide an opportunity for commentary on the history of native conquest in the first case, and on the false respectability of the Anglo-Saxon petit bourgeois in the second. However, typically, they also admit other "extraneous" material and are filtered through the confused haze of an unreliable consciousness, which is itself driven by jealousy, misunderstanding, or spleen.

The choice of simple, unsophisticated protagonists is limiting artistically. Firstly, Irchan restricts himself to portraying the milieu of the down-and-out labourer. The brief meeting with George Murphy and his wife in "Bila malpa" is an exception, but it fails to give a convincing portrayal of the two middle-class protagonists. We know nothing of the interior of the house on Machray or of the Murphys' milieu. The point of the story is the immigrant's disillusionment. Secondly, the limited consciousness of Irchan's protagonists and the unrelenting grimness of their fate leads to monotony. Unlike, for example, Upton Sinclair, with whom he was acquainted and corresponded and who influenced his portrayal of grim labour conditions,<sup>10</sup> Irchan does not describe immigrant leisure activities or the wider social life of the community. In each prose work we are given only the individual consciousness of a loner.

This becomes a greater flaw in a longer work, something the author senses when in *Karpatska nich* he appears to apologize for the limitations of his hero Matvii Shavala: "Matvii continued to live in far-off America, not knowing about anything. In truth he did not know America, even after living there for eight years. His world was small: the factory and the room. He was only interested in his work, in getting his pay, and chewed on his own pain without sharing it with anyone. He had not been to the city once because he had no reason to go."<sup>11</sup> This is a particularly narrow lens through which to view social life, and it is coupled with other drawbacks. There is little in the way of romantic interest: Matvii has no domestic obligations and almost no friends. He is as lost and emotionally isolated in Winnipeg as he was in the trenches during the First

---

10. See Mykhailo I. Kachaniuk, foreword to Irchan, *Na pivdorozi*, 13.

11. Irchan, *Karpatska nich*, 107.

World War. The same can be said of the autobiographical narrator of *V burianakh*.

The tension between the political imperative and the writer's desire to portray the conflicted individual consciousness surfaces powerfully when a character feels sympathy for the enemy. The hero of "Kniazhna" (The Princess, 1921), for example, admits his weakness—attraction to the opposite sex. We learn that beautiful aristocrats have always played a part in his fantasies; ever since he was a child he had listened to stories about princesses. In the incident described he resists the charms of a beautiful counter-revolutionary aristocrat who comes to him in the form of an apparition. In the end he shoots her. The hero, it is suggested, is trying to exorcise his attraction to the books and culture of the past. Upon seeing the art and lavish library in the palace where the revolutionary soldiers are billeted, he experiences a destructive urge: "We should dynamite all of it! Blow up the whole refined, sumptuous gentry culture! Tear down the expensive frescoes with our fingernails! They are not made with paint, but blood, the blood of millions. The wonderful carvings should be effaced with blood! The glistening floor washed in blood!"<sup>12</sup>

This passage has often been quoted. It has generally not been pointed out that Irchan's intention is ironic. It is a remarkably unconvincing manner of building "civilization" and one in which the narrator himself does not believe. Although he claims to understand the vandalizing "psychology of the masses," he clearly disagrees with it and feels a much more powerful attraction to literature and the "wonderful" art he sees in the palace. In this case the politically correct equation is again overturned: it is the masses who are destroying civilization, and even though it is the civilization of the rich, the narrator-hero, in spite of his bravado, is clearly disturbed. In later stories the author stressed the corrupt and unappealing nature of "bourgeois" culture, but in this early futurist piece the refined culture exercises a powerful attraction that the narrator struggles to overcome.

It is also clear from Irchan's portrayal of other acts against the landowners (*pany*) that his sympathies for the oppressed do not extend to condoning all acts of violence. The act of arson committed against the landowner's estate in "Zmovnyky" (Conspirators, 1923) is not a conscious political act and is opposed by the hardworking old peasant, Prokipchuk, who comments: "Even though it's the *pan's*, it's still a sin. It's someone's labour."<sup>13</sup> Prokipchuk, who opens and closes the story, presents a counter-position to that of the arsonists. The critique of blind violence is, perhaps, most clearly made in "Za krov," a story omitted

---

12. Irchan, *Na pivdorozi*, 91.

13. Irchan, *Proty smerty*, 38.

from later Soviet editions.<sup>14</sup> Here the “protest” against Polish landowners is organized by a boy who pathologically detests girls. The attempt to abduct the landowner’s little girl ends in a double drowning—hers and that of another boy-abductor who tries to save her at the last moment. The violence here is senseless, the product of an unreflecting hatred internalized by small children. The author’s sympathies lie with the gentry family, whose civilized existence has been tragically and pointlessly destroyed.

The pressure of Irchan’s political commitment weighed heavily on his later works, which, it is patently evident, were adapted to the Soviet line. His best passages remain the “impressionistic” renderings of individual consciousness. For this reason his early works, particularly the prose collection *Filmy revoliutsii* (Films of the Revolution, 1923) and *V burianakh*, are generally considered his most impressive achievement. They are full of the spontaneous flow of thought, feeling, and irreverent, sometimes frivolous and unexpected, ideas. In them the writer experiments with hallucinatory dream sequences, flashbacks, and sudden juxtapositions in a flow of creativity that was never again as untrammelled.<sup>15</sup> These early works still bear strong traces of the influence of Mykhailo Iatskiv, with whom Irchan was personally acquainted in the prerevolutionary years and whose symbolist prose he imitated,<sup>16</sup> and of the telegraphic style of the Ukrainian futurists, with whom he associated in 1921 and 1922.<sup>17</sup> These traces are evident in the impressionistic combat scenes in *Filmy revoliutsii* and *V burianakh* for which Irchan became famous.

The devices of flashback and hallucination also work to undermine any simple political message. Flashback allows Irchan to condense a decade or more into a narrow time frame in *Karpatska nich* and to capture a moment from the past in the stories “Prysmeryk mynuloho” (Twilights of the Past, 1921) and “Tse bulo tak davno” (It Was So Long Ago, 1922). Hallucination is used to describe an apparition in “Kniazhna.” The narrator’s interpretation of these events,

---

14. Originally published in Irchan, *Proty smerty*, 39–50, it was dropped from *Na pividorozi* and *Vybrani tvory*.

15. In his “Avtoportret” the author comments: “Many have said that my sketches and tales from the revolutionary period in Ukraine are the best things I wrote. I really wrote them in the maelstrom of the revolution. I wrote them because I was afraid that no one else would write about those small events, which took place before my eyes. Out of them was born a new life and a new word. We were all poets then, but our poetry was so powerful at that time that no one could ever convey its power and beauty” (Irchan, *Proty smerty*, 155).

16. See Vladen Vlasenko and Petro Kravchuk, *Myroslav Irchan: Zhyttia i tvorchist* (Kyiv: Radianskyi pysmennyk, 1960), 19; and Kachaniuk, 9. Irchan’s first collection, *Smikh Nirvany* (The Laughter of Nirvana, 1918), was influenced by Iatskiv’s symbolism.

17. See Kachaniuk, 10–11.



however, is questionable. The flashback might be a personal interpretation and editing of the past. In the last story he is not able to establish whether the apparition was "real" or a product of his imagination. In all cases where the drama of the doubting and confused mind is Irchan's interest, his prose takes on a richer texture and offers more possible readings and more complex interpretations.

This is also true of Irchan's impressionistic descriptions of nature. The picture of the midnight storm at the beginning of "Smert Asuara" is one of his finest passages. It is a prose poem of vivid, evocative imagery and considerable lyrical beauty. The eerie imagery of the stormy night sets the atmosphere and casts its reflection over the entire story. The ending, which links the storm's lightning to the execution of Asuar in the electric chair, is a not entirely successful attempt by the author to integrate the earlier imagery. The vivid details of the storm in the city capture the reader's imagination in a way that cannot be fully reconciled with the Irchan's didactic intent. The symbolism of a menacing natural phenomenon, by threatening to blindly sweep everything before it, particularly within the nighttime setting that he favoured, has a more metaphysical than political significance. The description of the night in "Taina nochi" (The Secret of the Night, 1922) and the approaching hurricane in "V poloni morskoi ordy" (Captive of the Sea Horde, 1928) are two further examples. Their meaning is ambiguous, but, partly as a result of this, a stronger aesthetic effect is created here than in the more polished stories over which the author laboured.<sup>18</sup> Here the power of nature escapes compartmentalization in the civilization/savagery dichotomy that underpins Irchan's ideology. It carries a disturbing, deeper message about the recurrence and strength of natural and, by implication, social disturbances.

Ukrainian modernism began as a protest of the free imagination against the stereotypes of populism and its pious calls to social activism and patriotism. A revelation of the complexities and contradictions of the inner life was one of its major contributions to literature and, more broadly, intellectual life. The analytical scalpel was put to various purposes. In Petro Karmansky's work it brought to the surface individual disgust with the pseudo-patriotism and hypocrisy of national leaders; in the writings of Lesia Ukrainka and Olha Kobylianska it revealed the discontentment with women's consciousness having been excluded from literature and history; and in Volodymyr Vynnychenko's prose the focus became the workings of "pathological" psyches. Irchan began as

---

18. In his second autobiography, "Pro sebe," Irchan explains that he studied the life of Alaskan natives and checked the details of his story assiduously. He reports that he even went to see a film four times because it had a short scene with an electric chair, an object he wished to describe in the story. See Irchan, *Vybrani tvory*, 2: 454.



an investigator of the inner voice of the oppressed individual from the masses. In the end, the ever more demanding strictures of the new social gospel to which he adhered hindered him from fully exploring the rich material he had unearthed.<sup>19</sup>

In the 1930s, after returning to the USSR, Irchan wrote reports of the successful collectivization of Soviet Ukraine and made favourable comparisons between Soviet and Canadian life.<sup>20</sup> He continued to hammer out the same message, but his prose was devoid both of the political honesty and the literary sophistication that had animated his earlier writings. Notably missing were precisely the devices of literary impressionism. Consequently, the later accounts fall remarkably flat. In the end Irchan's political orthodoxy did not prove enough to save him from arrest. In 1934 he was accused of terrorism and membership in a counter-revolutionary organization working on behalf of the Nazis. He was sentenced to ten years' imprisonment and sent to a concentration camp in the Solovets Islands. In 1937 he was tried a second time for "maintaining his counter-revolutionary activities" and executed.<sup>21</sup> These accusations were, of course, ridiculous. Irchan was a loyal Party man and an effective voice for the Communist cause. His "crimes" were an original manner of expression and a concern with the Ukrainian national identity.

---

19. Irchan looked to Western literature for spiritual enrichment in the same way that the above-mentioned writers did, but he lamented the fact that his social and political obligations prevented him from following modern trends more closely, declaring that "in many cases I have fallen behind the modern manner of writing" ("Avtoportret," 157). Karmansky summarizes the early modernist position in his *Ukrainska bohema: Z nahody trydtsiatlittia Molodoi muzy* (Lviv: Roman Kulchytsky, 1936), 114. For a recent study of the modernism of Lesia Ukrainka and Kobylanska as an opposition to "the patriarchal model of culture," see Solomea Pavlychko, "Modernism vs. Populism in Fin de Siècle Ukrainian Literature: A Case of Gender Conflict," in *Engendering Slavic Literatures*, ed. Pamela Chester and Sibelan Forrester (Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1996), 83–103.

20. See, for example, his "Kanadska Ukraina" and "Z prerii Kanady v stepy Ukrainy" (From the Prairies of Canada to the Steppes of Ukraine, 1930), repr. in his *Vybrani tvory*, 2: 335–62 and 363–430.

21. Irchan's arrest and sentencing was reported in a pro-Communist newspaper published in the United States by a Party member then visiting Ukraine. See Samitnyi [V. Rybak], "Kolektyvizatsiia i klasova borotba na seli," *Ukrainski shchodenni visty*, 16 October 1934; and Peter Krawchuk, *The Unforgettable Myroslav Irchan: Pages from a Valiant Life* (Edmonton: Kobzar, 1998), 65.

# Ielyzaveta Piskorska: A Rediscovered "Boichukist"

*Nelli Prystalenko*

Recent publications have shed new light on the early years of the Ukrainian State Academy of Arts—an institution formed in December 1917 after the collapse of the Russian Empire—and on the school of monumental art created by one of its founding professors, Mykhailo Boichuk (1882–1937).<sup>1</sup> The surviving work of the Kyiv artist Ielyzaveta Piskorska (1905–78) adds significantly to our knowledge of the Boichuk school. Unlike others from the cohort of outstanding women artists who came out of the school, namely, Oksana Pavlenko, Oksana Sakhnovska, and Sofiia Nalepinska-Boichuk, Piskorska has scarcely figured in art histories. The reason lies partly in the fact that her association with Boichuk prevented her from working as a professional artist and partly in the fact that she destroyed many of her works. Nonetheless, those works from the 1920s that have survived provide rare insights into the academy's activities and pedagogical practice.<sup>2</sup>

Piskorska was born on 6 October 1905 in Nizhyn, now in Chernihiv oblast. Her father was Volodymyr Piskorsky, a professor of world history at Kazan University and later Kyiv University and one of the founders of Hispanic studies in Russia and Ukraine. In 1910, when she was six years old, her father was killed in a railway accident at the age of forty-three. Her mother, Zinaida (née Andriienko), worked as a librarian at Kyiv University. Librarianship was also the profession that her two older sisters, Nina and Olena, took up upon completion

---

1. See in particular O. Ripko and N. M. Prystalenko, *Boichuk i Boichukisty: Boichukism* (Lviv: Lvivska kartynna galereia, 1991). Serhii Bilokin has prepared a monograph in Ukrainian on the painter.

2. Fragments of her autobiography have been published. See Ie. V. Piskorska, "Navchaiuchys, ia perezhyla kilka reorhanizatsii vuzu," in *Ukrainska akademiia mystetstva: Doslidnytski ta nauково-metodychni pratsi*, issue 1 (Kyiv, 1994), 107–9; and Ihor Dychenko, "Nezhasne svitlo liudianosti," *Radianska osvita*, 28 January 1981. The full text of her autobiography, with a commentary by her daughter Olena Novikova, is in my possession.

of their post-secondary education. After the 1917 revolution, although all three of them continued to work, the family suffered greatly from hunger and cold. More importantly, they were psychologically unprepared for the social cataclysm that followed the Bolshevik revolution and found themselves unable to cope with the new circumstances.

It was the young Ielyzaveta's resourcefulness and determination that enabled them to deal with the crisis; notwithstanding her typical *intelligentsia* education, she moved quickly and decisively to rescue the family. In her memoirs she recalled:

I was around sixteen at the time. I witnessed the turbulent years of the civil war and all that went with it. Sometimes I would carry a sack barefoot to the villages in order to exchange salt for potatoes, because there was enough salt in the city but no bread or potatoes. The rationing allowed for 200 grams of bread made from peas per person. And we were terribly hungry! I would sometimes ride the buffers of trains and sometimes on the roof of the wagons. We would eat like sparrows on a reed. People would say: "Here come the speculators ..." What kind of speculators were we! I soon had enough of this infamous existence and decided to become a teacher.<sup>3</sup>

Although she had completed only the gymnasium and technical school, she sensed within herself a talent for teaching and decided to apply for a job to the Department of Education. Piskorska succeeded in obtaining a position in a school on the Dnieper's Left Bank in the settlement of Mykilska.

Before completing university, her older brother Kostiantyn, later a lawyer, had studied in the Ukrainian State Academy of Arts with Heorhii Narbut in 1918. After Narbut's death in the following year, he began teaching language, mathematics, and art history in the village of Sovky on the outskirts of Kyiv. Under his guidance his students published a newspaper and organized a drama group and an art group. Ielyzaveta frequently visited her brother and the school. She exhibited remarkable talents in a variety of subjects. As a child she was known for her ability to calculate enormous sums in her head and to imagine letters and words in colour. In the 1920s she was active in a famous Kyiv choir, wrote poetry, and corresponded for a time with Pavlo Tychyna. On her visits to Sovky she helped her brother to decorate the school and performed other tasks. Under his influence she also began to develop a serious interest in art. Kostiantyn's death in 1922 from typhoid at the age of thirty-four was a painful blow to her and the entire family.

The artist Vasyl Chaliienko, a friend of her brother and a school inspector for Kyiv and the outlying region, was also a frequent visitor at Sovky. It was on his recommendation that she enrolled in the Academy of Arts. Here she studied for

---

3. Piskorska's autobiography, 2.

a short time with Fedir Krychevsky and Vadym Meller. She also attended the academy's preparatory courses taught by Serhii Kolos, who was an adherent of the Boichuk school; it was there that she became acquainted for the first time with Boichuk's formal manner. In 1922 the academy was reformed under the Bolshevik administration and renamed the Kyiv Institute of Plastic Arts. Piskorska continued to study there with Vasyl Krychevsky, Mykhailo Boichuk, and Sofiia Nalepinska-Boichuk. Not all went smoothly, and her studies were interrupted when she was expelled because of her father's profession under the old regime. It was also alleged (on the basis of his having published a book dealing with the laws concerning serfdom in Catalonia in the Middle Ages) that he had been a serf owner. In fact, Piskorsky was the only professor at the Nizhyn Historical-Philological Institute to support the student demonstrations in 1905, and later he had worked for the release of imprisoned political prisoners.

By the time Piskorska was able to complete her studies at the institute's printing faculty in 1930, the school was called the Kyiv State Art Institute. Her delayed graduation probably saved her from further persecution, but her association with the so-called Boichukists was enough to curtail her career as an artist. The first wave of arrests under Stalin's regime were then engulfing Ukraine. Having suffered persecution and witnessed at first hand the attacks on her teacher Boichuk and his most prominent students, Vasyl Sedliar and Ivan Padalka, which had begun in earnest in 1927 and continued to gather force in subsequent years, Piskorska was well aware that as a "Boichukist" she would be prevented from working professionally. Therefore she took a job teaching painting in the same school where she had already taught while still a student. Several years later, in 1936, the Palace of Pioneers was created and Piskorska was hired to head the art studio there. She held this position until her retirement thirty-two years later.

Piskorska proved an excellent instructor; in a long and distinguished career she trained numerous painters, sculptors, architects, and educators. For a time she also served as a senior assistant in the Ukrainian Pedagogical Institute of the Academy of Sciences of the Ukrainian SSR. A resourceful woman, she overcame many personal tragedies and difficulties: difficult illnesses and deaths in the family; evacuation to the East in the Second World War, during which she and her children almost died of hunger; and nursing and caring for her son after he was badly wounded and was bedridden for three years.

Piskorska's connection with the important developments in Ukrainian art of the 1920s and 1930s was rediscovered only in 1991, when her work "In the Pasture" was posthumously displayed at an exhibition entitled "Boichuk and the Boichukists: Boichukism" mounted at the National Art Museum in Kyiv. Not



many of Piskorska's works from that period have survived.<sup>4</sup> Those paintings, sketches, and graphics that remain and are now preserved in the above museum testify to the influence of the Boichuk school on her work. Among them are the drawing "Crucifixion" (ca. 1922; figure 1) and sketches of two horses that appear to be copied from an early Renaissance work (1922; figure 2). These works are important because they are among the few surviving examples of analytical drawing, a specialized study of the elements of composition that Boichuk assigned his first- and second-year students. While copying the work, Piskorska was instructed to study the nature of the expressive line, its character, and rhythm in order to employ the knowledge acquired in composing her later work "In the Pasture." This watercolour drawing exhibits an unhurried rhythm of flowing lines and subtle hues of green, azure, and yellow conveying a sense of harmony between nature and the village worker without recourse to strong effects.

Several nature sketches that Piskorska made during this time—also as assignments in Boichuk's studio—demonstrate the school's avoidance of secondary detail in favour of an expressive primary line. In this they resemble surviving sketches made by other Boichukists such as Serhii Kolos, Hryhorii Pustovit, Oleksander Kravchenko, and Vira Bura. Among Piskorska's works are three sketches for a portrait of a youth (probably the artist Ivan Tryhub, her husband). Two are in the early stages of development. The first captures the artist's intention of portraying a contemporary by working from early Egyptian rules of form-creation; it exhibits a bold geometrical, simplified treatment of characteristic facial features. The second is a drawing of a man's head resting in the man's hands. It represents Piskorska's attempt to portray a cartoonlike image of an individual who is observant, somewhat spiteful, but rather helpless. These works from her sketchbook demonstrate Boichuk's belief in the importance of assimilating the international artistic heritage, beginning with the most ancient works. His own lectures and his students' recollections attest to this fact.<sup>5</sup>

Boichuk's pedagogical system paid special attention to the "higher mathematics" of art—the rhythmic harmonization of compositional elements. A work that appears to have been prepared as a book cover attests to Piskorska's grasp of this difficult science. It is an ornamental composition in which an unusual interpretation of the Biblical subject, "The Meeting of Maria and Elizabeth," plays the chief role (figure 3). The figures of the two women facing one another are

---

4. Her daughter reports that Piskorska destroyed many works with which she was dissatisfied, but kept those early student works of which she was fondest. See Piskorska's autobiography, 25.

5. See "Mykhailo Boichuk's Lectures on Monumental Art," *Journal of Ukrainian Studies* 19, no. 2 (Summer 1994): 61–6.





Piskorska and her family. Left to right: her sister Nina, ?, her mother Zinaida, Ielyzaveta, and her brother Kostiantyn.

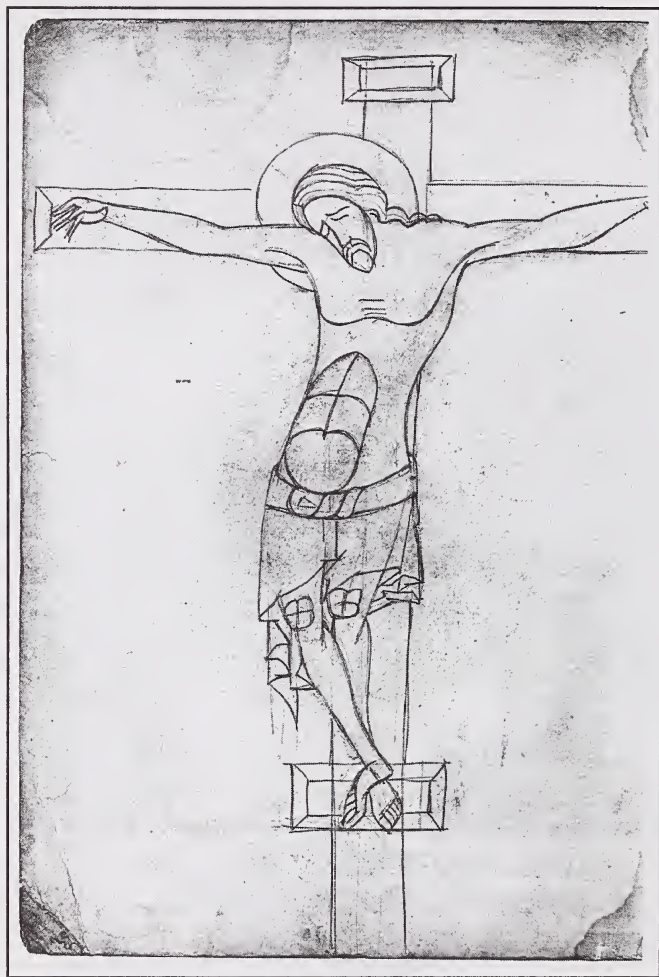


FIGURE 1

Ielyzaveta Piskorska, sketch done while studying with Mykhailo Boichuk.  
National Art Museum of Ukraine, Kyiv.



FIGURE 2

Ielyzaveta Piskorska, *A Pair of Horses* (1922). Pencil on paper.  
National Art Museum of Ukraine, Kyiv.



FIGURE 3

Ielyzaveta Piskorska, flyleaf. National Art Museum of Ukraine, Kyiv.



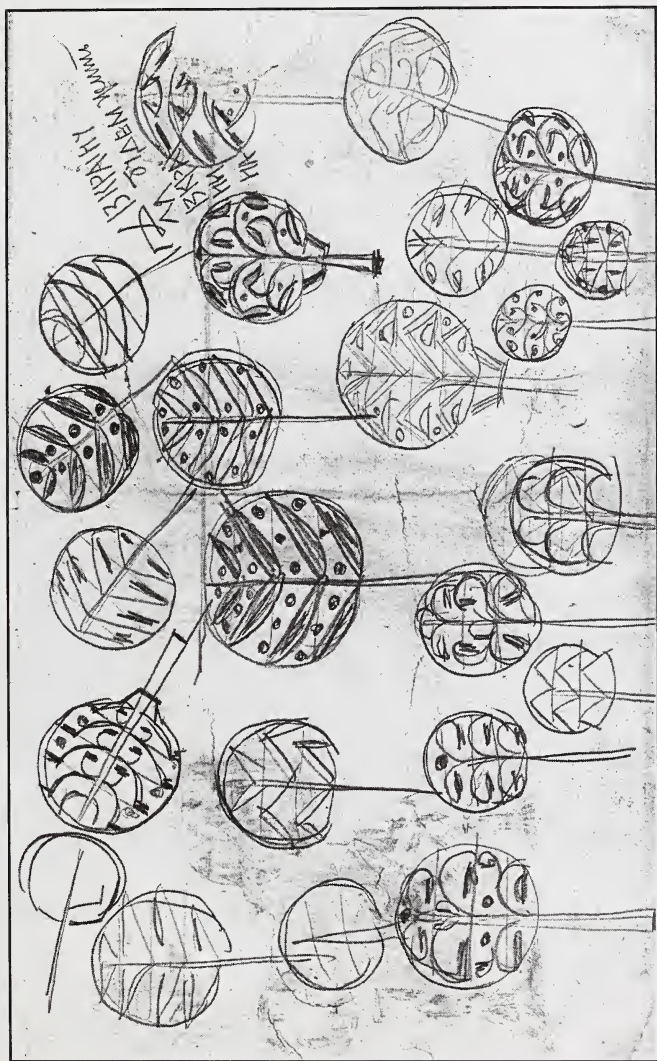


FIGURE 4  
Ielyzaveta Piskorska, ornaments (early 1920s). Pencil on paper.





FIGURE 5

Ielyzaveta Piskorska, project for an interior. Pencil on paper.



FIGURE 6  
Ielyzaveta Piskorska, *Peasant Music* (early 1920s), Pencil on paper.



FIGURE 7

Ielyzaveta Piskorska, flyleaf. National Art Museum of Ukraine, Kyiv.

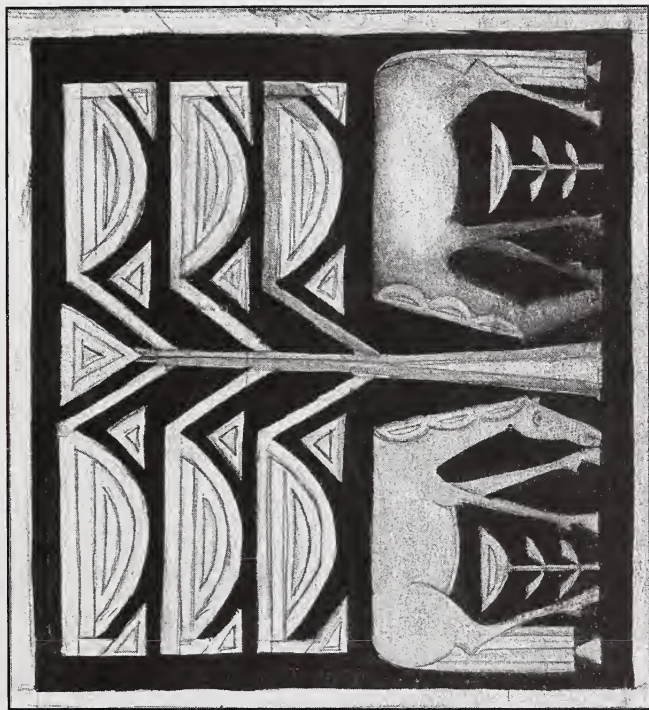


FIGURE 8

Ielyzaveta Piskorska, kilim design (early 1920s). Watercolour and pencil on paper. National Art Museum of Ukraine, Kyiv.





**С**онце сховалось за хмарами. Вони розтяглися немов крила величезного птаха і тихо сунули на північ, залишаючи тонесеньке пір'я, хаотично розкидане на ясній блакиті. Шелестіло листя на разхристаних деревах і чекало ясного золотистого ніжного проміння. Київ стояв як зачарований красун, п'яний весняним повітрям і чекав сонця. Молодий вітер разносив свавольно і сміло сивий дим який буйно виділяв з димарів Київських фабрик. Гучно разносився цокот машин в ясному весняному повітрі, який виділяв з багатих заводів Подолу. І здавалось, що Київ стогнав, кричав протягаючи чорні димари і шукаючи сонця і ясної весняної ласки. І тягне на волю, в степи, де сміло гуляє вітер, туди де розкинулися безкінечні простори, туди де відпочине серце і око

FIGURE 9

Ielyzaveta Piskorska, book illustration.

National Art Museum of Ukraine, Kyiv.





FIGURE 10

Ielyzaveta Piskorska, illustrations to Oksana Steshenko's *Chai*. Lithographs.



Ielyzaveta Piskorska, *The Healing Paper*. Pencil on paper.

simplified into contours and geometrical shapes. Coming together, the lines form one continuous pattern in which the blue and brown colours of the women's clothing alternate with the black of Maria's hair. The entire piece produces a powerful sense of movement.

In other works Piskorska reveals the influence of Vasyl Krychevsky. Several pages are densely covered with countless ornamental improvisations (e.g., figure 4). They are, in fact, notes from Krychevsky's lectures on the composition of the ornament. The sketches of a Ukrainian interior, with a stove and bench under the window, a sideboard, a covered table, and kilims on the wall and floor constitute an attempt at interior design (figure 5). There are also many drawings of trees with similarly rounded tops, in which various floral ornaments are visible. These same patterned trees figure in another sketch, an elegiac, pastoral composition in the "Boichukist" manner (figure 6). It depicts a man playing a bandura, boys playing flutes, and a sorrowful girl listening to them against a background of low hills and trees with the same ornamental branches.

One finished ornamental composition by Piskorska has been preserved (figure 7). It is composed of cleverly interlaced undulating lines that dissect the page vertically and horizontally; within these lines are contained stylized representations of birds and plants. Painted in tempera, it is notable for its use of colour. Only three colours are used: grey for the background, azure for the birds, and sepia for the plants, but the page produces a sumptuous impression. The browns in this colour combination have the appearance of burnished gold or ancient bronzes, and are set off against a vibrant azure. The artist was tapping into the secrets of anonymous Ukrainian folk artists to which she may have been guided through studying the graphic art of Narbut and of her brother. The high degree of stylization in the composition corresponds to the technology used for preparing woodcuts for textile printing; the background colour also conforms to that of homemade linen. Most probably the work was conceived as part of a book decoration in the style of a folk textile print.

In Krychevsky's studio students used a kilim-making loom to develop projects based on their own sketches. Until now our conception of the earliest examples of such work had been based on the Serhii Kolos's well-known small tapestry entitled "The Branch" (1922). Now we are able to supplement this evidence with Piskorska's small kilim "The Bird," which was most likely produced in Krychevsky's studio in the early 1920s. The kilim is important for the study of Krychevsky's pedagogical method and, more generally, for an understanding of the development of twentieth-century Ukrainian decorative art. Piskorska made it on a simple peasant loom. Its aim was to convey a harmony of subdued tones and a limited number of colours, in which only a delicate bright orange accent stands out. The colour scheme, the rhythmic harmonization of compositional elements, and the nature of the line that gives dynamism to the bird's silhouette are all elements derived from folk kilim-making. This unassuming work reflects

Piskorska's brief but happy period of creative freedom and exploration as a student at the academy.

A kilim sketch by Piskorska is equally interesting (figure 8). Two horses are depicted as stylized geometrical forms that resemble wood carving and conform to the technical requirements of kilim production. The sketch is characterized by a typically Ukrainian lyricism. At the same time it may be considered representative of the period, when the countryside was recovering from the revolution and ensuing war and collectivization and industrialization had not yet taken their toll.

While studying at the printing faculty in the mid-1920s, Piskorska mastered various techniques of graphic art that were taught there. Engraving on wood was covered in the first year, and Piskorska mastered the technique by producing still lifes. Her own "Still Life with a Woven Basket and Pot" is characterized by a simplified form and strong black-and-white contrasts. A second study piece was a designed book, complete with illustrations and a typeface. She composed a short story about Kyiv, devised the printed form of the text, and then transferred the drawing to the lithographic plate (figure 9). When printed onto paper, the text was accompanied by illustrations. Everything in these illustrations—the buildings, trees, sky, and earth—was based on strong black-and-white contrasts suggesting a struggle of sunshine with darkness.

Piskorska's graduation assignment was the design and preparation of Oksana Steshenko's *Chai*, a children's book. Her illustrations ran parallel to the story in verse of a Chinese family that grows, harvests, and prepares tea leaves (figure 10). The drawings are rather detailed in places, probably in order to capture a child's interest. At the same time, however, they are quite in tune with the "Boichukist" understanding of composition, which stressed the generalized form, active line, and expressive silhouette. Besides producing the cover and the illustrations executed in ink and watercolour, she also printed out the final page proofs. This work demonstrates Piskorska's skill not only as a book designer and illustrator but also as a print artist.

*Translated by Myroslav Shkandrij*

# Demythifying a Universal Hero: Spyrydon Cherkasenko's Vision of Don Juan

*Robert Karpiak*

Although the myth of Don Juan may not have had as strong an impact on the literature of Ukraine as it had on the literatures of Western European countries, it is noteworthy that at least two major works of drama in the Ukrainian language have been directly inspired by the famous legend of the Spanish seducer. In 1912 Lesia Ukrainka (1871–1913) completed her play *Kaminnyi hospodar* (The Stone Host), to be followed about fifteen years later by a reprise of the universal hero in a “dramatic novel” by Spyrydon Cherkasenko (1876–1940). Although it is undeniably overshadowed by the artistic pre-eminence of Lesia Ukrainka’s masterpiece, Cherkasenko’s *Espanskyi kabaliero Don Khuan i Rozita* (The Spanish Caballero Don Juan and Rosita),<sup>1</sup> written in Uzhhorod in 1928, merits attention not only as an important Ukrainian variation on one of the world’s great literary themes, but also as an interpretation consonant with the postmodernist decline of Don Juan from the stature of a Promethean rebel to that of a contemptible libertine. Although the variance in the plots of these two plays is substantial, it is essentially the difference between the authorial conception of Don Juan as the “knight of freedom” in *Kaminnyi hospodar* and the “cynical seducer” in *Don Khuan i Rozita* that constitutes the fundamental distinction between the Ukrainian versions, ultimately leading to the degradation of the archetype.

From the very beginnings of its existence in dramatic literature the myth of Don Juan established itself as a tragedy of retribution. *No hay deuda que no se pague*—no debt shall remain unpaid—is not only the title of one of the earliest Spanish versions of the legend, but also the stern warning proclaimed from the

---

1. Spyrydon Cherkasenko, *Espanskyi kabaliero Don Khuan i Rozita* (Lviv: Novi shliakhy, 1930). Henceforth the title will be abbreviated to *Don Khuan i Rozita*. All quotations are taken from this edition.



theatre stage of Don Juan dramaturgy in every age and literary movement. Immorality, murder, sacrilege, and anarchism are offences that must be punished on earth, in purgatory, or in hell. Throughout the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries Don Juan's Nemesis was almost invariably the Avenging Statue, which, representing divine justice, executed retribution in the name of slain fathers and violated daughters, of outraged husbands and abandoned wives. And yet, despite the fact that the main sins of Don Juan were crimes against his fellow man, more so than blasphemous acts against God, the morality and theatrical tastes of the classical age maintained that nothing less than the powers of heaven could put an end to a "larger-than-life" protagonist. The victims of Don Juan's excesses would have to await the advent of a less tradition-oriented epoch before playwrights would yield to them the right to requital.

However, the seeds of human initiative in the theme of retribution in Don Juan literature were already sown in Tirso de Molina's *El Burlador de Sevilla y convidado de piedra* (ca. 1618). In this, the earliest of the Don Juan dramas, the seduced and abandoned fisher-girl Tisbea, for all her social unimportance and physical helplessness, is resolved to seek revenge in the presence of the king himself.<sup>2</sup> Subsequently, in Mozart and Da Ponte's operatic masterpiece *Don Giovanni* (1787), Elvira swears to "tear out the heart" of her unfaithful lover.<sup>3</sup> Similarly, Donna Anna, epitomizing the plight of the dishonoured and orphaned daughter, will know no rest until the blood of her father is avenged. Still, despite their unremitting and frantic efforts, not one of these unfortunate victims is destined to savour the taste of personal triumph, for it is once again the stone Commander who arrives to fulfill his divine commission.

Indeed, the "democratization" of Don Juan's punishment did not manifest itself until the theme had advanced into the period of romanticism and, in particular, when it encountered the influence of positivistic views. However, the progression of the theme of a woman's outrage and revenge is already discernible in Alexandre Dumas's play *Don Juan de Marana* (1836).<sup>4</sup> In contrast to the hysterical Tisbea and the grieving heroines of *Don Giovanni*, we discover in Dumas's Inès the prototype of the calculating female fully prepared to commit cold-blooded murder in order to avenge her dishonour. Having coerced him to kill Don Sandoval, the lover who betrayed her, Inès offers Don Juan a goblet of poisoned wine. Ironically, it is she who becomes the victim of her own scheme:

2. Tirso de Molina, "El Burlador de Sevilla y convidado de piedra," in *Don Juan y su evolución dramática*, vol. 1, ed. Arcadio Baquero (Madrid: Editora Nacional, 1966), 224.

3. W. A. Mozart, *Don Giovanni* (New York: Dover Publications, 1964), 96.

4. Alexandre Dumas, "Don Juan de Marana ou la chute d'un ange," in *Théâtre complet de Alexandre Dumas*, vol. 5 (Paris: Michel Lévy Frères, 1876), 1-100.

she dies while the astute Don Juan, familiar with the wiles of women, mockingly refuses to drink the deadly potion.

The motif of administering poison to Don Juan's drink recurs in Sigismund Wiese's drama *Don Juan* (1840), but this time he does not escape its pernicious effect.<sup>5</sup> Alexandra, seduced and abandoned by Don Juan and driven to madness by her despair, succeeds in murdering her tormentor together with his new mistress. A similar climax concludes Braun von Braunthal's drama *Don Juan* (1842).<sup>6</sup> The young Rosa is seduced by Don Juan in the very cemetery where her fiancé lies buried. She too is forsaken shortly thereafter, but fate ordains another crossing of their paths. Several years later Don Juan is granted a rendezvous with the mistress of a grandee. She offers him wine and then entices him to follow her to the cemetery where two freshly dug graves await them. The woman is none other than Rosa and the wine they shared was envenomed.

The poisoned goblet is but one of several stratagems to which the victims of Don Juan resort in their bid to avenge an offence. Later, with the appearance of the desperate, volatile women typical of the post-Romantic versions, the subtlety of the poisoned drink gives way to the deliberate flash attack with a weapon. For example, in Armand Hayem's drama *Don Juan d'Armana* (1886), the betrayed Sahèle returns to plunge a dagger into Don Juan's heart and then into her own.<sup>7</sup> Similarly, in Oskar Schmitz's drama *Don Juan und die Kurtisane* (1914) Miraflores vows that if she is not to possess Don Juan, then no other woman shall. To assure herself of this, she, with calculated sang-froid, dispatches her inconstant lover with her stiletto.<sup>8</sup>

The theme of a virtuous woman's vengeance on a perfidious lover is precisely the basis of Cherkasenko's *Don Khuan i Rozita*, a work that occupies a prominent place among those versions whose intent is to impugn the qualities of courage, rebellion, demonic fatalism, and individualism inherent in the donjuanesque character. It thus continues the realist reaction against the Romantic idealization of the archetype and seeks to topple Don Juan from his position of a tragic hero and the world's greatest lover. Like George Bernard Shaw's John Tanner in *Man and Superman*, conceived thirty years before *Don Khuan i Rozita*, and Max Frisch's *Don Juan; oder Die Liebe zur Geometrie*, written some thirty years after, Cherkasenko's Don Juan is clearly a misogynist.

5. Georges Gendarme de Béville, *La Légende de Don Juan*, vol. 2 (Paris: Librairie Hachette, 1929), 99–102.

6. Ibid., 102–5.

7. Ibid., 179–82.

8. Martin Nozick, "The Don Juan Theme in the Twentieth Century," Ph.D. diss. (Columbia University, 1953), 214–15.

As in many a Don Juan play, the plot of *Don Khuan i Rozita* revolves around the hero's last amorous adventure. As part 1, act 1 initiates the action of the drama, we encounter a Don Juan who has grown weary of the haughty and superficial ladies of the Spanish court. Seeking relief from his boredom in a royal hunt near the banks of the Guadalquivir, Don Juan encounters and is instantly captivated by the youth and natural beauty of Rosita, daughter of the poor fisherman Pablo, a Christianized Moor. How delightfully different, he muses, is this raven-haired, almond-eyed "child of nature" from the pale, pomaded noblewomen of Madrid! And yet the apparent innocence and candour of Rosita are but a mask disguising a penchant for evil. "I truly do not know," he confesses, "what it is that she embodies more—sincerity and innocence, or savage, primeval malice."<sup>9</sup> Rosita is attracted by Don Juan's masculine beauty, but she remains effect of her resistance to his advances is only to intensify his desire and obsession with the peasant girl.

As act 2 opens, Don Juan has totally ignored his many mistresses at the court since his meeting with Rosita. So contemptuous is he of their complaints of neglect that he plays a cruel trick by inviting them to a rendezvous with him—all at the same time. The women, having recognized each other as unfaithful wives and duped rivals for Don Juan's attention, scatter in shame, cursing their perfidious lover. Not to be mocked in this way, however, is Donna Anna, the widow of the Commander de Bobadilla, whom Don Juan has killed in a duel. He dare not cast her aside like the others, she warns him, for their union was consummated by the blood of her husband: "It is not to be mocked by you that I, stepping over the dead body of my esteemed and noble husband, threw myself into the arms of you, his murderer."<sup>10</sup>

The Commander's death was achieved in order to clear the way for the marriage of Don Juan and Donna Anna, but now his love has gone the way of all his former paramours. He claims to have loved her, but for Don Juan true love is but an illusion, and when the cup of passion is drained, nothing is left.

9. О мила дівчино ... Дитя природи ...  
Чарівне, хоч лукаве, сотворіння!  
І вже не знаю я, чого в ній більше —  
Безпосередности і простоти.  
Чи дикого, природного лукавства?... (р. 20)
10. Хуане, стережись ... Чи ти забув,  
Що нас звязала кров?... Я не на те  
Тобі в обійми кинулась одважно,  
Переступивши через труп свого  
Достойного й значного чоловіка  
Щоб ти, його убійник, жартував.  
Щоб грішним грався ти моїм коханням! (р. 38)

"Constancy is my enemy," he says, "it is the grave of love." Spurned and humiliated by Don Juan's preference for Rosita, whom she calls "that savage with the goats," Donna Anna swears vengeance.

Act 3 advances the action to the *Casa Santa* of Seville, where the Holy Tribunal is in session. The Inquisitor deplores the expense of the daily burning of heretics—destitute Moriscos and shabby "witches." It is high time, he says, that an apostate with lands and wealth be brought to the auto-da-fé. It is as if Fra Bartolomeo's prayers are answered by the arrival of Donna Anna, who has come to denounce Rosita as a witch. Upon learning that the nobleman whom Rosita has "bewitched" is none other than Don Juan, the Marquis de Tenorio, the Inquisitor assures Donna Anna of his full co-operation. This will be a double prize for the Inquisition: a sorceress for the stake and a grandee's treasure for the coffers.

By the time that act 4 begins, Don Juan's persistent courtship of Rosita has brought him to the brink of success. Before surrendering to him completely, however, she imposes a condition on her love: Don Juan must swear an oath of constancy and fidelity—on his very life. Her love must never know a past:

В "було" нема життя для мене.  
Для мене "єсть" — з тобою, а без тебе ...  
"Було" я й миті не переживу,  
Але ... й тобі не дам його зазнати!...  
Нового "єсть" не буде по мені ... (p. 61)

Never before has a woman spoken to Don Juan in this manner. But the threat implied by Rosita's words serves only to increase his desire, and he swears the fatal oath. At that moment Don Juan's servant Catalion enters to inform his master that the Tenorio castle is under siege by the Inquisition. No sooner do they ride off to Madrid to seek intervention from the king than three masked figures in black capes rush out of the woods and abduct the frantically struggling Rosita.

At the opening of part 2, act 1 Don Juan has come to the Tavern of the Three Cats—a refuge of bandits, prostitutes, and vagabonds—in order to engage a band of desperados to help him liberate Rosita from the Inquisition. Coincidentally, Paquita, a *fille de joie* and a former lover of Don Juan, devises a plan to abduct Fra Bartolomeo as a hostage to be exchanged for the release of Rosita. As Don Juan waits in the tavern, his attention is captured by the virginal beauty and timidity of the innkeeper's daughter, Laura. With Rosita now banished from his thoughts, he musters all of his charm and guile for a seductive attack on the barmaid, only to be interrupted by the return of Paquita's party with the bound and blindfolded Inquisitor.

Act 2 returns the spectator to the *Casa Santa*, where Rosita now stands before the Holy Tribunal as an accused witch. Like a cornered tigress, her dark eyes flashing hatred and contempt, she defies her tormentors. As she is about to be

placed on the rack, a bandit from the Three Cats bursts in and hands the procurator a letter from Fra Bartolomeo ordering Rosita's immediate release.

Rosita is now liberated, and in act 3 she is brought to the tavern, where Don Juan waits. But her joy at being reunited with her lover is short-lived. Rosita's instincts tell her that something is dreadfully wrong, and one comprehending glance at Laura reveals everything. The dreaded realization that her love has receded into the "past" descends upon her, and it takes all of Don Juan's eloquence to alleviate her suspicions temporarily.

In order to pursue his new passion, the nubile Laura, more conveniently, Don Juan has sent Rosita to his castle in Cadiz. But several weeks have passed since his promise to join her, and despite the danger of remaining in Seville—he has had to kill three would-be assassins sent by the Inquisition—Don Juan still enjoys the favours of the innkeeper's daughter. In the concluding fourth act a servant arrives from Cadiz to report that Rosita has disappeared and is feared drowned in the sea. Initial pity turns to cold contempt for such "foolishness." Don Juan dislikes such clumsy dénouements to his love affairs. On the other hand, it is time to put these opportunistic peasant girls and barmaids in their place. "Did she really imagine that I would marry her? Now there would be a quaint couple," he scoffs, "a grandee of the court and a wench out of the woods, the daughter of a Morisco fisherman to boot."<sup>11</sup>

No sooner does Don Juan decide to depart for Madrid than Donna Anna arrives to inform him of her forthcoming marriage. Her parting declaration of love rekindles for a moment the old passion he once felt for her. As they seal a pledge to resume their clandestine relationship in Madrid with an ardent kiss, a terror-stricken Catalion rushes in crying: "It's the witch! She is coming!" Indeed, it is Rosita who enters like a revenant from beyond the grave. Startled, Don Juan draws back, sensing the grim purpose of her return. With vain arguments he rationalizes and excuses the breach of that oath of fidelity he once made upon his very life. His words are cut short as a stiletto flashes in Rosita's hand and plunges into his heart. Futile cries for help are answered only by ironic contempt and revulsion:

О, ні, рятунок вже не сподівайся,  
Високородний гранде: добре цілить  
Розіта й слів додержує своїх!  
Заприсяглась і я полинати разом

---

11. Гадала,  
Що шлюб, чи що, візьму я з нею?... От би  
Була цікава пара: гранд двірський  
І з лісу дівка ... ще й дочка мориска.  
Рибалки!... Бракувало ще цього!... (p. 117)



У небуття, але ... у товаристві  
Такому ... гидко ... (p. 123)

As Rosita rushes out, Donna Anna collapses upon Don Juan's corpse.

The unheroic end of Don Juan in Cherkasenko's drama is highly representative of the author's view of the theme and the hero, views that he expresses in his preface to *Don Khuan i Rozita*. In this auto-commentary the writer proclaims his profound disagreement with those of his precursors who "perceived an awesome philosophical and mystical depth" in what is nothing more than a "simple, unpretentious folk legend." He similarly rejects out of hand the theory contending that the theme of Don Juan purports to resolve the "so-called 'problem of the sexes.'" Don Juan, in Cherkasenko's estimation, is simply "an impudent and cynical voluptuary" who receives too great an honour by the insinuation that his punishment was in any way supernatural or miraculous:

... що ж до чудесного покарання безличного й цинічного зальотника камінною подобою Командора, то це, на думку автора, звичайний народній забобон ... і гріхи не тільки легендарного, а й усіх мільйонів інших донжуанів, коли карається часом, то не небом, а завжди далеко природніш і тому вульгарніш; і що в ділі цинічних зальотів жадною філософією, містикою, демонізмом, чи якоюсь "проблемою" взагалі й не пахне.<sup>12</sup>

With this intent in mind, the author deliberately divests his version of all "heavy philosophical and mystical artillery" and attempts to substitute in its place the qualities demanded by the contemporary theatre: staginess, lightness, excitement, dynamism, and "a modicum of healthy morality." The result, as might be expected, is the "debunking" of a universal myth. The hero, who for centuries had incarnated not only the principle of sensuality but also of courage and revolt, is reduced here to the level of a petty scoundrel with the complexes of a wilful juvenile. Gone indeed is any suggestion of the diabolical fatalism and mystique of the Romantic Don Juan. Gone also is the elemental charisma of the classic Spanish *burlador*. The success of the romantic intrigues of Cherkasenko's Don Juan is attributable to nothing more than his handsome features, wealth, and social status. Before she dispatches him, Rosita accuses Don Juan of having "violated" her with his beauty. "Destiny gave you an excess of it," she avers, "and therefore you have never encountered resistance from a woman." But there is nothing new in this revelation; a prostituted physical beauty and a gift of eloquence have been a feature of the donjuanesque personality since Tirso's Tisbea was swept away by the "most handsome of men." Even the limited perspicacity of Don Juan's servant, the bumbling, dull-witted Catalion, is sufficient to divine the secret behind his master's success as a seducer: "They

12. Cherkasenko, "Zamist peredmovy," n.p.

swarm around him like bees round a hive ... and how does he seduce them? With honeyed phrases. No matter if she's a noblewoman or a peasant lass, she'll melt from them like a tallow candle from the flame."<sup>13</sup>

The eloquence of Don Juan is invariably the eloquence of cultivated insincerity and calculated falsehood. In contrast to his precursors of the Romantic age, who were themselves transported by the inspiration and poetry of their words and no less deceived by them than were their victims, the hero of *Don Khuan i Rozita* is a cunning and compulsive hypocrite. In order to seduce Rosita Don Juan pledges on his life to remain faithful to her, a vow that he has not the least intention of honouring: "If there be craft or cunning deceit in my words, then may my life be cut off at the very moment I betray them!"<sup>14</sup>

The swearing of this perjurious oath proposes itself as a motif analogous to Don Juan's invitation to the Statue in the traditional versions. They are both acts of desecration of something sacred, and the punishment of Don Juan, whether by natural or supernatural agents, stems directly from the commission of this act. In both instances the hero mockingly brings destruction down on his head.

As in several anterior versions, we find the hero of Cherkasenko's drama challenged by a woman of strong character and independent will, who ultimately triumphs over him. This recalls in particular Lesia Ukrainka's *Kaminnyi hospodar* and the role of Donna Anna. Donna Anna challenges Don Juan's power by demanding that he surrender Dolores's ring as a pledge of his sincerity. Rosita also demands her pledge—the unconditional renunciation of his donjuanism. The hero of *Kaminnyi hospodar* hesitates; a principle he himself is unable to comprehend prevents a false promise. Cherkasenko's Don Juan, however, knows no such principle and swears the oath that seals his doom.

As one of the powerful recreations of the myth in the modern age, it is not surprising that the influence of *Kaminnyi hospodar* would be reflected to some extent in *Don Khuan i Rozita*. There are indeed several discernibly analogical moments in the two plays. One might cite, for example, the philosophy of unrestrained personal liberty espoused and proclaimed by Lesia Ukrainka's

13. І що вони знаходять в нім? Як бджоли  
Круг улика, так вони круг нього!  
А головне, — як той мисливий добрий —  
Аби угледів — вже й його! А чим  
Бере? Солодкими речами. Йй де  
Береться? Чи грандеса то, чи дівка —  
Розтопиться від них, як лій од світла ... (p. 115)
14. Коли в словах моїх було лукавство  
І підступна неправда, то нехай  
Життя моє урветься в тую ж мить  
Як не додержу або зраджу їх! (p. 64)

conception of the “champion of free will.” In a parodistically cynical echo of this salient motif, Cherkasenko’s Don Juan reveals to Donna Anna his philosophy of reckless self-gratification as he reneges on the promise of marriage that he had sworn to her over the corpse of the Commander. “To be free of everything—that is life,” he adjures her. “Sail to where the current of delights carries you, to where new pleasure ever shines.”<sup>15</sup>

Similarly Don Juan and Catalion’s dialogue about the duel with the Commander evokes a scenario quite reminiscent of the murder scene in act 4 of *Kaminnyi hospodar*. Although, as in the tradition of Molière, Pushkin, and others, the death of the Commander occurs as a flashback in *Don Khuan i Rozita*, we discover that the duel took place in the boudoir of Donna Anna, where Don Juan arrived for a nocturnal rendezvous. As in Lesia Ukrainka’s version, the Commander’s inopportune return and challenge to Don Juan cost him his life. The motif of a marital instead of filial relationship between Donna Anna and the Commander, first introduced in Pushkin’s drama *Kamennyi gost* (The Stone Guest) and preserved in Lesia Ukrainka’s *Kaminnyi hospodar*, recurs in Cherkasenko’s version and suggests once again the influence of the anterior Ukrainian drama.

In accordance with the views expressed in his prefatory note, Cherkasenko’s rendition of the theme of Don Juan is strongly inclined towards a satirical and sarcastic interpretation. The blend of tragedy and irony that elevated the tone and intensified the emotive quality of *Kaminnyi hospodar* is virtually non-existent in Cherkasenko’s drama. Where Lesia Ukrainka had created the anarchist and individualist, the exponent of personal freedom above all else, Cherkasenko’s Don Juan is but an advocate of his own licentious and unbridled self-indulgence. Where the hero of *Kaminnyi hospodar* proudly proclaimed that he gave women “all that they were capable of sustaining,” the Don Juan of Cherkasenko’s drama merely seeks to satisfy his lust and greed. He must be the first to possess a beautiful woman, and in this predilection he recalls the Don Giovanni of operatic fame, whose dominant passion is the “*giovin principiante*”—the beginner in love: “Whenever I lay eyes on a beautiful woman, I covet her and desire to be the first to possess her. After that, I care nought for what happens!”<sup>16</sup>

---

15. Що мені

До світу нашого? Чи кращий він  
За нас з тобою?... Вільним треба бути  
Од всього — в цім життя. Пливи туди,  
Куди несе утіхи течія.  
Туди, де сяє все новее щастя,  
Нове все раювання!... (p. 38)

16. Коли дивлюся на якусь красуню,  
То вже її ревную я до того,

Indeed, once the victim has succumbed to his seductive hypocrisy, physical charm, and promise of untold happiness in the lap of luxury, she is callously spurned:

До чорта! Час позбутись їх ...  
 ... І гидко й нецікаво,  
 Коли ти жінку знаєш всю напам'ять,  
 Як старець зна свою торбину. (p. 33)

Cherkasenko's Don Juan is a compulsive seducer, a "pig," and a "he-goat," as his own lackey contemptuously calls him. But beneath the facade of the sensualist there lurks a cynic and misogynist who fears and despises womankind. In this expression of suspicion and mistrust we recognize a feature of the romantic seeker for the absolute initiated in E. T. A. Hoffmann's tale *Don Juan* (1813). Cherkasenko indeed did not fail to include in his version a deliberately sarcastic reference to the theme of idealism. His Don Juan purports to be on a quest for the supreme woman, and his justification for abandoning one woman after another is that he had, as he says, "avidly emptied the costly cup of passion and found it incapable of intoxication" (p. 39).

Cherkasenko's work reflects a patently parodistic treatment of the theme of the idealistic Don Juan. Having rejected the "awesome philosophical and mystical depth" with which writers of the nineteenth century had invested the legend, he satirizes that ennobling yet sinful aspiration that had aggrandized and destroyed many a Don Juan of the Romantic age. As an ideal-seeker, the hero of *Don Khuan i Rozita* is a brazen impostor. He harbours not the slightest trace of the tragic victim of a primordial cosmic conflict between the forces of heaven and hell as described by Hoffmann.<sup>17</sup> He is but a fop and a "scoundrel"—to apply the author's own epithet—bored with the facile conquests that he has made over women as shallow as himself, but ever on the alert for a new adventure of seduction.

As a representative of the Don Juan type, Cherkasenko's hero proves to be ineffectual, for he has been stripped of those essential and irreplaceable traits that have assured his popularity for almost four centuries—his courage and indomitable will. In fact, this Don Juan cannot be credited with a single act of manliness or bravery in the course of the entire drama. Even while Rosita is being rescued from the Inquisition by a motley band of robbers and prostitutes, Don Juan sits idly in the tavern and flirts with the barmaid. When his death is

---

Кому вона достанеться. І я  
 Хотів би, щоб усяка з них спочатку  
 Належала мені ... а потім — все одно! (p. 109)

17. E. T. A. Hoffmann, "Don Juan," in his *Poetische Werke*, vol. 1 (Berlin: Walter de Gruyter, 1957), 73–88.



imminent, he shares nothing in common with the defiant rebel who scorns submission and repentance even as the Statue drags him into the inferno. Instead he grovels and whimpers his reluctance to die for his crimes.

The period of realistic interpretations of the Don Juan myth in literature is a period of paradoxes: the theme flourished, but the hero did not fare well. While literary creations in his name proliferated, Don Juan himself was held up to disparagement and sometimes to ridicule. The legend was exploited, but the classic Don Juan type rarely emerged. With the attenuation of the irrational and supernatural element in the interests of realism, the hero declined in stature and mythical significance. He, who at one time could be destroyed only by an act of God, became vulnerable to the vagaries of vindictive monks, mutinous henchmen, or peasant girls with daggers in their skirts. Briefly stated, the essential connection with the classic hero who engendered and propagated the myth became weak. A number of writers seem to have declared a personal ideological war against a protagonist whose fame was founded to a large degree on his antisocial behaviour. Whether motivated by hedonism or the illusive search for feminine perfection, Don Juan was regarded as a dangerous phenomenon who threatened the security of societal values by murdering men and dishonouring women. Such writers would choose a powerful man in order to render him weak; they would choose a great lover in order to show a man despised. The symbol of corporeal fortitude would become a body wasted by excesses; a charismatic youth would end his days as an old rake.

The theme of compulsive infidelity depicted in *Don Khuan i Rozita* represents a significant departure from the thematics of Cherkasenko's dramas of the 1920s. As a playwright he passed through periods of ethnographic realism—depicting the life of Ukrainian coal miners during the revolutionary events of 1905–7 in plays such as *Zhakh* (Horror) and *Khurtovyna* (The Snowstorm)—and modernism (e.g., *Kazka staroho mlyna* [The Tale of the Old Mill]). From 1916 on he created historical dramas based on the Cossack period of Ukraine's past, such as *Pro shcho tyrsa shelestila* (About What the Feather-Grass Whispered) and a succession of plays dealing with prominent figures of that heroic and turbulent epoch: *Severyn Nalyvaiko*, *Velmozhna Pani Kochubeikha* (The Grand Lady Kochubei), and *Bohdan Khmil*. His Don Juan drama, which stands prominently apart from historical Ukrainian subjects, ventures into the realm of universal thematics and poetic myth. In this regard, the critic Oleksa Myshanych observes that "Cherkasenko's dramatic writing is a fascinating phenomenon in Ukrainian literature. It inscribes itself into the record of ideological and artistic strivings of Ukrainian dramaturgy in the first half of the twentieth century and stands on a



par with the poetic achievements of Lesia Ukrainka, Oleksander Oles, and Volodymyr Vynnychenko."<sup>18</sup>

Cherkasenko's version of Don Juan also has merit as a representative phenomenon in the periodization of the myth. Having declined innovative socio-psychological poignancy as well as traditional mythopoesis, the dramatist undertook essentially a characterological transformation of the donjuanesque type, unmasking his superficiality, egocentrism, and moral bankruptcy. It is important to observe, however, that in demythifying Don Juan, Cherkasenko resurrected and breathed new life into the legendary hero. He readily acknowledged his "profanation" of the legend, but recreated the hero notwithstanding. It is evident from this that Don Juan continues to inspire supporters and detractors alike. Glorified or maligned, after three hundred years and three thousand versions, his myth is sure to endure into the next millennium.

---

18. Oleksa Myshanych, "V bezmezhzhi zym i chuzhyny ... Povernennia Spyrydona Cherkasenska," in Spyrydon Cherkasenko, *Tvory v dvokh tomakh*, vol. 1 (Kyiv: Dnipro, 1991), 31.

# The Soviet Ukrainian Whimsical Novel

*Marko Pavlyshyn*

Oleksandr Ilchenko's *Kozatskomu rodu nema perevodu, abo zh Mamai i chuzha molodytsia* (There's No End to the Cossack Clan, or Mamai and the Female Stranger) was published in 1958, some three years before the post-Stalin thaw had a perceptible impact on Ukrainian prose. The novel's subtitle, "Khymernyi roman z narodnykh ust" (A Whimsical Novel from the Oral Folk Tradition), gave rise to the concept of the "whimsical novel," which has since come to be widely applied by Soviet Ukrainian critics.<sup>1</sup> The term "*khymernyi*," translated here as "whimsical," but meaning also "chimerical," "strange," and "fantastic," proved useful to describe a trend in Ukrainian prose fiction that became especially productive in the late 1970s and early 1980s.

Ilchenko's aesthetically unremarkable book was part of the aftermath of the 1954 celebration of the third centenary of the agreement of Pereiaslav by which the Ukrainian Cossacks accepted the suzerainty of the Russian tsar. Pereiaslav was the chief symbol of the Ukrainian variant of what Lowell Tillett called the myth of the great friendship between Russia and the non-Russian peoples of the U.S.S.R.<sup>2</sup> In Ilchenko's novel this notion is illustrated in each of two main plots. The first has as its central figure the Cossack Mamai, the most popular subject of Ukrainian folk painting. Endowed with supernatural powers, Mamai mysteriously appears at some time in the second half of the seventeenth century in the town of Myroslav to help its citizens resist the insurgency of a villainous Ukrainian hetman against the tsar. The second narrative line concerns the journey of a young messenger to Moscow with a plea for the tsar's assistance; the novel ends abruptly amidst euphoric renderings of the mission's success. The work's

---

1. Anatolii Pohribny, in "Moda? Novatsiia? Zakonomernost? O 'khimernom' zhanre v ukrainskoi proze," *Literaturnoe obozrenie*, 1980, no. 2: 24-8, gives an account of the genesis and the most useful analysis of the features of the whimsical novel.

2. Lowell Tillett, *The Great Friendship: Soviet Historians on the Non-Russian Nationalities* (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1969), 299 ff.

affective structure is simple enough: while eliciting the pathos of East Slavic brotherhood, anti-Western xenophobia, and class resentment, the novel serves the reader's pleasure through colourful ethnographic material (descriptions of folk custom, lore, superstition, and material culture), humour (comical names, burlesque action, indecent allusion, grotesque characterization, and jovially mannered style), and the coincidences and convolutions of a plot that is indebted to the Gothic novel, the *Schelmenroman*, and the historical romance.

The whimsical mode became fashionable only in the 1970s.<sup>3</sup> Although Ilchenko's successors, on the whole, created novels of greater sophistication, their works contained the same components: a rural setting facilitating the presentation of Ukrainian ethnographic detail; historical reference, especially to the Cossack period; fantastic and supernatural motifs, most often from the repertoire of Ukrainian folklore; the admission of non-realistic notions of causality; eccentricity of style, often accompanied by waywardness and whimsy in narrative technique; erotic allusion; and humour. These ingredients are mixed in a wide variety of combinations, but a distinction may be drawn between two prevailing tones: the comic and the mysterious. The comic tendency dominates in Ilchenko, in Vasyl Zemliak's *Lebedyna zhraia* (Flight of Swans, 1971) and *Zeleni Mlyny* (1976), Ivan Senchenko's *Savka* (1972), Pavlo Zahrebelny's *Levyne sertse* (Lion Heart, 1977), and Ievhen Hutsalo's trilogy *Pozychenyi cholovik* (The Borrowed Husband), *Pryvatne zhyttia fenomena* (The Private Life of a Phenomenon), and *Parad planet* (Parade of Planets), published between 1980 and 1984. A more eerie, even Gothic, atmosphere pervades Roman Ivanychuk's *Manuskrypt z vulytsi Ruskoi* (The Manuscript from Ruska Street, 1979) and Valerii Shevchuk's *Dim na hori* (The House on the Hill, 1982). Some novels, such as Volodymyr Iavorivsky's *Avtoportret z uiavy* (An Imaginary Self-Portrait, 1981), do not fall easily into either group, but are clearly whimsical by virtue of their unorthodox and playful construction.

The proliferation of the whimsical novel was a development of some significance in Ukrainian cultural history. In the first place, it represented a departure from socialist realist tradition toward greater formal freedom. Anatolii Pohribny, in his extensive and useful discussion of the "whimsical genre," speaks of its "free but deliberate deformation of spatio-temporal relationships."<sup>4</sup> By focussing on such technical characteristics, he highlights the challenge that the whimsical novel presented to the formal conservatism of the mainstream Soviet novel.

3. The 1960s were not productive in terms of whimsical prose. A notable exception was Iurii Shcherbak's "povist" *Khronika mista Iaropolia* (A Chronicle of the City of Iaropil, 1968), which, however, was passed over in silence in discussions of the whimsical until much later; see, e.g., Mykola Zhulynsky, "Masshtaby suchasnosti, hlybyny istorii," *Kyiv*, 1986, 2: 136.

4. Pohribny, "Moda?" 25.

Departures from the probable, mythologization, and the increased complexity of narrative structures acquired a legitimacy that they had not enjoyed since 1934; the "master plot" and the positive hero were abandoned.<sup>5</sup> No doubt in order to protect this "liberal" position from potential future accusations of formalism, the champions of the whimsical novel asserted that it remained subject to the requirements of a realist aesthetics: Pohribny argued that the subgenre justifiably utilized more complex methods in order to apprehend the "essentiality of being" in an increasingly complex world,<sup>6</sup> while Mykhailo Strelbytsky, when relating the whimsical to the grotesque, defined the grotesque as an especially incisive implement for the reflection of reality.<sup>7</sup>

Furthermore, the distinctive features of the subgenre are unambiguously Ukrainian: the fantastic elements are drawn from Ukrainian folklore, the historical background and the ethnographic detail are Ukrainian, and the humour (according to both authors and critics) continues Ukrainian literary and folk traditions. Soviet critics acknowledged the affinity of the whimsical novel to the European comic novel, notably Rabelais's *Gargantua and Pantagruel* and Cervantes's *Don Quixote*; they acknowledged the existence of similar phenomena in other contemporary literatures, but claimed for the whimsical a special domestication in Ukrainian tradition.<sup>8</sup> The authority of "Bakhtin himself" was quoted in support of the view that the whimsical has a unique relationship to the Ukrainian "national character."<sup>9</sup>

The whimsical novel burgeoned in the context of other, related developments in the cultural sphere. First, Ukrainian Renaissance and baroque literature, to whose form, style, and world outlook many whimsical novels have more than a passing affinity, became a legitimate area not only of scholarly interest but of publishing.<sup>10</sup> Second, the books translated into Ukrainian during this period included European works not dissimilar in character to the local whimsical production: the more myth-oriented line of the whimsical novel later pursued by Ivanychuk and Shevchuk was adumbrated by the appearance in 1978 of a translation of Hermann Hesse's *Das Glasperlenspiel*, while E. T. A. Hoffmann's

---

5. For an authoritative account of the conventional structures of the Soviet socialist realist novel, see Katerina Clark, *The Soviet Novel: History as Ritual* (Chicago and London: Chicago University Press, 1981).

6. Anatolii Pohribny, "Suchasnyi styl: Vdumlyvist poshuku i pidstupnist mody," *Vitchyzna*, 1984, no. 12: 145-52, here 147.

7. Mykhailo Strelbytsky, "Vysokosnyi rik romanu," *Zhovten*, 1982, no. 1: 105-13, here 111.

8. Pohribny, "Moda?" 24.

9. Strelbytsky, "Vysokosnyi rik romanu," 111.

10. Nataliia Pylypiuk, "Nove v staroukrainskii literaturi," *Suchasnist*, 1985, no. 5: 20-33.

*Kater Murr* (the translation appeared in 1983) augmented the comic strand.<sup>11</sup> Finally, Bakhtin's notion of carnivalized literature, to which the whimsical novel, at least on the surface, seems clearly to have an affinity, was reintroduced in 1977 into the discussion of Ukrainian literature through Mykola Iatsenko's Bakhtinian rereading of Ivan Kotliarevsky's *Eneida*<sup>12</sup>—the still popular travesty of Virgil's *Aeneid* that became the first published work in vernacular Ukrainian (1798).

All of these events took place within the broader cultural and political framework of what, after the arrests and purges of early 1972 and the succeeding years of extreme pressure by the Party and state on the creative intelligentsia, some Western observers concluded to be a new rapprochement between the two sides.<sup>13</sup> However, it is symptomatic of the limited nature of official concessions under this truce that, for all their formal innovativeness, the whimsical novels published after 1978 were ideologically as orthodox as their predecessors. Ilchenko had lauded the Russo-Ukrainian "great friendship" in 1958, but so did Ivanychuk in 1979, in his much more philosophically ambitious novel on the sixteenth-century Lviv Brotherhood of the Dormition. In 1971 Vasyl Zemliak's *Lebedyna zhraia*, a novel remarkable for its comic characterization, rehearsed the officially binding account of collectivization and dekulakization in the 1920s and 1930s, not excluding the ogriish stereotype of the kulaks and the apologia for their liquidation as a class. But a decade later Hutsalo, in *Pryvatne zhyttia fenomena*, presented his reader with a no less doctrinaire—and, indeed, explicitly propagandistic—attack on the ideology and culture of North America. Whatever was carnivalesque about the whimsical novel did not lead to an irreverent or even light-hearted attitude toward authoritative principles or symbols.

## I

These introductory observations give rise to the question with which the present discussion is chiefly concerned: what meaning should we ascribe to the whimsical novel, a phenomenon both innovative and perceived as nationally

11. Herman Hesse, *Hra v biser*, trans. Ievhen Popovych (Kyiv: Dnipro, 1978); Ernst Teodor Amadei Hofman, *Zhyttieva filosofii kota Mura razom z uryvkamy biohrafii kapelmeistera Iohanna Kreislara* (Kyiv: Dnipro, 1983).

12. M. T. Iatsenko, *Na rubezhi literaturnykh epokh: "Eneida" Kotliarevskoho i khudozhnii prohres v ukrainskii literaturi* (Kyiv: Naukova dumka, 1977).

13. See, e.g., Myroslav Shkandrij, "Literary Politics and Literary Debates in Ukraine, 1971–81," in *Ukraine after Shelest*, ed. Bohdan Krawchenko (Edmonton: Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies Press, 1983), 55–72, here 67; and Roman Solchanyk, "Politics and the National Question in the Post-Shelest Period," in the same collection, 1–29, here 12–13.



specific, within the context of Ukrainian culture in the Soviet Union in the late 1970s and early 1980s—in the period, that is, preceding the cultural ferment inaugurated by the Twenty-seventh Congress of the CPSU in 1986? We shall suggest in the following that it would be a misinterpretation to regard the whimsical novel's construction of national difference as a between-the-lines argument for Ukrainian cultural integrity or equality, or as the symptom of a swing of the nationalities-policy pendulum away from its dominant tendency of favouring the generalization of Russian culture as the culture of the USSR. It is implicit in the rhetorical notions of *auctoritas* and *aptum* that the persuasiveness of an argument depends in large part on the prestige for a given audience of the medium in which the argument is formulated.<sup>14</sup> The potential prestige of the whimsical subgenre as determined by its practitioners would appear to have been low, and its net argumentative force operated against the interests of national culture rather than for it.

Let us consider the probable meaning and value of some of the whimsical novel's features for the Soviet Ukrainian audience of the time.

Take, first, the use of history and the ethnographic. Almost all of the novels named at the beginning of this essay are fascinated by the activities and rituals of rural life and the material things with which it is filled. For Ilchenko, Hutsalo, and Zemliak the marketplace is a favourite object of description. Zemliak incorporates into his narrative a description of the blessing of the waters at the feast of the Baptism, Zahrebelny gives accounts of weddings and funerals, and Hutsalo enhances local colour with proverbs and other folk locutions. There is a more organic use of the folkloric in Shevchuk's *Dim na hori*, where motifs from folk tales and superstitions are incorporated into the tension-generating structures.

History is also an important presence in the whimsical novel. Ilchenko's novel and half of Shevchuk's are set amidst the seventeenth-century Cossacks, who also make an incursion, through the technique of the explained supernatural, into Hutsalo's ultramodern rural landscape. Zahrebelny's village, Karpiv Iar, was founded by the Cossacks, and genealogical speculation is one of the population's favourite pursuits. Bohdanivka, the home village of Kateryna Bilokur in Iavorivsky's *Avtoportret z uiavy*, dates back to Hetman Bohdan Khmelnytsky's days—a fact that motivates imaginative excursions into the past.

At first sight the whimsical novel might appear to have been a place within Soviet Ukrainian literature where some affirmation of national cultural uniqueness was possible.<sup>15</sup> The combination of history and the ethnographic

---

14. See Heinrich Lausberg, *Handbuch der literarischen Rhetorik* (Munich: Max Hueber, 1960), 140–6.

15. Such an acceptance in principle of national styles within “multinational Soviet

may be the source of a powerful symbolism of national identity, and so it had been in the late eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries. At that time Ivan Kotliarevsky, in his *Eneida*, had fused the anarcho-autonomist image of the Cossacks with images of the prosperity and vitality of peasant life, creating a rallying-myth for the deculturated Ukrainian social elite and nascent intelligentsia and thus initiating their transformation into a literary audience ripe for romantic nationalism.<sup>16</sup> But Kotliarevsky's formula was valid only at the initial stages of cultural self-definition; once a modern national identity had been established, the self-same combination of the historical with the ethnographic, especially in the stylistic proximity of humour, came to be perceived as anti-modern and even offensive. Cossack history as a symbol of national cohesion located the source of identity in the past and with a defunct social order. Worse still, the symbolism of local colour was, and remains, a symbolism of marginality—the ethnographic in its realization as the local is quaint and a source of amusement. Such nineteenth-century Ukrainian critics as Panteleimon Kulish perceived the pitfalls of such manifestations of national culture and therefore railed against Kotliarevsky's numerous imitators, claiming that they limited and debased the potential of Ukrainian literature.<sup>17</sup> The whimsical novel, however, was in almost every case an anachronistic reactivation of the old Kotliarevsky mania.

Similar things could be said of the use of the countryside as setting. One line of Western critical thinking about Soviet (particularly Russian) "village prose" of the 1960s and 1970s has attributed to it the underlying structure of the idyll: the moral values and life virtues of the country are rediscovered in opposition to the city experience.<sup>18</sup> Such a city-village opposition presupposes as its point of departure the recognition (and criticism), whether explicit or implicit, of the city, modernity, and civilization. Not so the whimsical novel. Here the humorous depiction of the countryside had as its substructure not the opposition of city and village but of metropolis and province. It was the village that was negatively evaluated as backward, barbarian, and, by civilized standards, hilarious.

The imagery of provincialism is legion in the whimsical novel. It includes the five kilometres of mud that separate Zahrebelny's newly constructed village

literature" was regarded as an advance over previous, more monolithic notions of Soviet literature. See, e.g., V. A. Shoshin, "Vzaemodeistvie natsionalnykh literatur i sovremennoe sovetskoe literaturovedenie," *Russkaia literatura*, 1982, no. 4: 7–27, here 15.

16. See my article "The Rhetoric and Politics of Kotliarevsky's *Eneida*," *Journal of Ukrainian Studies* 10 (1985), no. 1: 9–24.

17. See, e.g., "Why Shevchenko is a Poet of Our People," in *Shevchenko and the Critics, 1861–1980*, ed. G. S. N. Luckyj (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1980), 57–63, here 58.

18. E.g., Geoffrey Hosking, *Beyond Socialist Realism: Soviet Fiction since Ivan Denisovich* (London: Granada, 1980).

of Svitloiarsk from the nearest asphalt; the attitudes of fellow villagers to Bilokur's paintings in Iavorivsky's *Avtoportret*; the rejection of a mural by the inhabitants of Hutsalo's Iablunivka because the cow represented in it is not up to the most modern standards of breeding; and the rural opulence of the Vavilon ball in Zemliak's *Zeleni Mlyny*. The countryside is the province, the antithesis of what is urban, modern, and relevant; at the same time it is the seat of national identity, the matrix from which emerge those "national characters" in whom critics saw one of the whimsical novel's chief ornaments and, indeed, even its primary purpose.<sup>19</sup>

These national characters—the self-made philosopher Fabian with his goat of the same name in Zemliak, or Hutsalo's Khoma Pryshchepa, the possessor of an encyclopedic wisdom expressed entirely in folkloric clichés, or Zahrebelny's Diadko Obelisk, who would destroy the bullock and the horse "as a class" and "in their honour erect an obelisk"—are the source of considerable reading satisfaction: their eccentricity both gives rise to the unexpected and generates the pleasure of recognition at each of their appearances. But it is these attractive originals, harmless *Sonderlinge*, standing remote from the mainstream social reality—not above it, like the seer in Shevchuk, but outside it—who were perceived even in professional literary criticism as in some sense typifying the national substance.

This manner of construing the national difference has as its first major statement Nikolai Gogol's stories with Ukrainian settings—the collections *Vechera na khutore bliz Dikanki* (Evenings on a Farm near Dykanka, 1831–32) and *Mirgorod* (Myrhorod, 1835), which express toward Ukrainian folklore and history a profoundly ambivalent attitude: affectionate, yet ironically dismissive to the point of caricature.<sup>20</sup> The numerous allusions to Gogol in the whimsical novels are therefore wholly appropriate: Ilchenko's town is called Myroslav, perhaps in deference to Gogol's Myrhorod; and Zemliak's regional capital, Hlynsk, expresses its provinciality by having, like Myrhorod, a vast puddle in the main square.

In the context of such signals indicating the provincialism of the country setting, the assertion that its localism may be transcended in the interests of a more general meaningfulness can be made only humorously or ironically. Hutsalo's comparison of the mores of New York with those prevailing in the village of Iablunivka is (intentionally) funny because of the shrieking difference

---

19. Pohribny expresses this view in "Suchasnyi styl," 150. Hutsalo, in his appreciation of Zahrebelny's *Levyne sertse*, regards the "image of the national character" as one of the heroes of the novel; see his "Roman, gde vlastvuet smekh," *Literaturnoe obozrenie*, 1978, no. 6: 51–3, here 51.

20. See George S. N. Luckyj, *Between Gogol' and Ševčenko: Polarity in the Literary Ukraine, 1798–1847* (Munich: Fink Verlag, 1971), 106 and 114–15.

in scale between the terms of the comparison. Zemliak gives his fictional village the name of Vavilon (Babylon), both to underscore the comic self-importance of the residents and as an ironic concession to his readers that the village, as a seat of wealthy peasants, is a microcosm of the universal in one respect alone: it harbours the class enemy and is, in that sense, like the Babylon of the Book of Revelation, "the Mother of Harlots and Abominations of the Earth."

The whimsical novel, then, defined national difference in terms of quaintness, outdatedness, and rustic provinciality—qualities that perhaps had a certain Old World attractiveness but were, even as notions, the opposites of modernity and relevance for the Soviet Ukrainian readership, as for any other. In doing so the whimsical novel promoted a deprecatory provincial self-stereotyping against which Soviet Ukrainian critics and writers eventually began to protest, though in the context of discussions of other matters than the whimsical novel. Iurii Shcherbak complained that three quarters of Ukrainian short stories are set in the village;<sup>21</sup> Leonid Korenevych lamented the underdevelopment of Ukrainian city prose;<sup>22</sup> and Iurii Mushketyk, at the Eighth Congress of the Soviet Writers' Union in June 1986, accused Soviet critics of perceiving in Ukrainian contemporary literature only its "romantic dimension."<sup>23</sup> All of this unease could be summarized as an expression of discontent with the marginalization of Ukrainian literature and, more generally, culture.<sup>24</sup>

## II

Some whimsical novels, however, did challenge the dominant culturally evaluative tendency of the subgenre, and it would be instructive to consider two such works—Zahrebelny's *Levyne sertse* and Shevchuk's *Dim na hori*—in

21. Shcherbak pointed out at the Ninth Ukrainian Writers' Congress that eighty of the 123 short stories published in the annual *Opovidannia* for 1981, 1982, 1983, and 1984 were set in the village. See "Obrii khudozhnoi prozy," *Literaturna Ukraina*, 21 August 1986.

22. In his article "Tvoryty filosofiiu doby," *Kyiv*, 1984, no. 8: 85–91, Korenevych agreed with V. Panchenko that urban prose did not yet exist "as a phenomenon" (p. 85) and observed that prose set in the city still had no urban idiom of its own (p. 90).

23. "VIII z'izd pismennykiv SRSR: Vystup Iu. Mushketyka," *Literaturna Ukraina*, 3 July 1986.

24. Such discontent was expressed without resort to euphemisms at the November 1986 plenary session of the Union of Writers of Ukraine by the Transcarpathian delegate Vasyl Vovchok: "We believe that provincial narrow-mindedness misdirects many of our writers to the periphery of issues and, therefore, of life. It is against this marginality that we must struggle first of all, in order to place ourselves at last at the cutting edge of our age" ("Myslyty perspektyvno, pratsiuvaty po-novomu," *Literaturna Ukraina*, 27 November 1986).



juxtaposition to Hutsalo's more mainstream though no less remarkable *Pozychenyi cholovik*.

Zahrebelny's questioning of the whimsical novel comes within the context of a Menippean challenge to the expectations that a reader accustomed to socialist realism might have of the genre of the novel. Like Laurence Sterne's *Tristram Shandy*, Zahrebelny's *Levyne sertse* delights its readers by frustrating them with its eccentricities. The plot, which flirts with the love-plot of trivial literature, defies popular conventions of plausibility, or even continuity (the heroine wavers between two suitors and then abruptly marries a third, who had scarcely figured in the narrative); the narration barely advances for digressions (like Sterne, Zahrebelny has a long digression concerning digressions); there is play with the sequence of chapters (Zahrebelny has unnumbered chapters in parentheses); and the notion of psychological causality is lampooned (the narrator identifies two major motives for the conflict: wheat stubble and ice cream). The narrative persona, who shares the name "Zahrebelny" with the author, has an alter ego, Varfolomii Knurets, a "doctor of erudite sciences"; the latter serves as a conduit for arcane information concerning astrophysics, syntax, animal husbandry, the theory of laughter, Virgil's *Aeneid*, and a score of other subjects, generating the impression that the ordering principle of the novel is serendipity. Non-fictional elements find their way into the novel: real critics (Novychenko, Syvokin) are mentioned by name, and fellow authors are quoted. Various modes of discourse (speech, editorial, scholarly discussion) are parodied. The result is a mannerism one critic that has called an "anti-style," an appropriate term for an approach to writing that aims to put into question as many forms of writing as possible, including the author's own.<sup>25</sup>

In the course of this global deconstructive project, Zahrebelny also undermines the convention to which his own book is closest—that of the whimsical novel. In doing so he exposes (while also continuing to promote) its established provincializing argumentation.

Zahrebelny parodies the rustic fixation of the genre and of Ukrainian prose as a whole by insisting that his Karpiv Iar (later called Svitloiarsk and still later Veseloiarsk) is at the very midpoint of the Ukrainian literary countryside: "Світлоярськ розташований на однаковій відстані від Вітрової Балки Андрія Головка і Груні Остапа Вишні, від Байгорода Юрія Яновського і Червонограда Івана Сенченка, від Бродщини Олеся Гончара і Зелених Млинів Василя Земляка ..." <sup>26</sup> Yet Zahrebelny does not desist from deriving

---

25. Pohribny, "Moda?" 26.

26. "Svitloiarsk is situated equidistantly from Andrii Holovko's Vitrova Balka and Ostap Vyshnia's Hrunia, from Iurii Ianovsky's Baihorod and Ivan Senchenko's Chervonohrad, from Oles Honchar's Brodshchyna and Vasyl Zemliak's Zeleni Mlyny" (Pavlo



humour from the contemplation of provincialism. Typical in this respect is the episode concerning the bitumen road laid down in Svitloiarsk (not, nota bene, connected to the national highway network): every operator of a motor vehicle in the village, whether of a car or agricultural machine, drives up and down it obsessively, savouring the flavour of modern civilization. What Zahrebelny *does* attack is the patronizing, pseudo-metropolitan attitude that simulates high regard for the rural, but in fact holds it in contempt. He parodies the pious ideologization and poeticization of the countryside in a mock-eulogy in newspaper style on an ephemeral record harvest, and he allows banal official reverence toward the ethnographic to parody itself. (To this end he quotes verbatim, with ironic admiration, from a book released by the Ukrainian Academy of Sciences' publishing house, Naukova dumka.) The argument of such parodies works as follows: certain texts are hypocritical in their praise of the rural; their subtext is contempt for the rural; and their attitude is itself contemptible and worthy of unmasking.

History as a natural source of colourful details suitable for humorous treatment also comes in for reassessment in *Levyne sertse*. The plot-as-intrigue (the heroine's unmotivated marriage) provides a parallel to the novel's formulation of the discontinuity, indeed impotence, of history. Svitloiarsk is part of a historical landscape; indeed, it is rumoured to have been founded by the Cossacks. Yet it is to be inundated by a new Dnieper River dam, a representation of the power of the historical present, inevitable and beyond discussion. In this sense *Levyne sertse* provides a pessimistic answer to Honchar's *Sobor* (The Cathedral, 1968), in which the preservation or destruction of the past symbolized by the cathedral was an issue of debate and the basis of conflict between the antagonists.<sup>27</sup> In Zahrebelny's novel, in contrast to Ilchenko's or Hutsalo's, the use of history for comic effect is justified not so much by its attractiveness as a source of exotic, colourful, and exciting material as by its ephemeral and impermanent quality and its consequent unseriousness. On two occasions the novel uses the motif of the document that disproves a cherished or popular belief—concerning the Cossack ancestry of the hero in one case and of the narrator himself in the other. For the contemporary human being history is disqualified as a source of identity, but historical discourse retains its affective utility: the discredited information loses none of its validity as joke or anecdote.

---

Zahrebelny, *Levyne sertse: Roman* [Kyiv: Radianskyi pysmennyk, 1978], 13).

27. See my article "Honchar's *Sobor* and Rudenko's *Orlova balka*: Environmental Conservation as Theme and Argument in Two Recent Ukrainian Novels," in *Slavic Themes: Papers from Two Hemispheres*, ed. Boris Christa et al. (Neuried: Hieronymus, 1988), 271–88.

The narrator's account of the etymology of his own name is a case in point: Zahrebelny is derived from Sakrebelny, which in turn is based on the expression *sacre bleu*, used to excess by an ancestor visiting the court of Louis XIV with a Cossack delegation; an Italian branch of the family subsequently modified the surname to Zagribaldi and eventually begat "so famous a man as Giuseppe Garibaldi."<sup>28</sup> Overvaluation of the significance of the past for the present, whether by Svitloiarsk residents who base their claim to importance on alleged descent from Cossack colonels, or by the narrator, in his elaborate project for a speech at the opening of an imaginary museum, is always comically undermined. The novel prefers to suggest, rather, that the postulation of links, especially causal ones, between past and present is an arbitrary and uncertain matter. Symbolic of this uncertainty is the attribution by one of the characters of pollution and ecological damage in the iron-and-steel belt along the Dnieper to the cooking and fishing activities of the Cossacks three centuries earlier.

The novel's parody of literary historicism is also a self-parody by Zahrebelny not as persona, but as author: by 1977, when *Levyne sertse* was published, he had written four large novels set in medieval Rus'. Zahrebelny later wrote two other historical novels set in the Cossack period, including *Ia, Bohdan* (I, Bohdan, 1983), his excellent literary portrait of Hetman Khmelnytsky. In short, Zahrebelny makes explicit (and, by exposing, criticizes) the cavalier attitude toward history implied, but seldom discussed, in the whimsical novel.

By reflecting critically on the premises of the subgenre, Zahrebelny takes his novel outside its conventional argumentation. In general the mere representation of the rural and the historical in a humorous context in Ukrainian literature, we argued earlier, constitutes a reiteration of the deprecatory stereotype of Ukrainian culture. Zahrebelny, without challenging the stereotype itself, challenges the modes of representation by which it is reinforced.

### III

In 1978 *Levyne sertse* was reviewed by Hutsalo, who admired above all the freedom that Zahrebelny asserted in his treatment of form and his use of the details of life not for their own sake, but as materials for an overarching aesthetic purpose.<sup>29</sup> Subsequently Hutsalo's own *Pozychenyi cholovik* and *Pryvatne zhyttia fenomena*, published together in 1982 as a "dilogy," also strove for similar goals in not dissimilar ways. The narrators, the eccentric collective farmer Khoma Pryshchepa in the first volume and the persona of the writer in the second, are as garrulous and digressive as Zahrebelny's narrator. The plot, as in Zahrebelny, is a skeleton to be fleshed out with heterogeneous content: in

---

28. Zahrebelny, *Levyne sertse*, 37.

29. Hutsalo, "Roman, gde," 52.

*Pozychenyi cholovik* Pryshchepa is lent to the market speculator Odarka Darmohraikha against the security of a thoroughbred calf and later returned to his lawful wife; in *Pryvatne zhyttia* Pryshchepa travels to the United States, while the writer's persona reports on events in Iablunivka and, among other adventures, encounters Cossacks and Tatars.

Hutsalo's overarching aesthetic purpose, it appears, was to create a mythical portrait of the Ukrainian collective farmer as a representative of the Ukrainian people as a whole. The pathos of the concluding chapter on the "inexhaustible creative genius of the Ukrainian people"<sup>30</sup> certainly suggests this:

Літні села я сприймав як безмежну книгу рідної землі і рідного народу. Кожне село — наче окремий і неповторний розділ. Такий, як Яблунівка ... із роботою на полях і на фермах, із новими та старими обрядами і звичаями, з народженнями людськими й смертями, з пригодами химерними й непорозуміннями ще химернішими, з піснями, з лукавим сміхом та зі словом — дотепним і розумним, веселкової барвистості і небесної незмірної глибини! І якщо розділ цей багатий і невичерпаний, то яка ж казково багата й невичерпна вся книга ...<sup>31</sup>

For Hutsalo the book of Ukrainian culture, clearly, is a volume unrelievedly bucolic.

The chief implement in Hutsalo's mythogenic endeavour was to be style. The style, as we remarked earlier, is as folkloric as possible: proverbs, riddles, fixed similes and metaphors, and other folk locutions formulate most notions and offer a commentary on most events, and they form a substantial part of the novel's bulk.<sup>32</sup> They are also genuine, as attested by the standard reference sources.<sup>33</sup> The dilogy, one suspects, was intended to make this compendium of folk wit and wisdom the major feature of an attractive, colourful, and interesting literary

30. Ievhen Hutsalo, *Pozychenyi cholovik; Pryvatne zhyttia fenomena: Roman-dylohiia* (Kyiv: Radianskyi pysmennyk, 1982), 706.

31. "The villages in summer I apprehended as the infinite book of our native land and people. Each village is like an individual and unique chapter, such as Iablunivka ... with its labour in the fields and on the farms, with new and old rituals and customs, with people being born and dying, with strange adventures and even stranger misunderstandings, with songs, cunning laughter and words—witty and wise, colourful as the rainbow and deep as the unfathomable heavens! And if the chapter is rich and inexhaustible, then how fabulously rich and inexhaustible is the whole book" (ibid., 709).

32. The claim, however, that folk sayings account for more than half of the novel (e.g., by Mykola Riabchuk, "Osiaiannia i siaivo prozy," *Zhovten*, 1981, no. 6: 131–7, here 135), is an exaggeration.

33. Hutsalo closely follows the text of *Ukrainski narodni prysliv'ia i prykazky: Dozhovtnevyi period* (Kyiv: Derzhlitvydav, 1963) and *Zahadky* (Kyiv: Akademiia nauk Ukrainskoi RSR, 1962).

world, as rich as that of Kotliarevsky's *Eneida*;<sup>34</sup> it was also to utilize the resources of folk idiom and ethos to formulate an ideologically acceptable satire of capitalism and American culture.

These designs proved difficult to accomplish. The amplification of folkloric commonplaces produces an impression not of the natural philosophical sovereignty of the folk mind, but rather of the opposite. Folk wisdom emerges instead as chaotic, archaic, and pre-modern in character, a consequence that, though wholly consistent with the generic drift of the whimsical novel, caused at least one critic's discomfort. "While reading *Pozychenyi cholovik*," wrote Mykhailo Strelbytsky, "you truly have the impression of being in the embrace of a sea. [But then] you wade into it, and it's only up to your knees."<sup>35</sup> The sense of insufficient depth is understandable. The folkloric locution transposes every idea into images of material things, especially those familiar to an agricultural society (animals, plants, implements), as in the following riddle to which the answer is "a human being": "Стоять два стовпи, на стовпах діжа, коло діжі ручка, на діжі макітра, на макітрі ліс, а у лісі є кувіка, що кусає чоловіка."<sup>36</sup> Moreover, the proverb and riddle, based as they are on similitude, generate only that pre-modern, pre-Enlightenment knowledge of the world that Foucault described as "plethoric yet poverty-stricken": it is purely additive and incapable of creating a hierarchy of insights linking the simple to the complex, the particular to the general.<sup>37</sup>

But the unsatisfactory resolution of the novel's philosophical aspirations is not, ultimately, a result of its archaic quality. It is conceivable that a novel should be written as the idyll of a pre-rational (indeed, folk-based) "naturalness" of thought. What deprives the novel of credibility, and makes of it an anachronism, is its failure to perceive itself as archaic. It is this naïveté of the dilogy's attempt at a new myth of the countryside that ensures that, instead of an apotheosis of "the people" consistent with the socialist realist principle of "*narodnist*," what emerges is a more profound definition of underdevelopment and provincialism.

#### IV

We have said that the argument of the subgenre of the whimsical novel diminished the prestige of the cultural process of which it was part by associating

34. Thus it is apprehended by Zhulynsky in "Masshtaby suchasnosti," 130.

35. Strelbytsky, "Vysokosnyi rik romanu," 112.

36. "There are two posts, on the posts a barrel, beside the barrel a handle, on the barrel a pot, on the pot a forest, and in the forest a creature that bites a man" (Hutsalo, *Pozychenyi cholovik*, 177).

37. Michel Foucault, *The Order of Things* (New York: Vintage Books, 1973), 30.



this process with low-status versions of the key topoi of country, folklore, and history. Hutsalo's novel illustrated the triumph of this predetermined argument of the subgenre over what seem to have been the quite different intentions of the author. Zahrebelny's *Levyne sertse*, in a manoeuvre of self-irony, both retained and criticized the whimsical novel's persuasive thrust. Was there a possibility of writing within the subgenre without adopting its cultural value judgments? Valerii Shevchuk's *Dim na hori* suggests that this question may be answered in the affirmative.

The novel, which in its subtitle calls itself a "novel ballad," is in two parts, the first half providing the frame narrative for the collection of twelve short stories that form the second. Within the frame narrative there is a deliberately obfuscating movement backwards and forwards in time, from which there gradually emerges a simple, indeed schematic, sequence of events centred on the house on the hill. The narrative covers the years 1911–63. During that period the house, located in the country near an unnamed town, is inhabited by a single family line of mothers and daughters, one woman in each of four generations. Two kinds of males seek out the house on the hill. One ascends the hill, accepts a proffered cup of water, and remains in the house as the husband of the woman who at that time is of marriageable age. Of such unions are born daughters who inherit the house. But prior to this event, as each woman reaches sexual maturity, she is visited by the other kind of male being: a grey-suited dandy with impeccable manners and lacquered shoes. This footwear is always preternaturally free of dust, as the dandies descend from aloft in the form of eagles.

The transformation from eagle to dandy is at first only hinted at, then directly referred to, and finally described in detail: "Черкнувся підощвами лискучих туфель і звільна пішов по ній до самого будинку на горі... Птах ішов по стежці й помалу втрачав пташину подобу: пір'я на його голові стало кучугурою кучерявого волосся, крила руками, і поклався йому на плечі той-таки неодмінно сірий костюм."<sup>38</sup> In each case this avian incubus strives to seduce the woman; sometimes he succeeds, and the progeny in these cases is always male. Such men leave the house early and eschew social normality, for they are seers endowed with privileged insights into the nature of things. The stories of the second half were written by one such seer, the goatherd Ivan Shevchuk (he was a government clerk until possessed by the Vision), and edited by his grandnephew, also an offspring of the demonic conception. (As in *Levyne sertse*, the narrator bears the author's surname.)

---

38. "The soles of his shining shoes scuffed the path, and he slowly walked along it to the lonely building on the hill.... The bird walked along the path and gradually lost its ornithic appearance: the feathers on its head became a heap of curly hair, its wings became arms, and that self-same grey costume descended upon its shoulders." (Valerii Shevchuk, *Dim na hori: Roman-baliada* [Kyiv: Radianskyi pysmennyk, 1983], 229–30).



These stories are more highly saturated with the fantastic than the frame narrative; they are set in the seventeenth century in Cossack milieux, and the fantastic in them is constructed of motifs borrowed from Ukrainian folklore.

Among the novel's striking Romantic features is the motif of the genesis of the romantic artist. Both Ivan the goatherd and his later editor, the Boy, are offspring of a supernatural conception; each discovers himself to be receptive to epiphanies of the Essence; each chooses to become a social outsider; and the Boy embarks on that most Romantic of enterprises, the journey into the unknown distance, which is also a journey homeward. The vision shared by the Boy and the goatherd has a close affinity to that of a Schlegel or a Novalis, even down to individual symbols and ideas:

Здалося йому, що все навколо різко освітілося, сяйво те попливло з неба і все ество його почало насичуватися дивовижним яскравим спокоєм. Всі чуття його обернулися у це єдине — наслухання й теплу радість. Бачив скелі, що нависали навколо, безладно громадячись одна на одну, відчував небо, що приспустилось і лягло йому на душу; пізнав раптом увесь світ, засіяний тим-таки світлом, повний гармонії, але сплетений у надзвичайно складний вузол. Здавалося, душа його розширюється, роблячись безмежно широкою; відчув пульс дня, що ожив отут, на цій землі, — з'єднання всього живого, неба й землі, води й землі, а також води й неба — чудовий вогонь запалював усе це, напоюючи й живлячи. Побачив він, як рухається сік від коріння до стебла в траві та гіллі кущів...<sup>39</sup>

The harmony and unity of the universe, the identity between the world and the human soul, the organic connection between living things, the symbolism of fluidity and light, the motif of the interpenetration of the four alchemical elements: these familiar Romantic elements form the cosmological dimension of the privileged vision that Ivan encapsulates in the symbol of *spokii*—tranquillity. The vision also has a moral dimension, symbolized by the term “love,” which guides the human individual toward the attainment of *spokii*. The carriers of this vision are scions of the house on the hill, for which reason Mykola Zhulynsky

---

39. “It seemed to him that everything around had become starkly lit, [that] this illumination flowed from the heavens, and his whole being began to fill with a strange, luminous tranquillity. All of his sensations became one: intentness and fervid joy. He saw the crags that loomed around him, haphazardly crowding one another, he sensed the sky that seemed to have descended and covered his soul; he suddenly apprehended the entire world, sown with that self-same light, filled with harmony but woven into a preternaturally complicated knot. It seemed that his soul was expanding, becoming immeasurably wide; he sensed the pulse of the day that had come to life here, on this earth—the union of everything animate, of sky and earth, of water and earth, and also of water and sky—[and] a marvellous blaze inflamed it all, imbuing and nurturing them. He saw how the sap moved from the roots to the blades of grass and the branches of bushes” (ibid., 115).

has interpreted the hill as a Parnassus and the women who inhabit it, mothers of visionaries, as muses.<sup>40</sup>

The function of this, perhaps unexpected, revisitation of contemporary Ukrainian literature by Romanticism becomes more transparent if we consider aspects of the style and construction of the novel. Several elements of the frame narrative impart to it a mysterious, rarefied, abstract, or, to use a term favoured by Soviet critics, "mythologizing" character. The first among these is Shevchuk's style, which is poetic in the sense that it excludes the impression of randomness and fortuity. In Shevchuk's deliberate, measured, even solemn diction, words are replete with associations; the reader is encouraged by the seriousness of the style to believe that each image has its place within a dense and thought-through system of symbols. Second, the connection of the narrative to the real world is the object of mystification, which distances the narrated events from "public" history and places them in an abstract sphere of their own. (Shevchuk frequently gives exact numbers of years between events, but rarely historical points of reference; thus, while a chronology may be constructed through the careful collation of such clues, the reader is frequently at sea as to the narrative "now.") Finally, the frame story is, in an important respect, archaic: it presents a narrative that consists of a ritual reiteration of the known. The myth of the house on the hill is directly enunciated by one of the characters, and subsequent narration confirms the truth and reliability of the myth.

The second half of the novel, notwithstanding its seventeenth-century setting and fantastic subject matter, is much more modern in narrative structure. Its twelve constituent stories are *Novellen*—narratives of linear structure that arrest the reader's interest through unusual themes, dramatic tension, and unexpected twists and resolutions of the plot. Their supernatural content, derived from Ukrainian folklore, ensures the sensation of pleasurable fear. They presuppose a modern reader-as-consumer who demands effects: excitement, wonder, delight.

The twelve stories are excellent exemplars of their genre—an assertion that, unfortunately, cannot be demonstrated within the compass of this study. The world that they delineate contrasts with that of the frame narrative: it is a realm of uncertainty and dread, often depicted as grotesque or absurd, in which the boundary between good and evil is unstable and in which the human being is possessed by unfulfillable (often erotic) desire on the one hand and inexplicable evil on the other.

If we recollect that the stories are the product of the creative labours of Ivan the goatherd, then it becomes reasonable to suggest that they represent an interpretation of the (riven, tortured, fragmented) "modern" world from the

---

40. Mykola Zhulynsky, "... I spovishchaie nam holos travy," afterword to Shevchuk, *Dim na hori*, 468–86, here 479.

perspective of the (harmonious, humane) archaic Romantic vision of the seer, their seventeenth-century settings notwithstanding.

Yet, if this is all the argument of *Dim na hori*—a critique of modernity and a plea for a more archaic ideal of human life, another delayed neo-Romanticism like that of, say, Hermann Hesse (whose style Shevchuk's at times distinctly resembles)—then the accusation of excessive abstraction and remoteness, which is sometimes levelled at Shevchuk,<sup>41</sup> would have some substance. Read on this level, the work appears, in addition, excessively generalized: the "modernity" that emerges from the stories applies equally to many cultural milieux since the 1880s. It is the attribute of every place and time—and therefore of none.

But such a reading would be incomplete—indeed, it would ignore one of the argumentative strata of the novel. For the work is, above all, a polemic against the whimsical novel, the subgenre whose defining topoi—country, folklore, fantasy, history—it takes over and imbues with new meaning. The non-urban space (it seems scarcely appropriate to call it "countryside") is *not* village, *not* province, but *landscape*, in which symbolic places and things (hill, road, river, mist, sunset) are located. History is no longer a museum to be plundered for colourful costumes and quirks of Old World behaviour or for confirmation of politically expedient myths, but an alienating background that permits the sharper formulation of issues and problems from an unexpected, non-contemporary perspective. The ethnographic is not local colour, but a medium that releases the plot from realistic reference and opens it up, like the *Kunstmärchen*, to a multitude of readings. Humour—the element that above all is the medium for the dismissive, trivializing, and prestige-denying treatment of the history-folklore-country complex—is necessarily absent.

The aesthetic strategy embodied in *Dim na hori* permitted an escape from the judgment of national culture, which was conventional in the whimsical novel. Shevchuk's work unambiguously marked its participation in a national literary tradition, freed its thematic and motivic markers from their standard negative associations, and thereby proposed the tradition to be a viable and natural medium for a literature open to any self-defined literary tasks.

---

41. See, e.g., Mykola Riabchuk, "Te, shcho vyvyshchuie liudynu," *Ukraina*, 1984, no. 45: 11.



# The Function of Time in Lina Kostenko's Dramatic Works

Walter Smyrniw

*Немає моря глибшого, ніж Час*  
(There is no deeper sea than Time)

Lina Kostenko

References to time are infrequent in Lina Kostenko's first three poetry collections, *Prominnia zemli* (Rays of the Earth [Kyiv: Molod], 1957)), *Vitryla* (Sails [Kyiv: Radianskyi pysmennyk, 1958]), and *Mandrivky sertsia* (Wanderings of the Heart [Kyiv: Radianskyi pysmennyk, 1961]). But a notable change is evident in her next, much later, collection, *Nad berehamy vichnoi riky* (On the Banks of the Eternal River, 1977). There the references to time are not only much more numerous but focussed on various perceptions of time, on its impact on the lives of individuals, societies, and nations. For example, Kostenko states the following about the role of time in contemporary life:

Шалені темпи. Час не наша власність.  
Фантастика — не мріяв і Жюль Верн.  
Кипить у нас в артеріях сучасність.  
Нас із металу виклепав модерн.<sup>1</sup>

Similarly, in another poem in that collection she asserts that “Життя іде і все без коректур. / І час летить, не стишує галоу ...” (Life goes on without any proofreading. / And time flies by without slowing its gallop ...) and “Не знаю я, що буде після нас, / В які природа убереться шати...” (I do not know what shall come after us, / What finery nature shall don”; and in another

---

1. “Frenzied tempos. Time is not our property. / It's science fiction—Undreamt of even by Jules Verne. / The present is boiling in our arteries. / Modernity has wrought us out of metal” (Lina Kostenko, *Nad berehamy vichnoi riky: Poezii* [Kyiv: Radianskyi pysmennyk, 1977], 19).



stanza she observes: “Буває часом дивне відчуття,— / що час іде, а я собі окремо” (At times I have a strange feeling / that time is passing but I am not a part of it).<sup>2</sup> Kostenko makes analogous comments about time in her fifth collection of poems, *Nepovtornist* (Uniqueness, 1980). There she also makes astute observations about the impact of time on human life. To cite but one example:

Не час минає, а минаєм ми.  
А ми минаєм ... ми минаєм ... так-то ...  
А час — це тільки відбивання такту  
Тік-так, тік-так ... і в цьому вся трагічність.  
Час — не хвилини, час — віки і вічність  
А день, і ніч, і звечора до рання —  
це тільки віхи цього проминання.<sup>3</sup>

Kostenko's preoccupation with the phenomenon of time can also be discerned in her next collection, *Sad netanuchykh skulptur* (The Garden of Unmelting Sculptures, 1987). But there she no longer limits herself to depicting time's effects on various aspects of life. By way of striking metaphors and direct allusions she touches on several temporal notions, including cyclical time, linear time, the bidirectional time flow, and space-time continuum.<sup>4</sup> Whereas some of the above concepts are derived from theoretical physics, others are taken from the linguistic theory of Ferdinand de Saussure, who introduced in his *Cours de linguistique générale* (1916) diachronic and synchronic concepts of time. He employed the term “diachronic” to designate the chronological and historical evolutions in languages, and the term “synchronic” to describe the structure of a language at a given point in time. Evidently Kostenko is well-acquainted with these concepts of time, since she employs de Saussure's terminology in an allusion to Homer's *Odyssey*: “То добре, що в гекзаметрах синхронно /

---

2. Ibid., 41, 44.

3. “It's not time passing but we who are passing. / And we are passing ... we are passing ... Just like that ... / And time is but tapping out the measure / Tick-tock, tick-tock ... and that's the whole tragedy. / Time is not minutes, time is eons and eternity. / And day, and night, and from nightfall to dawn / Are but markers of this passage of time” (Lina Kostenko, *Nepovtornist: Virshi, poemu* [Kyiv: Molod, 1980], 61).

4. The following examples are from Lina Kostenko, *Sad netanuchykh skulptur: Virshi, poema-balada, dramatychni poemu* (Kyiv: Radianskyi pysmennyk, 1987). Cyclical time: “Для грека час не мчався. Навпаки. / Час був циклічний” (p. 118). Linear time: “усі ідуть за часом, як за плугом” (p. 7); “Час пролітає з реактивним свистом” (p. 9). Bidirectional time: “Конвеєр часу — тільки врзнобіг — один в минуле, другий у майбутнє” (p. 190). Space-time continuum: “Тим часом ми проходимо крізь час” (p. 10); “зустріч в просторі і в часі” (p. 95); “на місці їде віз, / І все з ним розминається” (p. 180); “протікання в часі кількох процесів” (p. 201).

живі і мертві води жебонять.”<sup>5</sup> One should note here that Kostenko uses the term “synchronically” to characterize both the linguistic forms and architectonic aspects of this literary monument.

A close reading of *Sad netanuchykh skulptur* reveals that during the 1980s Kostenko continued to reflect on various concepts of time and to integrate them into the architectonic features of her works, especially in her “dramatic poems” “Snih u Florentsii” (Snow in Florence, 1983–85) and “Duma pro brativ neazovskykh” (*Duma* about the Non-Azov Brothers, 1984).<sup>6</sup> These narrative poems represent the point where Kostenko’s diverse comments about the impact of time on life and art, the temporal concepts derived from de Saussure, and some scientific theories about time converge.

On the first page of “Snih u Florentsii” Kostenko states that the drama’s setting is a monastery in Tours, France during the sixteenth century. By the end of the work it is clear that the events transpire in a single night. Thus, the three-act structure of the poem encompasses a short time period and offers only a glimpse into the lives of three monks living at the monastery. But within this brief span of time Kostenko also manages to present a much more extensive period of time from the life of the Old Man who is staying at the monastery. She reveals that his real name is Giovanni Francesco Rustici, an Italian sculptor of the Renaissance (1474–1554). In short, Kostenko utilizes the time sequence of one night to present historical events that transpired during a previous period. As a rule authors employ the flashback technique to interject events from the past into another time frame. But Kostenko does not employ this literary device to such ends. Instead she offers the present and the historical time sequence simultaneously. On the whole she achieves this by utilizing the synchronic and diachronic concepts of time.

The synchronic parameters of “Snih u Florentsii” can be discerned in the flow of real time during the three acts, which extend from nightfall to dawn, whereas diachronic time prevails only in act two. Therefore the progression of synchronic time is both continuous and concrete, whereas diachronic time is an abstract form of historical time and, as such, can be disrupted, resumed, and even traversed in a backward and forward direction. This is repeatedly demonstrated in act two of “Snih u Florentsii” as the reader is reminded of the abstract nature of diachronic time by the intrusions of chronological events. For example, while the events from Rustici’s life are being presented diachronically, an apple drops from a tree,

---

5. “It’s good that in the hexameters / [both] vital and dead waters murmur synchronically” (ibid., 97).

6. Traditionally the “*duma*” has meant a folk epic about Ukrainian Cossacks that is usually recited to the accompaniment of a stringed instrument (either a *kobza* or a *bandura*). But Kostenko employs the term to delineate a dramatic depiction of the valour, altruism, and self-sacrifice of the Cossacks in the seventeenth century.

Brother Dominic comes and asks the Old Man to whom he is speaking, and later one hears the splashing of oars, the barking of dogs, the falling of another apple, and the crowing of a rooster.<sup>7</sup>

The recurring dances of the nine muses, the chants and laments of the statues, and the comments from the "Shaggy Demon" provide further digressions and disruptions in the historical and abstract rendition of time. Moreover, by way of an authorial comment, Kostenko interjects more than four centuries of future historical time into the diachronic rendition of Rustici's biography. When Rustici declares that he is a worthless sculptor and that it is not even known that he had cast the bronze figures standing at the Baptistery of St. John in Florence, Kostenko repudiates this with the following authorial assertion:

Десь високо вгорі — у відсвітах пожеж —  
скульптурна група: *бронзові фігури*,  
котрі вивершують вже майже п'ять сторіч  
портал північної церкви Сан-Джованні.<sup>8</sup>

It is worth noting that Kostenko not only presents the above vision of the sculptures of John the Baptist, the Levite, and the Pharisee, which have survived for nearly five centuries, but goes on to comment about the impact that the inserted vision makes on the historical event: on seeing the time-tested vision of the sculptures, the "Shaggy Demon" goes up in smoke and disappears, whereas Rustici "побожно дивиться на свій же власний твір" (piously contemplates his own creation).<sup>9</sup>

The main source of the historical time and the biographical information on Rustici is the celebrated *Lives of the Most Eminent Painters, Sculptors and Architects* by Giorgio Vasari (originally published in 1550 and 1568). A former student of Michelangelo and a highly successful painter, Vasari was personally acquainted with many of the famous artists about whom he wrote, and his work was enthusiastically received by his contemporaries and highly acclaimed thereafter. Kostenko acknowledges this source by alluding to the writings of the "genius Vasari." Utilizing the biographical information in her work, she transforms the chronological structure of the prototype into a dialogical rendition of Rustici's life, which entails two temporal perspectives. Hence in "Snih u Florentsii" Rustici's life and career are highlighted, scrutinized, and evaluated simultaneously from the points of view of a young Florentine and the Old Man,

7. Kostenko, "Snih u Florentsii: Dramatychna poema," in her *Sad netanuchykh skulptur*, 139, 146, 153, 167.

8. "Somewhere high above—in the reflections of fires— / stands a group sculpture: *bronze figures* / that have crowned for almost five centuries / the northern portal of St. John's Church." (ibid., 145).

9. Ibid.

both of whom personify the alter egos, or rather the youth and old age, of Rustici himself.

During the course of the dialogue the Florentine and the Old Man dwell not only on the most important events in Rustici's life and his creative accomplishments and failures, but also on the impact of time on the fate of artists and their works. In their arguments both are given to contentious claims, but as a rule the Old Man's views carry more weight since they are based on observations and first-hand experiences with the deleterious effects of time. He points out how some works of art never reach posterity because the artists may be compelled to create something that cannot last beyond the present day. The Old Man illustrates this by alluding to an episode described by Vasari. As Vasari puts it, "One winter, when much snow fell in Florence," Michelangelo's patron, Piero de' Medici, "caused him to make in his courtyard a statue of snow, which was very beautiful."<sup>10</sup> Vasari makes no mention of it, but the Old Man points out that it was a colossal statue that lasted only until the sun began shining.

From this laconic episode in Vasari's biography of Michelangelo, Kostenko derives not only the title for her dramatic poem but also its focal imagery. The thawing snow and melting statues metaphorically represent the masterpieces that have disappeared in the course of time. In the dialogue between the Florentine and the Old Man the fact that many of Rustici's works did not survive the ravages of time is repeatedly accentuated. Drawing on this metaphor, the Old Man states that often he too had to sculpt snow in marble ("Ліпити сніг у мармурі"),<sup>11</sup> and he mentions a number of his works that were destroyed, disappeared without a trace, or could not be completed owing to unexpected developments. With the passage of time not only do the statues vanish, but their sculptor also disappears. In the beginning of act two Rustici declares: "Мене немає. Був. / Під впливом часу камінь розкришився."<sup>12</sup>

Adhering to the biographical details provided by Vasari, Kostenko concentrates on the events in Rustici's life that contributed to the loss or destruction of his art. However, unlike Vasari, she presents an alternative to such a fate by introducing the notion of an eternal preservation of art forms. This too is expressed through a striking metaphor conveyed by the Old Man:

Душа б зазнала цих тортур,  
якби на світі десь лишився  
мій Сад нетаничих Скульптур?!<sup>13</sup>

10. Giorgio Vasari, *Lives of the Most Eminent Painters, Sculptors and Architects*, vol. 9, trans. Gaston du C. De Vere (London: Macmillan, 1912), 11.

11. Kostenko, "Snih u Florentsii," 144.

12. "I am no longer here. I was. / Under the influence of time the stone has crumbled" (*ibid.*, 134).

13. "Would [my] soul have known these tortures / if somewhere in the world there still



The "Garden of Unmelting Sculptures" represents an ideal that could not be attained in Rustici's life. His awareness of this turns into spiritual anguish, for he realizes that since his statues have melted like snow, in posterity there will be no trace left of his creative endeavours, no true measure of his artistic stature.

Through the dramatic rendition of Rustici's life Kostenko touches on various phenomena that emanate from the passage of time. Prominent among them is the notion of existence per se, for Kostenko prompts the reader to consider the following possibility in the life of an artist: if his works of art do not survive in time and space, will posterity be able to appreciate their structure and aesthetic qualities, or, for that matter, have any respect for the creator of such art? Having read "Snih u Florentsii," one cannot reflect on this problem without taking into account Rustici's case history. First of all, in the first act the reader discerns that the monks do not know his true identity, but believe that the Old Man was not a bad artist in the past since he did carve an excellent set of chess figures for them. By the same token, in the last act, when the Old Man vanishes and the statue of Mariella suddenly appears, the monks are enraptured by the beauty of the sculpture, but they do not know that this is the work of Rustici. Under such circumstances the monks, that is, the beholders of art at this point in time, are incapable of duly appreciating the statue or its creator because they do not know the real identity of either of them.

Kostenko's formulation of the above philosophical question, or, more precisely, her postulation of the ontological problem, reverberates with several notions that have emanated from existentialist philosophy. Although we lack adequate information about Kostenko's reading preferences and her literary and philosophical interests, there is reason to believe that she is acquainted with some of Jean-Paul Sartre's writings, because his famous philosophical axiom, "existence precedes essence," and its inherent implication that "man negates the nothingness of the world by creating an essence for himself and a structure for the world"<sup>14</sup> is certainly questioned, if not repudiated, through the depiction of time in "Snih u Florentsii."

In contrast to "Snih u Florentsii," where both the time and place are specified from the very start, the setting of Kostenko's second dramatic poem is not spelled out. But its title, "Duma pro brativ nezovskikh," and the list of well-known historical figures serve as clear signals to informed readers that the events transpire in the seventeenth century. Later, this is confirmed by an explicit reference to 1638, the year when Hetman Pavliuk and his loyal friends were betrayed by their fellow Cossacks, taken to Poland, and executed. But at this

---

remained / my Garden of Unmelting Sculptures?!" (ibid., 168).

14. Quoted in William L. Reese, *Dictionary of Philosophy and Religion: Eastern and Western Thought* (Atlantic Highlands, N.J.: Humanities Press, 1980), 509.



point the historical setting is suddenly distorted, because the scene shifts to a later period in which a "contemporary" woman is rocking a baby carriage and studying the historical events recorded in the Lviv Chronicle under the year 1638. In the next instant the setting changes once again, and for the first time the reader realizes that this dramatic poem is set not in the historical past but in the twenty-first century.

As this is an extraordinary and unprecedented treatment of time in Ukrainian literature, it has surprised and confused not only regular readers but also highly respected literary scholars. Mark Holberg, for example, has concluded that the temporal shifts disrupt the unity of the work;<sup>15</sup> similarly, V"iacheslav Briukhovetsky is of the opinion that the poet is inserting "motifs from the twentieth century" to show how the Lviv Chronicle is read in our era by people who subject the text to computer analyses.<sup>16</sup> These inferences stem from a misreading of the text or, more precisely, from a disregard of authorial comments about the setting and the function of time.

The opening statement of the dramatic poem, "На місці їде віз" (At a standstill a wagon is travelling) is repeated several times to alert the reader that time is not flowing in the customary manner. Furthermore, Kostenko underscores the fact that she is not presenting a realistic account of history when she alludes to a windmill, "not necessarily a realistic one," that Don Quixote attacked in Ukraine and consequently was trapped there forever because his spear got stuck in the vane of the windmill.<sup>17</sup> But the reason for the temporal shifts and distortions remains unclear until the reader encounters a computer speaking with an "electronic voice" and a programmer identified as "a person from the twenty-first century."<sup>18</sup> Only then does it become apparent that the hitherto presented kaleidoscope of time was generated by a computer running a program designed to download vistas from the historical past.

From the programmer's interaction with the computer in the futuristic setting the reader gradually becomes aware of the factors facilitating the procedure that can best be described as time processing or the capture of what Lina Kostenko calls the "winds of history." Although the programmer's explanations, such as "протікання в часі кількох процесів" (the flow through time of multiplex processes), sound as baffling as any computer jargon of our time, the main clues about this computer project are not given in the programmers' discourse but in the authorial comments that Kostenko provides. From them one can surmise that

---

15. Mark Holberg, "'Dusha tysiacholit shukaie sebe v slovi': Rozdumy nad knyzhkoiu Liny Kostenko 'Sad netanuchykh skulptur,'" *Zhovten*, 1988, no. 6: 100-9.

16. V. S. Briukhovetsky, *Lina Kostenko: Narys tvorchosti* (Kyiv: Dnipro, 1990), 234.

17. Kostenko, "Duma pro bratv nezovskykh," in *Sad netanuchykh skulptur*, 189.

18. *Ibid.*, 200.

the future project is operating in accordance with some theories of time that were formulated in our century. One of them pertains to the relativity of time, to which the poet alludes explicitly when she states that “На місці їде віз, і все з ним розминається — / дерева, люди, обрії, зірки” (At a standstill a wagon is travelling, and everything is passing by it— / trees, people, horizons, stars).<sup>19</sup> This is not the place to dwell on the theory of the relativity of time, but it may be in order to state that, in the context of this theory, it is deemed “possible for an event to take place in the ‘past’ of one observer and in the ‘future’ of another.”<sup>20</sup> The other twentieth-century scientific theory of time mentioned in this dramatic poem pertains to the flow of time, which, according to some physicists, entails a movement of time in different directions. Kostenko refers to it in the following comment through the image of a “conveyer of time” that is moving the people in opposite temporal directions:

А може, це *кобзар* їх проминає  
Конвейер часу — тільки врізнобіч —  
один в минуле, другий у майбутнє.  
Отак всі й розминаються навік.<sup>21</sup>

The depiction of scientific concepts of time and even advanced technology indicates that, as a contemporary poet, Lina Kostenko is capable of conceiving the possibility of a future technology that would make it possible to access, save, and store the historical currents of time. But it is also apparent that she does not have a high regard for the role to be played by future historians. She shows that after capturing the data from the “winds of history” they are incapable of understanding and evaluating the information because they fail to comprehend the significance of the antithesis between the selfish and cowardly acts exemplified by the Azov brothers (the data derived from the *duma*) and the valour displayed in real life situations by the non-Azov Cossack brethren, Pavliuk, Tomylenko, and Sakhno. In the end, all that future technology-oriented historians can infer from the new data is that it would be desirable to have a *duma* also about the non-Azov Cossacks, and hence they relegate the task of writing it to the computer. Kostenko spares no irony or sarcasm in the depiction of the *duma* about Sakhno Cherniak composed by the electronic *kobzar* (bard) of the twenty-first century:

---

19. Ibid., 180.

20. Richard Morris, *Time's Arrows: Scientific Attitudes toward Time* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1984), 157.

21. “But perhaps it’s the *bard* passing them. / A conveyer of time, only in opposite directions— / one into the past, another into the future. / That’s how we all pass each other into eternity” (Kostenko, “Duma pro bratv neazovskykh,” 190).

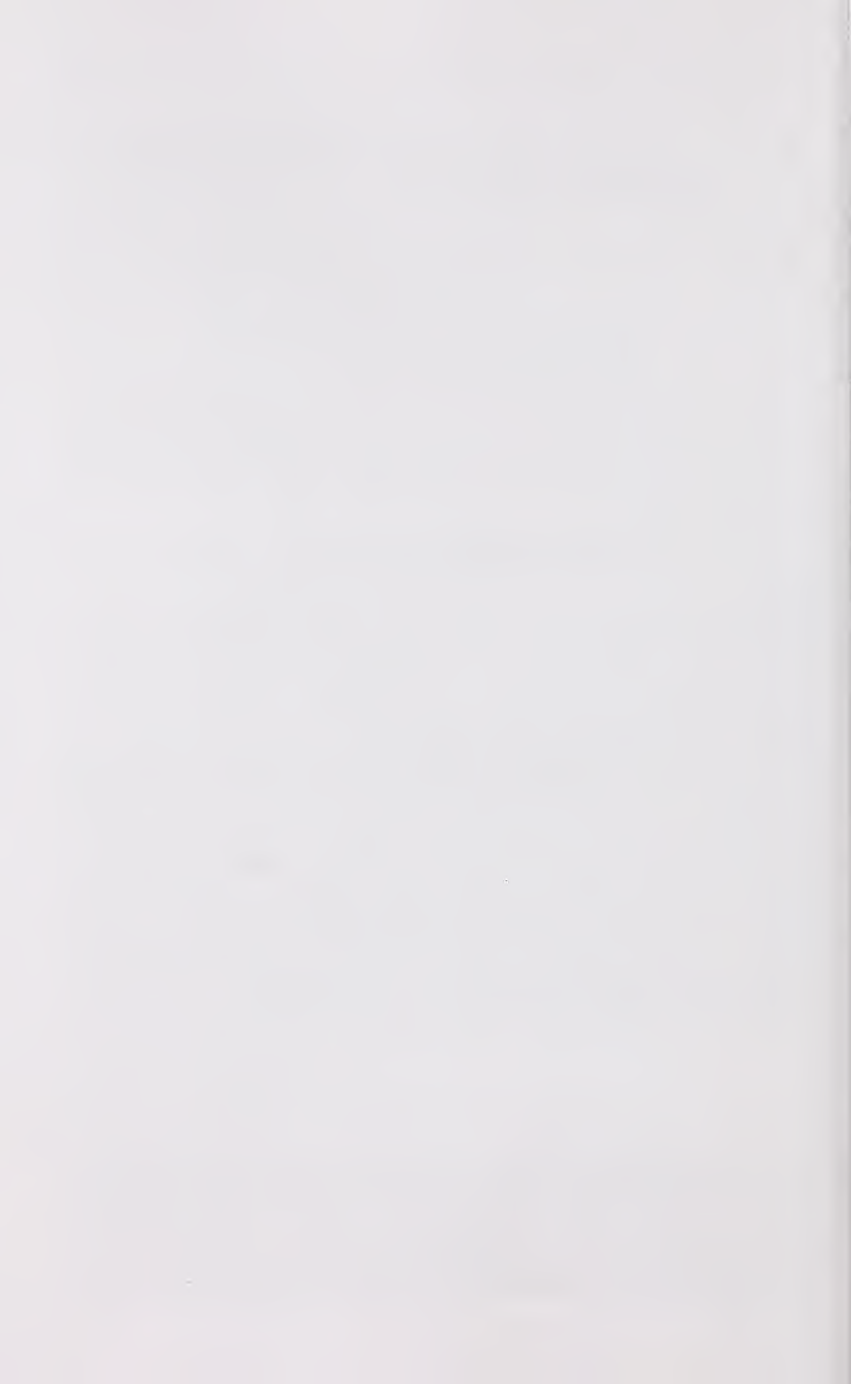
З комп'ютера чутно якесь потріскування.  
 Крізь технічні шуми й потік інформації проривається  
 трагічний речитатив *думи*:  
 «Із города Боровиці (Черкаська область) то не тумани  
     великі вставали,  
 То Павлюка (гетьман нереєстрового козацтва)  
     із Томиленком (початок XVII століття)  
     уночі безоружних ізв'язали ...  
 Два брати кінних, а третій піший-пішаниця,  
 За кінними братами поспішає,  
 За стременечка хватає ...»<sup>22</sup>

From this recitation it is quite obvious that the logical but mindless machine only repeats and crudely distorts the data stored in its memory (the same verses of the seventeenth-century *duma* about the Azov brothers that the reader encountered a few pages earlier).

One should note that the preceding illustrations of the function of time in Kostenko's dramatic poems are by no means exhaustive. But even a limited number of examples illustrates how the poet uses various temporal concepts in the architectonic features of her works, in the dramatic rendition of the impact of time on the characters, and in the delineation of the relevance of time to philosophical issues pertaining to human existence. Inasmuch as Kostenko designates both "Snih u Florentsii" and "Duma pro bratuv neazovskykh" as dramatic poems instead of plays, there is reason to believe that she intended these works to be read rather than performed. Kostenko's intention to familiarize her readers of belles lettres with some of the major concepts of time that have evolved in our century is certainly a significant innovation in Ukrainian literature. But it does not follow from this that the above dramatic poems are unsuitable for staging. They could, perhaps, be adapted for the stage with much greater success than Kostenko's novel in verse *Marusia Churai* (1979) if, in the future, a gifted director, brave and imaginative, rises to the challenge of effectively showing on stage the many aspects of time or what Kostenko's programmer calls the "flow through time of multiplex processes."

---

22. "From the computer some sort of crackling noise is heard. / Through the technical noise and flow of information breaks out / a *duma*'s tragic recitation: / 'From the town of Borovytsia (Cherkasy oblast) it was not / great fogs rising / But Pavliuk (hetman of the unregistered Cossack army) / and Tomylenko (turn of the seventeenth century) / unarmed being bound at night ... / Two brothers were on horseback, while a third on foot was going, / Hastening after [his] mounted brothers [and] / Grabbing hold of their stirrups " (ibid., 203).



# The Poetry of Kostiantyn Moskalets, Natalka Bilotserkivets, and Viktor Kordun

*Halyna Koscharsky*

The delegitimation of the Communist regime in Eastern Europe in the 1980s was accompanied in Ukraine by a populist mobilization that in effect deprived the writer, and particularly the poet, of his previous role as a political voice. The countless new democratic political parties that quickly came into being were often organized and led by the country's literary figures, who were translating their earlier literary activity into political energy.<sup>1</sup>

The reading public may have expected the literary freedoms of a newly independent country to ensure a surge of emotive and thematically nationalistic writing.<sup>2</sup> Especially in the poetic genre, there was the expectation of a wave of celebratory, sentimentally nationalistic verse. But the result, has increasingly been poetry dealing with themes such as everyday existence, the philosophical questions of life and death, religion, the nature of humanity, personal relationships, and nature—that is, themes concerned with the self, with social and individual problems, that are mostly inward looking and largely oblivious of the nation as an entity.<sup>3</sup> In fact, the practical use of nationalism in writing is now

---

1. At the time George S. N. Luckyj wrote that "The new atmosphere of openness and free discussion has been very stimulating for the flow of new ideas, but less so for creative writing. Many authors, busy with politics, have no time or desire to write" (*Ukrainian Literature in the Twentieth Century: A Reader's Guide* [Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1992], 106).

2. For a discussion of literary theme and its impact on national consciousness before independence, see my article "Literaturna tematyka ta ii vplyv na natsionalnu svidomist," in *Ukraine in the 1990s*, ed. Marko Pavlyshyn and J. E. M. Clarke (Clayton, Vic.: Monash University, Slavic Section, 1992), 110.

3. Cf. Michael Naydan's analysis of prose themes in "Ukrainian Prose of the 1990s as It Reflects Contemporary Social Structures," *The Ukrainian Quarterly* 51, no. 1 (Spring 1995): 45–61.



limited. It still finds a voice in the poetry of Dmytro Pavlychko, Antonina Lystopad, Volodymyr Zatuliyviter, and Olha Strashenko, for example, but the evocation of nationalist sentiment on a grand scale now rightly belongs to political parties and no longer to the writer.

Having passed that initial "post-colonial moment,"<sup>4</sup> the writer has turned to "normal" themes, thereby hoping to address a number of publics, among them an international audience. As Michael Naydan puts it, "the current political realities do not particularly interest today's reading public".<sup>5</sup>

In an article that provides a general socio-linguistic analysis of the work of nine young poets of the 1980s,<sup>6</sup> Attyla Mohylny lists the following overriding themes: folklore (with subcategories of demonology, musical intertextuality, Cossack and insurgent folklore, urban and romantic folklore, that which concerns the folk calendar, folk customs, and folkways); myth-making; national trades; occupations and commerce; biblical motifs; the Middle Ages and the Renaissance; personal everyday life; antiquity and the ancient world; native literature; the Second World War; music; art; references to Communist society; the era of the princes and principalities; twentieth-century European art; and the politics of the nineteenth to early twentieth centuries. Mohylny makes the point that these themes reflect, at least partially, "the social stereotype of associative technique, since part of them may be identified as direct reference, or reference by association, to the authority of the source of the poetic text (motifs from the Bible, from antiquity and the princely era, the Middle Ages, and the Renaissance, and so on)."<sup>7</sup> These texts were published between 1982 and 1987 and would have been written mainly during the first half of the decade, just before the literary and political thaw resulting from glasnost. Therefore their authors tended to avoid openly political themes.

In comparison to these texts, those published during the years 1993–96 are characterized by melancholy, pessimism, and often a cynical tone.<sup>8</sup> Death,

4. Marko Pavlyshyn discusses Ukraine's "post-colonial moment" in "Postkoloniialna khvylyna: Ukrainska kultura pislia SRSR," in *Ukraine Today—Perspectives for the Future: Proceedings of the Conference "Ukraine Today—Perspectives for the Future," 19–21 June 1992, Macquarie University, School of Modern Languages, Ukrainian Studies Centre, Sydney, 1993*, ed. Halyna Koscharsky (Commack, N.Y.: Nova Science Publishers, 1995), 149.

5. Maikl Naidan [Michael Naydan], "Dvoie ukrainskykh poetiv: Attyla Mohylny i Oksana Zabuzhko," *Suchasnist*, 1993, no. 7: 77.

6. Attyla Mohylny, "Sotsiolinhvistychnyi analiz molodoi poezii visimdesiatnykiv," *Slovo i chas*, 1995, no. 2: 49–52. The nine poets he discusses are Iurii Andrukhovych, Vasyl Herasymiuk, Oleksandr Hrytsenko, Oksana Zabuzhko, Ihor Malenky, Ivan Malkovych, Petro Midianka, Ihor Rymaruk, and Oksana Chubachivna.

7. *Ibid.*, 53.

8. I have focussed mainly on poetry that was published in *Suchasnist* from January

symbolic or actual, combined with a questioning of human nature, leads to ironic conclusions regarding the purpose of life. Rather than an expression of joy at new-found freedom, there is an all-pervasive sense of loss—both in personal relationships and in the wider context. The visual form continues to develop along postmodern lines; often a complete absence of punctuation provides the text with a sense of visual openness that contrasts strongly with the hermetic nature of its highly symbolic expression.

A sense of deepening cynicism and disillusionment was already evident in Kostiantyn Moskalets's meditative poetry of the 1980s:

... Поглянь,  
Де ми знаходимось — ти  
погодишся: тільки хоробрий і чесний народ  
міг опинитися тут.<sup>9</sup>

The irony of these words, coming at the end of a sensitive overview of Ukraine's history, is replaced in the 1990s by an authoritative omniscience in the long poem "Dlia troiandy" (For the Rose):

Люди не ті, за кого їх вважають;  
не ті, за кого видають себе;  
.....  
Постійно стережися  
великої зараженості і заразності  
кожної людини  
без винятку  
.....  
Люди дуже люблять завдавати біль;  
муки подібних їм і неподібних  
приносять людям насолоду;  
що більші муки, то більша насолода;  
.....  
Недобросовісність,  
відсутність культури духу та мислення  
витворили огидний світ,  
у якому існує людина.<sup>10</sup>

---

1993 to April 1996.

9. "...Observe / Where we find ourselves—[and] you / will agree: only a brave and an honourable nation / could have found itself here" (Kostiantyn Moskalets, "Iz tsyklu 'Dumy', VIII," in *Visimdesiatnyky: Antolohiia novoi ukrainskoi poezii*, ed. Ihor Rymaruk [Edmonton: Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies Press, 1990], 132.

10. "People are not as we imagine them; / not those they pass themselves off to be"; "Guard constantly / against great contamination and infection / by each person / without exception"; "People really love to inflict pain; / the sufferings of those like them and

Moskalets's view of humanity and the extended definition of reality that follows these words are presented in a repetitive, sermonlike fashion. It gives way to a different style in an untitled text in the section called "Spalennia knyhy" (The Burning of the Book)<sup>11</sup> from "Knyha radosty" (The Book of Joy): here he combines the biblical with the everyday, consciously creating a scene that causes the reader some discomfort by treating Mary and Jesus as if they were indistinguishable from the crowd, and with very human reactions to everyday situations. Mary is hesitant about crossing the River Seim, so the writer, who "had already learned how to hold infants," "will bravely take God in my arms" to cross the frozen river with her. The writer's description of Jesus's reaction at being left behind with the donkey—"and Jesus will watch with his grey eyes / like an ox who has been left on the bank / touching the ice with his boot / unable to resolve to walk across"—suggests a postmodern approach that purposely "undermines" the traditional authority of the subjects, combining the divine with the everyday and constructing new relationships.

These relationships, to which Moskalets usually refers in the first person by Moskalets, transcend accepted notions: in "Dlia troiandy," for example, the writer addresses a rose as his first love. Although aware of the rose as a symbol of purity in opposition to humanity, whose hypocrisy the writer despises, the reader nevertheless finds this protracted address strange ("these loathsome slaves were jealous of our love, / rose ... my love ..."). Moskalets's development of constructed relationships cuts across concepts of time, juxtaposing divine entities with his own mortal self in a contemporary setting. This "undermining" of conventional attitudes in literature extends to a partial deconstruction of the image of Christ at the crossing of the river, in what may seem an irreverent way: "and little Christ will cry / and we will rejoice." Since the entire scene takes place at Christmas, the chronological incongruity of Moskalets's picture of Jesus left behind crying on the bank of the river combines with the knowledge that the setting is Baturyn. The name of this town is known to the Ukrainian reader as a seventeenth-century Cossack company centre and the Left-Bank hetman's capital; in 1708 it was sacked and burned by Russian troops for its inhabitants' support of Hetman Ivan Mazepa. This knowledge creates a complex historical background to the simple story of the river crossing, the word "rejoice" contrasting starkly with the historical reality of the region.

---

those unlike them / brings people pleasure; / the greater the sufferings, the greater the pleasure"; "Unscrupulousness, / the absence of culture of spirit and thought / have created a repulsive world, / in which the individual exists" (Kostiantyn Moskalets, "Dlia troiandy," *Suchasnist*, 1993, no. 1: 5, 8, 9).

11. Kostiantyn Moskalets, "Spalennia knyhy," in *Suchasnist*, 1994, no. 10: 9–10.

The scene on the river is described in the future tense, thus adding further tension to the concept of time. The intertextual references—some biblical, such as the book the writer is completing while anticipating this simple scene, and others historical, for example, the name of the town and the river, or relating to Ukrainian traditions and customs—are introduced in a particularly understated manner, thereby indirectly making these historical and religious events appear as a natural component of everyday life. The idea that the writer anticipates taking the place of Jesus as part of the trinity that enters the church (the other two members being the traditional Mother of God and God the Father) also creates tension, but the character of the tension depends entirely on the reader's religious or non-religious persuasion. The writer is visible only as an innocent and fairly naïve character in the scene; the reader is left to construct the discourse according to his own interpretations, with little assistance from authorial comment. The historical significance of Baturyn is not referred to. The interweaving of historically significant names with insignificant, everyday events and the mention of an infant's tears in the absence of any reference to the massacre of thousands at Baturyn may be regarded as a postmodern version of a tale based on the Bible.

Although political realities may not interest today's reading public in the same way that they did before independence, social realities do. Natalka Bilotserkivets's cynical, sometimes devastating poetic account of life in Ukrainian society was, in the 1980s, "a very bitter but also very sober recognition that she is opening the way to a courageous awareness of [her country's] fate."<sup>12</sup> Six years later her poetry reflects the disillusionment and absolute dullness of life after independence. References to earlier days "lived out by us," to days when "greasy bloody stains covered the pavement — / the rains washed them away" (alluding to the Soviet era), run parallel with "the demagogues and democrats — / still lazy and obtuse, / and sometimes one just wants to vomit / over the golden *sharovary*, over the laws, retouched with paint — / the miserable goods, corruptly bright ..."<sup>13</sup>

Despite the dominant cynicism of her early poetry, Bilotserkivets does occasionally express some hope for her country.<sup>14</sup> Her newer poetry, though critical of society, sometimes ends on a positive note: "Will we survive long enough to see Washington? / we will survive to see it some day!"<sup>15</sup> This is in direct contrast to the 1980s text with its black prediction: "ми помрем не в Парижі тепер я напевно це знаю / в провінційній постелі що потом

12. Mykola Riabchuk, "My pomrem ne v Paryzhi," preface to *Visimdesiatnyky*, xiv.

13. Natalka Bilotserkivets, "Alergiia," *Suchasnist*, 1994, no. 9: 5–6. My trans.

14. See, for example, her poem "Kalyna" (A Guelder-Rose), in *Visimdesiatnyky*, 11.

15. Bilotserkivets did, in fact, visit Washington in 1994 and 1995.



кишить і слізьми.”<sup>16</sup> “Paris,” representing a city of highly developed culture, stands here in binary opposition to “the provinces”—a cultural desert that may exist anywhere, even within the boundaries of a large city.

But the new sense of optimism belongs to only one side of a thematic dichotomy in Bilotserkivets's poetry. It may be said that “our socially given identities as feminine and masculine, and the differential access to social power and privilege those identities entail, shape the writing and reading of texts of all kinds, including poetry.”<sup>17</sup> Bilotserkivets's poetic voice is, on the one hand, the voice of the sophisticated, detached writer. On the other, she is the harassed mother of small children who symbolizes, at least in part, what Marko Pavlyshyn refers to as “after an eternal and tragic attachment to the past and the future, the arrival of the present.”<sup>18</sup> The listing of the difficulties of inner-city living (allergies, queues, illnesses, the loud television, communal washing of clothes, housework) and the frequent references to modern phenomena keep the reader focussed on the present, everyday personal relationships, and social problems, particularly as they are viewed from the female standpoint.

In contradistinction, Viktor Kordun's poetry never anchors itself to the present long enough to focus on the mundane aspects of life. Kordun, whose work was first published in the 1960s, a decade before Bilotserkivets's debut and even more in the case of Moskalets, was absent from the literary public arena for seventeen years (1966–82) because his writing was unacceptable to the Soviet authorities. His poetic world remains largely unaltered.<sup>19</sup> The new freedom of expression, however, has added another dimension to his invariable themes: he now writes psalms that openly address the higher power present, but unnamed, in earlier texts. “Try psalmy” (Three Psalms), part of the cycle “Slid pivnichnoho vitru” (Traces of the North Wind), succinctly pose the basic philosophical questions with which much of Kordun's earlier poetry is concerned: what is the world, what is my place in it, what is memory, and where is the beginning of my

16. “we will die not in Paris I now know this for sure / [but] in a provincial bed steeped in sweat and tears (“Nataalka Bilotserkivets, “\*\*\*\*,” in *Visimdesiatnyky*, 8). Note the absence of punctuation in this poem.

17. David Buchbinder, *Contemporary Literary Theory and the Reading of Poetry, with a Chapter on Poetry and Gender* by Barbara H. Milech (South Melbourne: Macmillan, 1991), 120.

18. Pavlyshyn, “Postkoloniiialna khvylyna,” 149.

19. Lina Kostenko suffered a similar fate at this time. As Jaroslav Rozumnyj points out, “in her writings, Kostenko adheres to the principle that an artist has an obligation to reflect reality and to galvanize the reader to action on crucial problems” (“Lina Kostenko's Dramatic Poems: Metahistoricity of Themes and Innovation in Genre,” in *Slavic Drama: The Question of Innovation*, ed. Andrew Donskov et al [Ottawa: University of Ottawa, 1991], 143).



existence and where the end?<sup>20</sup> His more traditional tone and general approach form a strong contrast to Moskalets's postmodern treatment of religious themes. Kordun's self-abnegating tone and formal discourse render the psalms as just that—poetry that is prayer; Moskalets, meanwhile, purposely places himself at the level of the divine characters, challenging the traditional tone and attitude towards them.

Kordun's abiding impact stems from his ability to rise above the mundane; in his poetic world there is no everyday. For him, yesterday, today, and tomorrow merge and interlace, heaven and earth are ever-present, and time is very distant from chronological time. He is an actor in the history of his nation, but also of the world; he is part of the present. But in a surreal yet convincing way he is an integral part of the future. He is the one who destroyed Carthage, as the reader discovers from his poem "Mii Karfahen" (My Carthage) in the cycle "Slid pivnichnoho vitru." He destroyed the ancient city "yesterday / two to three thousand years ago." Mykhailo Moskalenko has isolated the epic effect of Kordun's technique, whereby the vision of the past develops in the fleeting moment of the present, endowing it with epic qualities<sup>21</sup>: Kordun tells us today of his exploits in Carthage "yesterday," at the same time stating, one presumes with reference to the destruction of the city, that "it is unknown who, / it is unknown how, / it is unknown why / and it is unknown why it is unknown." He therefore states that the blame cannot be placed on any individual; no individual is prepared to take the blame for this or many other actions. As the poet leaned his sword on the fallen walls of the city, he thought, "why did we do this?"

There is a mythological aspect to this kind of writing, wherein nothing can be located with certainty in a definite point in time or defined geographically. History is presented as myth, an overriding force that effects future events. In "Na rikakh beznaimennykh" (On the Unnamed Rivers, also in the cycle "Slid pivnichnoho vitru"), three girls—"this one from the water, this one from the grass, / and that one, with the wings, from heaven"—who take part in the events leading up to the creation of the Dnieper River are no longer certain where they now belong. Nothing is unchanged for long; nothing in this world can be relied on to remain as it was, and if it changes, we may not be able to identify or explain it: "On the unnamed rivers—/ unnamed people, / days unnamed./ unnamed sun."

Kordun's poem "Vershnyky" (The Horsemen) begins with great vigour and conviction—"Сідлаймо коней, братове, і вирушаймо з чужих часів" (Let us saddle the horses, brothers, and set out from these foreign times)—and ends

20. Viktor Kordun, "Try psalmy," *Suchasnist*, 1994, no. 4: 68.

21. Mykhailo Moskalenko, "Viktor Kordun: Poeziia i velych svitu," *Suchasnist*, 1994, no. 4: 150.

with a surrealistic explanation of the reason for their inability to leave these times—"де наші коні? — розвіялись з нами у синяві синьо як дим" (where are our horses? They have dispersed with us into the blue like blue smoke). The intention to leave is evident, the reasons for leaving are detailed, but, as always, the poet's sense of time becomes intentionally confused: he wishes to depart from the present, the past somehow interferes, and he is again part of the millennium. The riders, the horses, and the blue of the heavens become one entity and disperse like smoke.

In considering the possible future direction, although in a wider and more general context, Homi Bhabha has spoken of the "anti-nationalist, ambivalent nation space becoming the crossroads to a new transnational culture."<sup>22</sup> As far as Ukrainian literature is concerned, however, the poet Oksana Zabuzhko has perhaps expressed the situation best: "So what we experience now may be recognized as the fall of the 'poetry-as-opposition' tradition." The poet has been finally "freed from the obligation to 'save the nation.'"<sup>23</sup>

---

22. Homi Bhabha, "Narrating the Nation", in *Nationalism*, ed. John Hutchinson and Anthony D. Smith (Oxford and New York: Oxford University Press, 1994), 309.

23. Oksana Zabuzhko, "Reinventing the Poet in Modern Ukrainian Culture," *Slavic and East European Journal* 39, no. 2 (1995): 275.

# Tradition and Innovation in Twentieth-Century Ukrainian Verse Drama

*Larissa M. L. Zaleska Onyshkevych*

In most respects, twentieth-century Ukrainian verse drama was influenced by the same literary developments as its western European counterparts. Owing to political constraints and censorship during the tsarist and Soviet periods, however, certain innovations and some themes were suppressed, consequently the reflections of certain trends were delayed in Soviet Ukraine, but they did appear in plays written by émigré dramatists.

## *A Definition of the Genre*

Various terms have been applied to the literary genre that is composed of dialogue and verse. While the entire genre of drama was represented by verse drama during the classical period (until about the sixteenth century the term "drama" also defined the verse form), during the modern period numerous attempts have been made to designate or limit this mode of literary expression and speaking.

While the term "drama in verse" is rather general, other terms are more specific. The term "poetic drama," for example, is used by some to describe a play in verse. This designation stretches the definition by pointing to the imagery rather than the metrical form; lately, owing to the predominance of imagery, even some prose drama has been identified by this term. When its synonym, "poème dramatique," is applied, however, the it is understood to mean philosophical thought in a dramatic form. Meanwhile the English equivalent of the French term, "dramatic poetry," does not define this genre precisely, because a work so described may not necessarily be composed of dialogue.

Various approaches continue to expand or reduce the number of components of the dramatic genre and its subgenres. Eric Bentley, for example, has claimed that drama in verse "is not poetry in the fullest sense, but, meter aside, operates

much on the lines of the drama of prose rhetoric."<sup>1</sup> The rhetorical element is quite dominant in the verse drama of T. S. Eliot, Ivan Drach, and Vasyl Barka, while in the works of Gabriele d'Annunzio, J. M. Synge, Lesia Ukrainka, Oleksander Oles, Lina Kostenko, and Vira Vovk it is the lyrical aspect that attracts much deserved attention.

### *The Recent History of the Genre*

Through the ages, verse drama has undergone a series of changes in the definition of its function and form. Until the twentieth century poetic drama always had its great defenders and champions—from Victor Hugo to Lesia Ukrainka. Recently, however, Western opinion about the need for this subgenre in our age has been strongly divided

Christopher Frye, one of the leading lyrical verse dramatists in English literature, has argued for the use of verse in drama because it economizes on the use of words; he claims that "the full significance of action can be explored only by words,"<sup>2</sup> and points out that it is the very choice of words that portrays how an action is experienced. There are various opinions on the form in which words should be rendered, and writers and critics have debated whether the use of natural, colloquial speech is more appropriate for our time. Henrik Ibsen argued that a truly spoken language was necessary in order to portray action on the stage; more recently John Gassner claimed that "modern verse drama ... has been limited in power ... as a more or less artificial graft on our age."<sup>3</sup>

Drama in verse, or dramatic poetry, relies heavily on language—its diction, poetry, imagery, and emotional intensity. Since the days of Aristotle, different metres and rhymes have been in fashion—from the heroic metre and rhyme to blank verse. Variety has been sought in the type of verse form used in order to bring more vitality. Blank verse, in particular, introduced a conversational tone by taking the genre away from the highly traditional and rhetorical iambic pentameter.

T. S. Eliot stressed the need for a contemporary rhythm of speech that would enhance a work's musicality by affecting a listener unconsciously rather than consciously and artificially. But he also thought that "no play should be written in verse for which prose is dramatically adequate."<sup>4</sup> Proponents of various points

1. Eric Bentley, *The Life of the Drama* (New York: Atheneum, 1965), 88.

2. Christopher Frye, "Why Verse?" in *The Context and Craft of Drama: Critical Essays on the Nature of Drama and Theater*, ed. Robert W. Corrigan and James L. Rosenberg (San Francisco: Chandler, 1964), 75–6.

3. John Gassner, *The Theatre in Our Times* (New York: Crown, 1966), 22.

4. T. S. Eliot, *Poetry and Drama*, The Theodore Spenser Memorial Lecture, 21 November 1950 (London: Faber & Faber, n.d.), 12.

of view have presented different lists of required components for drama in verse, ranging from a historical topic to a didactic or emotional appeal. While Eliot admitted that the emphasis may be on the ephemeral and the superficial, he pointed out that when it comes to permanent and universal content "we tend to express ourselves in verse."<sup>5</sup> The emotional element was occasionally consciously underplayed by certain playwrights. For example, in his epic dramas Bertolt Brecht stretched the homiletic or rhetorical aspect to the extreme, stressing the contemplative element while attempting to influence the way his audience perceived social truths.

The genre of verse drama has often been dubbed "closet drama" or "*Lesedrama*," that is, a work that is not popular or not suitable for the stage owing to the lack of verisimilitude and its limited dramatic action, whereby diction is dominant. In their early writing careers several verse drama writers, such as Michel de Ghelderode and Lesia Ukrainka, did not even consider that their verse dramas could or would be performed. Verse drama, like drama in general, has borne an elitist stamp since Aristophanes' time, when all drama was written in verse and was meant for a very limited number of cognoscenti able to appreciate the genre. Contemporary verse drama continues to have a limited audience.

A Ukrainian dictionary of literary terms describes the genre of verse drama as a play in verse blending dramatic, epic, and lyrical elements; the presentation is laconic: there is no background or external intrigue, and attention is centred on uncovering some conflict of ideas between two antagonists when their verbal duel is at its peak.<sup>6</sup> In her study of Ukrainian verse drama, Liudmyla Demi"ianivska divides the genre into three structural types: (1) the monodrama, in which the plot is focussed on one central character); (2) poetic frescoes—scenes or episodes not necessarily tied together but representing similar core dramatic situations; and (3) separate monologues, which are linked by undramatic dialogue.<sup>7</sup>

### *Ukrainian Verse Drama from 1900 to 1920*

A combination of historical events and literary styles served to make the didactic element appealing to writers of verse drama both in the West and in Ukraine. At the turn of twentieth century the leading practitioners of verse drama

---

5. T. S. Eliot, *A Dialogue on Dramatic Poetry: Selected Essays* (London: Faber & Faber, 1932), 53.

6. V. M. Lesyn and O. S. Pulynets, *Slovyk literaturoznavchych terminiv* (Kyiv: Radianska shkola, 1965), 105.

7. Liudmyla S. Dem"ianivska, *Ukrainska dramatychna poema (Problematyka, zhanrova spetsyfika)* (Kyiv: Vyshcha shkola, 1984), 13.



in Ukraine were Ivan Franko, Lesia Ukrainka, Oleksander Oles, Vasyl Pachovsky, and Spyrydon Cherkasenko. Whether espousing symbolism, neo-Romanticism, or realism, all five wrote primarily *pièces à thèse*.

While Franko employed allegorical means and relied on historical facts, Lesia Ukrainka (1871–1913) preferred classical themes and set an impressive standard for later writers. She wrote *poèmes* with philosophical content in dramatic form. The poetical treatment of emotion and highly selective and effective diction—as demonstrated in *U pushchi* (In the Wilderness, 1910), *Boiarynia* (The Boyar's Wife, 1914), or *Advokat Martiian* (The Advocate Martianus, 1913)—characterizes works that may not have been meant for the theatre, since their mimetic aspect is rather subdued. Lesia Ukrainka was well aware of the limited adaptability of her dramatic poems (especially the early ones) to the stage. At that time in Europe, such verse drama was written mostly for reading.

Lesia Ukrainka classified her *Ifiheniia v Tavrydi* (Iphigenia in Tauris, 1898) as a “dramatic poem,” which she considered extremely long but “suitable for reading”; she suggested that perhaps “one day it could be cut.”<sup>8</sup> She called her *Rufin i Pristsilla* (Rufinus and Priscilla) “a bookish drama” (“*knyzhkova drama*”), *V domi roboty — v kraini nevoli* (In the Workhouse — the Land of Slavery, 1906) “more a publicist's work,” and *Lisova pisnia* (The Forest Song, 1911) “an old-fashioned piece of Romanticism.”<sup>9</sup> *Kaminnyi hospodar* (The Stone Host, 1912) was “the first true drama to come from my pen: objective, concentrated, not immersed in lyricism; it represents something new in my style.”<sup>10</sup> A disciplined composition and compact plot, harmony of imagery and subject matter (e.g., multiple applications of stoniness to several characters, setting, and plot), and the presence of music (e.g., musical accompaniment in *Lisova pisnia*, *Orhiia* [The Orgy, 1912–13], and other plays) were very important her. While she was still rather critical of her hero in *Kaminnyi hospodar* (“he is more of a symbol than a living person”), she admitted that “at least I have given him a logical behaviour pattern and a real *raison d'être*, which some distinguished authors had failed to do.”<sup>11</sup>

Ukrainian theatres of the time were not prepared to stage Lesia Ukrainka's verse dramas, and thus they were not accessible to large audiences or even to a wide reading public. Nevertheless, any serious Ukrainian poet or playwright who

---

8. Olha Kosach-Kryvnyiuk, *Lesia Ukrainka: Khronolohiia zhyttia i tvorchosti* (New York: Ukrainian Academy of Arts and Sciences in the U.S., 1970), 427.

9. *Ibid.*, 858.

10. *Ibid.*

11. *Ibid.*, 868–9 (letter to Olha Kobylanska, 26 March 1913).

followed after Lesia Ukrainka had to face the challenge of her dramas, especially the later works where her verse did not impede the action.

At about the same time, Liudmyla Starytska-Cherniakhivska (1868–1941), Oleksander Oles (1878–1944), Vasyl Pachovsky (1878–1942), Spyrydon Cherkasenko (1876–1939), and many other Ukrainian writers also turned to writing dramatic verse. Starytska-Cherniakhivska's first drama in verse was *Hetman Pavlo Doroshenko* (1908). It was followed by *Ostannii snip* (The Last Sheaf, 1917), *Ivan Mazepa* (1927), and others. Her plays were not so much character studies as portrayals of historical events in a highly patriotic tenor; she also popularized the Mazepa theme. During this period Oles wrote three symbolist verse dramas: *Po dorozh v Kazku* (Along the Road to Fairy Tale Land, 1911), *Tanets zhyttia* (The Dance of Life, 1913), and *Khvesko Andyber* (1917).

Pachovsky, a Galician modernist, is the author of the verse plays *Son ukrainskoi nochii* (Dream of a Ukrainian Night, 1903), *Sontse ruiny* (The Sun of the Ruin, 1911), *Sfinks Evropy* (The Sphinx of Europe, 1914), and *Roman Velykyi* (Roman the Great, 1918). These neo-Romantic and symbolist works on historical themes are replete with homiletic messages. The characters and events that he depicts tend towards epic portrayals with a vigorously patriotic tone (e.g., *Son ukrainskoi nochii*). Pachovsky incorporated many elements of Ukrainian folklore, and in this respect *Son ukrainskoi nochii* may be considered a precursor of Lesia Ukrainka's *Lisova pisnia*. (Later writers, such as Ivan Drach and Oleksandr Levada, also utilized elements of Ukrainian folklore in their works).

Cherkasenko wrote symbolist verse dramas that also incorporated elements of Ukrainian folklore and of history, such as *Kazka staroho mlyna* (The Tale of the Old Mill, 1914) and *Pro shcho tyrsa shelestila* (What the Feather-Grass Was Whispering About, 1916). These plays enjoyed great popularity and were often staged and set to music (especially the latter) until Soviet censors banned them because of their historical elements and patriotic messages.

In his survey of Ukrainian literature that appeared in 1913, Andrii Nikovsky wrote that "since dramatic form requires true literary talents with proper training and creative idea, our products of the last year have shown that we have truly outstanding works; this means that in our society there is a constant intellectual growth that points to a deeply conscious spiritual life."<sup>12</sup> In fact, the year 1913 did give Ukrainian literature such great works as Lesia Ukrainka's *Lisova pisnia*, *Orhiia*, and *Kaminnyi hospodar*. Nikovsky's assessment may also be applied to verse drama of the first twelve years of the twentieth century, when Lesia Ukrainka, Starytska-Cherniakhivska, Oles, Pachovsky, and Cherkasenko produced their greatest work. All of them provided models that have been followed for

---

12. Andrii Nikovsky, "Ukrainska literatura v 1913 r.," *Literaturno-naukovy vistnyk* 17: 161.

over a half century, particularly because the genre relies on traditional forms. Very few later authors were able to break away and introduce entirely new elements, and those that did introduced primarily structural innovations (the plays of Drach, Levada, and Vovk).

## The 1920s

In the 1920s there was a flowering of poetry and prose in Ukraine, but not of verse drama. A small number of émigré writers did, however, contribute a few important works to the genre. Iurii Lypa (1900–44), who emigrated to Poland in 1920, wrote several short dramatic poems: *Troianda z Ierykhonu* (A Rose from Jericho, 1922), *Korabel, shcho vidplyvaie* (A Departing Ship, 1923), *Slovo v pustyni* (A Word in the Desert, 1926), *Benket* (The Banquet, 1926), *Poiedynok* (The Duel, 1927), *Verbunok* (The Enlistment, 1927), *Motria* (1927), *Pisnia* (The Song, 1927), *Narada vnoch* (A Deliberation at Night), and the unpublished “Korol San-Domingo” (The King of San Domingo, ca. 1943). Lypa is a symbolist whose work features elements of neo-Romanticism and a good dose of mysticism. All of his compact and short works fit the *poème dramatique* category and focus on the juxtaposition and conflict of values. In his skilfully written dramas he champions the need for self-expression, a quest for truth and beauty, self-sacrifice, heroism, patriotism, and a strong faith in God. Although Lypa, like Lesia Ukrainka, set his dramas in the Middle Ages, he also poignantly addressed current social and historical problems.

Cherkasenko also emigrated, but to Prague, where he continued to write verse dramas: *Smert lehendy* (Death of a Legend, 1923, a continuation of *Kazka staroho mlyna*), *Tsvit paporoti* (The Fern Flower, 1924, which deals with the Soviet takeover of Ukraine and the reactions of folkloric figures), *Koly narod movchyt* (When the People Are Silent, 1927, a tragedy about Hetman Ivan Mazepa), *Severyn Nalyvaiko* (1928, the first historical drama of a planned trilogy called *Step* (The Steppe), and *Tsina krovy* (The Price of Blood, 1930, about Judas’s betrayal). Cherkasenko relied on historical settings and characters to relay his didactic message. He often turned to topics that were developed earlier by Lesia Ukrainka, but he would offer his own interpretations (e.g., Judas betrays Christ in order to precipitate a popular revolt against the Romans) or present different historical conflicts (forest spirits facing Soviet soldiers).

Cherkasenko often used the same plots as other writers, but he gave them a different psychological motivation and interpretation. For example, he utilized the Don Juan theme to provide a simplified version of the popular Western plot “without any philosophical-mystical artillery.”<sup>13</sup> Compared to most examples

---

13. Spyrydon Cherkasenko, “Zamists peredmovy,” in his “Espanskyi kabaliero Don Khuan i Rozita,” *Novi shliakhy*, 1936, no. 2: 208.

of Ukrainian verse drama written in the first half of this century, Cherkasenko's dramas were very stageable and did not convey complex messages. Action overshadowed diction, which otherwise would have been expected to shine in this genre. This was the author's intention: his goal in writing *Espanskyi kabaliero Don Khuan i Rozita* (The Spanish Caballero Don Juan and Rosita, 1928), for example, was "to provide what the contemporary stage demands: theatricality, lightness, lively interest, movement, etc., as well as a touch of some healthy moralizing."<sup>14</sup>

### *The 1930s and 1940s*

In Soviet Ukraine it was only in 1931 that a notable work surfaced in the genre: *Svichchyne vesillia* (Svichka's Wedding, originally called *Pisnia pro Svichku* [Song about Svichka]) by Ivan Kocherha (1881–1952). Although this was not Kocherha's first drama, it became one of his most popular ones. Significantly, it reflects numerous similarities to Lesia Ukrainka's approach, such as the presentation of ideas concerning universal truths and rights and a heavy reliance on a particular quality that serves as a dominant image for the whole work (e.g., the multiple uses of light and candles, just as Lesia Ukrainka utilized stone and its properties in *Kaminnyi hospodar*). He attempted to use diction in a manner that would emphasize musicality and imagery and affect emotions and intellect. His choice of a medieval historical theme and his presentation of the principles of democracy place him in the ranks of Franko's and Pachovsky's followers.

Kocherha's works demonstrated his particular virtuosity in the genre. He was especially successful in the presentation of specific ideas and their discussion, employing the classical iambic pentameter and, intermittently, the tetrameter. Magdalena László-Kuŕiuk, a Romanian scholar of Ukrainian literature, has written extensively about Kocherha's expert utilization of motifs (e.g., a candle) and key words (e.g., "word" and "law"). She also indicates that Maurice Maeterlinck influenced Lesia Ukrainka, Oles, and Kocherha, especially in their presentation of drama not as a slice of life but a discussion about it.<sup>15</sup> *Svichchyne Vesillia* also serves as a comment on classes, feudalism, and basic human aspirations; the historical background skilfully complements the imagery and vision.

Kocherha's dramatic poem *Iaroslav Mudryi* (Iaroslav the Wise) appeared first in a Soviet journal in 1944 and with some changes as a separate book in 1946. The timing is significant. Although Kocherha seemed to be continuing the

---

14. Ibid.

15. Mahdalyna Laslo-Kutsiuk, "Kliuchi do teatru Ivana Kocherhy," in her *Shukannia formy: Narysy z ukrainskoi literatury XX stolittia* (Bucharest: Kriterion, 1980), 267–96.



historical theme that Pachovsky had developed earlier (opposition to feudalism and emphasis on the need for unification of the Ukrainian people and classes), in one respect he took an opposite stand to Pachovsky's and introduced a very Soviet idea: the Kyivan princes' close ties with their proto-Russian neighbours to the northeast. The Soviet war effort had brought new pressures on writers to produce propagandistic works. Kocherha's work is therefore clearly didactic, and although his verses are usually smooth and flowing, many of his lines and aphorisms sound stiff and artificial. He provided each act with a significant key word, sometimes following Bertold Brecht's method of placing large signs on the stage, at other times simply drawing attention to a particular symbol or metaphor.

With this unsuccessful work Kocherha should, perhaps, have stopped writing in this genre. However, when the director of Kharkiv's Shevchenko Theatre, Mariian Krushelnytsky, asked him to write a play about Taras Shevchenko, Kocherha agreed. The result, *Prorok* (The Prophet, completed in 1948), was another failure. The verses are smooth (primarily in iambic pentameter with occasional rhymes) but dull; they are often interrupted by quotations from Shevchenko's works, which at least add some variety. Shevchenko is depicted as a complaining, lonely, old man (although he was only in his forties!). There is hardly any serious conflict within the main character, and very little within others. This drama is neither a tragedy nor a chamber play that concentrates on personal feelings, and it ignores civic issues. Rather than dealing with the psychological aspect, Kocherha tries to focus the reader's attention on certain ideas. For example, he provides a name for various acts, and key phrases are repeated by the protagonists (e.g., "He was a man" or "Is the past fated to be forgotten?").

Perhaps more than in other genres, the authors of verse drama of the 1930s and 1940s made ample use of propaganda. Among them were the Soviet writers Leonid Pervomaisky (1908–73), Ahata Turchynska (1903–72), who wrote the libretto (1950) to Heorhii Maiboroda's opera *Mylana* (1957), and Andrii Malyshko (1912–70). Pervomaisky wrote two verse plays: *Vahramova nich* (Vahram's Night, 1933) and *Oleksa Dovbush* (1946). In *Vahramova nich*, subtitled "Scenes from a Tragedy," the Communist protagonists speak in verse, while other characters use normal speech (this approach was used earlier by Pachovsky). *Oleksa Dovbush*, a portrayal of a historical Robin Hood-like hero, is subtitled "A People's Drama," thus drawing attention to the propagandistic content of the plot. The play may as well have been written in prose given its poor verses. Strangely enough, despite the period when it was written and Pervomaisky's undoubted skill as a prose writer who was noted for his style and plot constructions, it shows the definite influence of Oles's *Po dorozhi v Kazku* and Mykhailo Kotsiubynsky's *Tini zabutykh predkiv* (Shadows of Forgotten Ancestors). Written just after the war, the work is a clarion call for the unification of all Ukrainian lands within the boundaries of the USSR.



In the emigration in the 1930s, Leonid Mosendz (1897–1948), who had settled in Poland in 1922 and later lived in Czechoslovakia, wrote one verse drama, *Vichnyi korabel* (The Eternal Ship, 1933), which deals with an émigré's fate and psychological pressures. It depicts a sixteenth-century Dutch city whose inhabitants face the choice of defending themselves, collaborating with the enemy, or leaving the city by ship in search of a new land and a happy life. Those who leave are destined to wander the world until their city is free again. At the same time Vasyl Pachovsky completed his verse drama *Hetman Mazepa* (1933), subtitled a "Resurrection Mystery," and began an unfinished dramatic epic, *Zoloti vorota* (The Golden Gate). Spyrydon Cherkasenko offered his own interpretation of the story of Hetman Ivan Mazepa in *Velmozhna pani Kochubeyikha* (The Grand Lady Kochubei, 1936), subtitled "a historical family drama." The play's heroine is depicted as the one who was responsible for selling out Mazepa to Peter I because the hetman had spurned her advances. A few years later, a fellow émigré in Prague, Oleksander Oles, wrote the verse *Nich na polonyni* (A Night in the Mountain Pasture, 1941). Written in a style that is reminiscent of his neo-Romantic and symbolist works of the 1910s and using a dilemma similar to the one that Lesia Ukrainka had presented three decades earlier in *Lisova pisnia*, Oles depicts a protagonist who cannot decide between the world of ideals and dreams and the real world. He wants both but can not exist in either—a situation in which many émigrés, unable either to break their ties with Ukraine or to adjust to their host countries, found themselves. The verse is still the voice of Oles, but the diction is hardly equal to his much earlier works in the genre.

During the years immediately after the Second World War, several leading émigré writers also wrote verse dramas, often depicting the painful historical and personal fate of people forced to leave their country. One such outstanding writer was Iurii Kosach (1909–90), who wrote one historical verse drama, *Harold i Iaroslavna* (Harold and Iaroslavna, 1946).

## The 1950s and 1960s

For about twenty years after the appearance of *Svichchyne vesillia*, hardly any notable verse dramas were written in Ukraine. Then a work appeared that was significant not so much for its artistic merit as for its plot—the verse drama *Faust i smert* (Faust and Death, 1960) by Oleksandr Levada (1909–95). For the first time in European drama the idea of space flight was presented, a year before such an event actually took place. The play instantly became a success and was translated into many languages. The author was awarded the Lenin Prize, which provided him with much sought-after Soviet respectability. Levada's play succeeded because of three factors: the timeliness of his topic, a new veneer of "intellectualism", and the author's attempt to demonstrate the moral and ethical superiority of Soviet scientists over Western ones, even if they were as ancient

as Faust. When the drama first appeared in the literary monthly *Vitchyzna* in November 1960, it bore the cautious subtitle "An Optimistic Tragedy." At the time tragedy was being re-examined in the USSR. Since the theme was "heroic" (this is how some critics described it), it required an elevated form, and hence the choice of verse. Levada also incorporated various commentators into the play, very much in the style of a Greek chorus.<sup>16</sup>

In his drama Levada utilizes the basic plot elements of Goethe's *Faust*, part I, but sets them in the Soviet era. The protagonist is an eager, dedicated scientist; his antagonist is an anti-intellectual mystic. A computer functions in the role of Mephistopheles, and God is replaced by Lenin. The author juxtaposes Soviet scientists with Faust, who requests that time actually stop. In contrast, the Soviet heroes will not stoop to express such a desire. In Goethe's *Faust*, the request for time to stop was an important part of the entire dramatic conception. There are many direct quotations from Goethe in the discussions (although the source of the translation is not identified);<sup>17</sup> they serve as an argument in favour of employing the verse form. But Levada was not very successful in this respect, and Soviet critics noted that he had not learned well from Lesia Ukrainka, Kocherha, or even his own earlier works.<sup>18</sup> Although Levada also claimed that the play is a tragedy, his protagonists do not experience any inner conflicts. Universal truths are discussed, but the propagandistic approach overpowers any sense of verisimilitude; the play is an obvious case of straightforward sermonizing.

The Kyiv poet Liubov Zabashta (1918–90) wrote the verse dramas *Kvit paporoti* (The Fern Flower, 1959) and *Zemlia Anteiv* (The Land of the Antes, 1971). The 1960s witnessed a revival of poetry and prose in Ukraine, but not of verse drama. However, in the West *Smishnyi sviaty* (A Funny Saint, 1968), a little-noticed short play with twenty-one poems or "scenes," was published by its author, the Brazil-based poet Vira Vovk (née Selianska, b. 1926). At first glance, this poetic drama appears to be a presentation of the quotidian existence of monastery inhabitants. However, all of the elements necessary for a successful verse drama, which were missing in Levada's *Faust i smert*, are present in Vovk's: lyricism, an appeal to poetic sensibility, irony and humour, mystical elements bordering on surrealism, outstanding texture, and rhetoric that manages to deal subtly with deep universal truths. The poetic worth and beauty of *Smishnyi sviaty* lie in the impression of total simplicity. The rhythmic variation with blank verse is individualized for various speakers. Vovk also employs

---

16. Iosyp Kyselov notes this in "Obraz i prykmety chasu," *Vitchyzna*, 1966, no. 11: 183.

17. Most likely the translator was Mykola Lukash.

18. Ihor Mamchur, "Dramatychna poeziia i muzyka," *Ukrainskyi teatr*, 1984, no. 6: 5.

religious chants, with the specific coloration of Ukrainian ritual songs, aspects that she later developed further.

In the United States the émigré writer Leonid Poltava (1921–90) wrote a historical verse drama entitled *Anna Iaroslavna*, about the daughter of Grand Prince Iaroslav the Wise who became the queen of France. This work was composed as a libretto to an opera (music by Antin Rudnytsky) that was staged in the United States and, in 1996, in Ukraine.

## The 1970s

This decade is represented exclusively by works written in Ukraine. The drama historian Diia Vakulenko characterizes it as a time when there was an “intensive search for the means of more fully expressing Soviet man’s personality.”<sup>19</sup> She points out that since the individual and the collective influence each other, “the resolution of conflicts depends not so much on the subjectivity and individual characteristics of a protagonist as it does on social mores, on historical conformity, and environment.”<sup>20</sup> Since such an interpretation and approach were still expected in the Soviet Union, even in the last two decades of its existence, playwrights had to comply.

Among the crop of mediocre works of this period is *Paryzka siuita* (Paris Suite, 1971) by Leonid Boloban (1893–1979). This dramatist attempted to follow Kocherha’s *Iaroslav Mudryi* and depicted Anna Iaroslavna’s journey to France and her life there as a “Slavic” or “Rus” princess.<sup>21</sup> Kocherha’s messages are also reproduced here: the need for the unity of the Ukrainians and Russians, the depiction of wrongdoing on the part of church officials, and so on. Written in iambic pentameter, the poem provides a taste of the many works that appeared in the 1980s commemorating the official Soviet celebrations of the 1,500th(!) anniversary of Kyiv.

It was also then that a new generation of writers turned to the genre of verse drama. Some notable works were written by Ivan Drach (b. 1936), among them *Duma pro vchytelia* (Duma about the Teacher, 1977) and *Soloveiko-Solveig* (1978). Drach, a leading poet of the 1960s, received training in cinematography and wrote several film scenarios. It was therefore quite natural for him both to turn to drama and to write it in verse. *Duma pro vchytelia* is subtitled “A Dramatic Cantata” and is dedicated to the noted Ukrainian educator Volodymyr

---

19. D. T. Vakulenko, *Suchasna ukrainska dramaturhiia, 1945–1972: Osnovni tendentsii rozvytku* (Kyiv: Naukova dumka, 1976), 175.

20. Ibid., 185.

21. During the Soviet period, Ukrainian history officially began only with the thirteenth century, and earlier centuries were treated as common East Slavic (Russian, Ukrainian, Belarusian) history.

Sukhomlynsky. It is a docudrama commenting upon different approaches to raising children. Drach makes comparisons to Johann Pestalozzi, Anton Makarenko, Hryhorii Skovoroda, and other pedagogues. They even appear at a type of court hearing that is very much in the style of Levada's *Faust i smert* (the three Curies, Einstein, and others speaking from their portraits) or Pachovsky's *Son ukrainskoi nochi*. Drach incorporates documentary reportage and a lyrical appeal to the readers, director, and editor. It is not a very subtle appeal to posterity; the entire poem is replete with didactic statements (e.g., "every child should be given a violin"). The reporting of events is interspersed with pleasant poetic scenes (e.g., "a mother with a fairy tale"). Drach demonstrates an interesting use of the chorus, which changes roles several times: chorus members appear as teachers and later as students or visitors. This sharing of roles is also apparent when the narrator appears as the author and then the master of ceremonies. The predominant rhythm is established by the use of iambic tetrameter and pentameter; some rhythmic prose is also interspersed.

*Duma pro vchytelia* was written as a panegyric not only to Sukhomlynsky but also to the Soviet educational system: the educator is shown winning debates against his opponents until finally all of Europe benefits from his ideas. While Levada ignored Faust's important discussion with God, Drach incorporates a play within the play that introduces a legend about Adam, Eve, and God. God is shown as an envious being lacking the capacity to love; man is able to love and thus becomes god on earth. Drach uses colourful situations, a chorus, masks, and other supplementary theatrical elements. But his stark lecturing, melodramatic tone, dull diction, and forced moralizings ruin the effect created by the poetic elements.

The tone of Drach's *Soloveiko-Solveig* is not as intensely homiletic. However, it too seems to follow Levada in presenting a similar lesson. The play depicts the selfish behaviour of an artist concerned only with her own individual desires and aspirations and who hurts other people in the process. Unexpectedly revealed past events and the protagonists' relationships stretch credibility. There is an attempt to incorporate elements of the fantastic by using Lesia Ukrainka's characters from *Lisova pisnia* (the forest nymph and others). But in Drach's play the combination of folk-poetry elements and contemporary documentary data does not produce a felicitous effect. (For example, when the grandmother addresses her granddaughter Natalka by using the vocative case of her diminutive, "Nato," the old woman comments on the similarity of her name to NATO). There are some effective poetic scenes and imagery and numerous attempts at aphorisms (e.g., "In broad daylight Maryna seeks herself with a candle"). Again, Drach seems to be more successful with regard to his stage design and visual and technical artistic aids, e.g., his use of masks, talking portraits, and tape-recorded voices of people who have died. Nevertheless, the



discussion about the inner conflict between one's duty to talent and the desire for a good life is not prejudged, and it shows a more natural development.

Mykola Rudenko (b. 1920), an established novelist and playwright who became a political dissident in the 1970s, wrote a verse drama called *Khrest* (The Cross, 1977; English translation 1987), which was published in the West. This is a short, patriotic poem in the form of a monologue with lyrical touches. Its subject is the Soviet-engineered genocidal famine of 1932–33 in Ukraine; a personification of Christ appears in the person of a blind *kobzar*, who proclaims that God is the suffering people, who must carry their own crosses.

One of Ukraine's leading poets, Lina Kostenko (b. 1930), initially experimented with drama in verse. Her poem "Tsarytsia Astyn" (Astyn, the Tsar's Wife) may actually be considered a mini-drama poem, as can her "Foto u dalekyi vyrii" (Photograph into a Distant Warm Land) and "Tsyhanska muza" (The Gypsy Muse, 1980). These works consist of lyrical monologues and implied dialogues, and the conflicts portrayed are derived from situations demanding choices and principles. While Kostenko did not classify her famous "historical novel in verse" *Marusia Churai* (1979) as a drama, it has been staged by many theatres in Ukraine and the United States.<sup>22</sup> The protagonists are not indicated before each speech, but the text and quotation marks make it quite obvious which character is participating in the dialogue. The mode of this "novel in verse" is almost that of an *Ich-Drama*, in which events are depicted through the eyes of the protagonist, with stream-of-consciousness monologues and entire scenes resembling a monodrama. Actually, the protagonist, Marusia Churai, seems to perform a role similar to that of a play-within-a-play. She embodies a discourse on the individual versus the community, which comes to a head in the form of the judgment at a trial.

### *The 1980s and 1990s*

In the 1980s Lina Kostenko wrote two works, "Duma pro brativ neazovskykh" (*Duma* about the Non-Azov Brothers, 1984) and "Snih u Florentsii" (Snow in Florence, 1983–85), that she called "dramatic poems." The "Duma" employs the device of parallel plot development (or a play within a play), in which the actions of the three protagonists from the traditional *duma* epic and the three imprisoned Cossack friends are judged. "Snih u Florentsii" also features a self-judgment/trial scene of the protagonist, a sixteenth-century Italian sculptor. He is shown in middle and old age, when he is judging himself for his infidelity to true art and to his country. All of Kostenko's dramatic poems possess the qualities of a parable. They deal with timeless, universal ethical

---

22. For example, see my review "Ukrainian Youth Theater-Studio in Lviv Stresses Art's Permanency," *The Ukrainian Weekly*, 30 October 1988, 8–9.



questions and incorporate legendary or historical characters that give the works an epic quality. These elements enhance the rhetorical elements and add to their stageability.

At the turn of the 1980s Ivan Drach's *Zoria i smert Pavla Nerudy* (The Star and Death of Pablo Neruda, 1980) appeared. Subtitled "A Dramatic Poem, or an Attempt at Contemporary Literary Study in the Chilean Manner," its greatest merit is the poetic conception of its structure, i.e., the *dramatis personae*, setting, small artistic details, and imagery. For one of the settings Drach uses a ship, a metaphor for life, with the captain also serving as a prosecutor and later appearing as death. It seems that the author meant the poem to be read rather than staged. A description in the list of characters reads: "A Poet is fate rather than a profession." The use of masks, several choruses (one dressed in black and the other in white), musical instruments, and mass scenes create a dramatic effect. The tone of this poem is that of a docudrama or a recitation of a *poème*, set against the background of an expressionist or grotesque stage design (e.g., a huge ear spying on the characters) and bizarre situations (members of a death squad chasing butterflies). Although the pace of events is intense and the diction and rhythm enhance the atmosphere, the bathos that surfaces through the repeated use of doctrinaire statements and journalese undermines the drama's praiseworthy features.

Quite different in tone and intensity is Iurii Shcherbak's *Nablyzhennia* (Coming Closer, 1984). Although the play is written primarily in prose, it deserves mention here because the author employs some verse dialogue and verses from Goethe's *Faust*. The play deals with a Soviet scientist and some of the Faustian problems that he encounters. Whenever a situation is directly compared to one in *Faust*, Goethe's work is quoted in Mykola Lukash's translation. While the discussion is performed with a better understanding of the problem than was seen in Levada's drama, Shcherbak seems eager to rectify his older colleague's misinterpretation of Goethe. Shcherbak's summation is: "life is coming closer to truth, / ... if the joy of coming closer is taken away, / man will be deeply unhappy."

To commemorate the 1,500th anniversary of Kyiv, Oles Lupii (b. 1938) wrote the verse drama *Liubov i lad* (Love and Order, 1982), subtitled "A Historical Poem." It was adapted as a television film (*Malusha*) and as a radio drama entitled *Kokhana kyivskoho kniazia* (The Kyivan Prince's Lover). Leonid Horlach (b. 1941) wrote *Slov"ianskyi ostriv* (A Slavic Island, 1986), subtitled "A Historical Novel." Like Kostenko's *Marusia Churai*, his drama does not visually indicate the *dramatis personae*, though the text does provide the speakers' names and their monologues or dialogues. This is a very didactic work about the fraternal relations of the Czechs and Slovaks and the rebellion led by Jan Hus in the fifteenth century against foreign oppression.

In the 1980s the émigré writer Vira Vovk also produced a verse drama, *Tryptykh do tsylindrovykh kartyn Iurii Solovii* (Triptych on the Cylindrical Paintings of Jurij Solovij, 1982). It contains elements similar to the ones that she employed earlier. This work, which was intended to be performed as an oratorio, is composed of three fresco pieces spoken in the form of a dialogue. Although it does not seem to be a drama owing to the presentation of seemingly independent poems, it should still be considered part of this genre. *Tryptykh* has no specific continuity of action per se. However, in this age of minimalist opera and music it may be considered a type of minimalist verse drama.

*Tryptykh*, a commentary on the paintings of the Ukrainian-American artist Jurij Solovij, consists of three acts, with seven scenes (poems) in each. Since none of the dramatis personae appear in all three "acts," this verse drama obviously does not possess all the dramatic unities. But the depiction of the Fallen Angels, the Crucifixion, and the Last Judgment (also the titles of the three acts) provides a unified general tone and message and builds deep emotional involvement and poetic appeal. Although the author mixes biblical characters (Lucifer, fallen angels, Veronica) with literary legends (Faust) and episodes about current Ukrainian poets and political dissidents, she retains the poetic aspect without using excessive rhetoric, which Soviet writers would. The delicate balance between the humanitarian and *engagé* civic message is subtly achieved by the effective use of devices that augment the poetic content: folkloric elements (from ancient Ukrainian spring-ritual songs [*hahilky*] to laments), ritualistic religious songs, a short intermede-type interlude, and a constant presence of tragic irony. The language varies from archaic to contemporary, and the total effect of the diction gives rise to multilevelled connotations and images. Vovk changes the rhythm of each poem (or "scene") to parallel the tone and role of the dialogue participants (e.g., the Wind speaks by repeating two words, with varied stress) with that of a chorale/hymn of a hopeful, prayer-like song. The organically connected ritualistic incantations carry out a plot function and form part of the drama's verse diction.

In the late 1980s Vovk wrote *Ikonostas Ukrainy* (The Iconostasis of Ukraine, 1988) and *Vinok troisty* (A Threefold Wreath, 1988). *Ikonostas Ukrainy*, subtitled "A Mystery," also includes some songs composed by the author and presents frescolike vignettes of important Ukrainian historic events and personages—pagan rituals, the Christianization of Rus' in 988, Grand Prince Volodymyr the Great, the Grand Princess Olha, Hetman Ivan Mazepa's mother, the eighteenth-century philosopher Hryhorii Skovoroda—and tragic events and experiences from the Soviet period, such as the 1932–33 famine, incarceration in Siberia, and the Chornobyl nuclear disaster. As in most of her verse dramas, Vovk expresses a constant quest for truth, beauty, virtue, and justice, overlaid with the constant presence of hope. The text of *Vinok troisty*, subtitled "A

Galician Feminist Interwar Chronicle," also includes the author's musical compositions.

A postwar émigré in Canada, Rostyslav Kedr (pseud. of Ivan Manastyrsky), wrote the verse drama *Homunkulius* (The Homunculus, 1990). This work is based on Part One of Goethe's *Faust* and includes many parallel symbols/protagonists (Faust, Mephistopheles, and the Eternal Feminine). The timeless polarities of good and evil are debated; Mephistopheles tempts the Homunculus with promises of power. The formerly self-centred protagonist suddenly faces the truth about the great injustice done to his people and blames God for allowing it to happen. The Homunculus wants to challenge evil (here the Soviet one), bring about justice, and avenge innocent victims. Under his lover's influence, however, he refrains from judging people and from punishing either the guilty or innocent bystanders. Philosophical discussions containing numerous intertextual references provide the core of the 255-page drama, written primarily in iambic pentameter and blank verse.

For more than half a century, from 1944 to 1990, the dean of the older generation of Ukrainian émigré poets, Vasyl Barka (b. 1908), who lives in the United States, worked on the creation of a two-volume epic verse drama entitled *Kavkaz* (The Caucasus, 1993, 790 and 1,034 pages). Just as Barka's four-volume *Svidok* (The Witness, 1981) was a "novel in strophes" with implied dialogue, so too *Kavkaz* may be called an epic novel in verse with dialogue. This monumental work presents the lives of several characters in the last years of Russian tsarism, the 1917 Revolution and its aftermath, and Soviet misdeeds in Ukraine and the Caucasus. The protagonist lives through these events, becomes a priest, and begins to preach the virtues of a Christian life in the Caucasus and then in prison.

Barka also wrote an oratorio entitled *Molebnyk neofitiv* (The Neophytes' Prayerbook, 1991). This work, which is almost a paraphrase of the Divine Liturgy, especially the sacrifice for the sake of souls, culminates in the Crucifixion. His verse drama *Zirka "Polyn"* (The Star "Wormwood," 1991), is a depiction of the Chornobyl disaster. The poet deals primarily with the events that transpired after this disaster and explores the reasons that inspired people to follow the Soviet government's inhumane orders.

In all of his verse poems Barka often adapts his own variants of biblical and folkloric elements. His style is epic, especially when he deals with dire historical events. His syntax is often condensed and elliptical, yet it adheres to the classical rhyme and rhythm of iambic tetrameter or pentameter. His vocabulary is rich in neologisms and diminutives, the latter creating an emotional response to the protagonists' fate.

In 1995 Viktor Lysiuk (b. 1938) of Kyiv wrote "Polyn" (Wormwood, subtitled "A Rhapsody"), an unpublished verse drama interlaced with prose that has some similarity to Barka's verse drama. This work portrays the situation

immediately after the Chornobyl nuclear accident situation in the contaminated area; Christian virtues and ethics are often mentioned by a protagonist priest. Lysiuk includes a substantial number of Ukrainian folk songs and laments of the Polisian region, which he collects, as well as religious incantations and a vocabulary very much like Vovk's.

### *Some Observations on Ukrainian Verse Drama since the 1930s*

Lesia Ukrainka and her contemporaries created a solid base for the genre of verse drama on which succeeding generations of writers could build. At the beginning of the twentieth century, diction was considered to be one of the primary elements of poetic drama, which could be perfected and supplemented by the artistic use of prosody. The degree of artistry displayed by the writer employing these elements separated great works from poor imitations, which were plentiful. Poetic vision helped to formulate lofty ideas and principles, since the genre always included them and was respected for them. Myth, universal truths and values, and historical facts and situations (aimed at providing contemporary parallels) were offered in these works. As numerous scholars of the genre have observed, the desire to share serious truths has often lured writers to verse drama and "thesis" or "idea" plays. This approach was utilized to excess particularly during the Soviet period, when this genre, more than any other, was used to indoctrinate the public or, at least, to turn it into the ruling ideology's cheerleader. As a result, verse plays often became "poster plays." Diction and prosody were relegated to a secondary role, and the by then dull genre appeared to be on the edge of extinction. However, even minor innovations in structure (e.g., Levada's *Faust i smert*) managed to revive it.

During the 1970s and 1980s a younger generation of poets helped to maintain the vitality of verse drama: Drach and Kostenko in Ukraine and Vovk in the West. Their dramatic poems went beyond the traditions of the early years of the twentieth century in terms of structure and form, stage design and stageability, and poetics. Words, even if they were at times jarring, once again dominated the action or events. Justice—individual, social, political, and universal—became the dominant theme. Thesis works incorporated some elements of the epic. The classical form was not often pursued (Vovk, Kostenko, Drach), and blank verse was esteemed. There was also a return to classical dialogue with little action and to the *poème* form (almost recitative in nature, e.g., Vovk's *Tryptykh*).

Most writers of verse drama were attracted to historical themes. Tom Driver has suggested that when poets decide to espouse the genre, they do so out of nostalgia for the past, and when they include folk materials as an expression of



human experiences, "a nostalgia of content spills into a nostalgia of form."<sup>23</sup> In the case of Ukraine, it was more than just nostalgia. When Soviet Ukrainian writers turned to folklore, it was to preserve ties to the past and to prove that they did have a past that was distinctly their own. This may explain the numerous examples of incorporating folkloric elements and forms, such as the *duma*, in many verse dramas (e.g., by Kostenko, Drach, and Oleksa Kolomiets). One may also note a rising interest in the use of elements from eighteenth-century Ukrainian morality plays in verse: allegorical, panegyric, and hagiographic (e.g., in Vovk and Drach). Baroque intermedes were also incorporated. The figure of God was reintroduced by Vovk, Rudenko, and Drach, although with diametrically opposite points of reference and motives. When Ukrainian writers in the West incorporated old Ukrainian forms, it was also to preserve knowledge of the past (e.g., Vovk's use of pre-Christian *hahilky* or songs from devotional services to the Theotokos). In both cases, it was not so much the inclusion of legendary figures or of several lines from these songs or chants as the casting of the entire poetic dialogue in that particular tone and form. It is this aspect of incorporating typical elements of Ukrainian folklore in terms of poetics, structure, and form that not only distinguishes Ukrainian verse drama from its Western counterparts, but also represents its strongest asset.

Because it deals with important and lofty issues, this distinctive genre has been attractive to writers wishing to preach ideology or morality, to inspire personal and civic virtues, integrity, and patriotism, and to convey information and lessons about Ukrainian historical figures and events. A sense of national history has been particularly important to the Ukrainian reader, who has been all too aware of Ukraine's tragic fate in the twentieth century. In several dramas there are strong charges that God is responsible for Ukraine's suffering under evil totalitarianism.

If Ukrainian poets have espoused this genre, it is also because a writer is "most acutely conscious of his place in time, of his own contemporaneity," as Eliot observed. The fact that Ukrainian verse drama demonstrates not only typical traditional Ukrainian attributes but also many similarities to West European drama and traditions testifies to that historical sense that "compels a man to write not merely with his own generation in his bones, but with a feeling that the whole of the literature of Europe from Homer and within it the whole of the literature of his own country has a simultaneous existence and composes a simultaneous order."<sup>24</sup>

---

23. Tom F. Driver, *Romantic Quest and Modern Query: History of Modern Theater* (New York: Dell, 1971), 324.

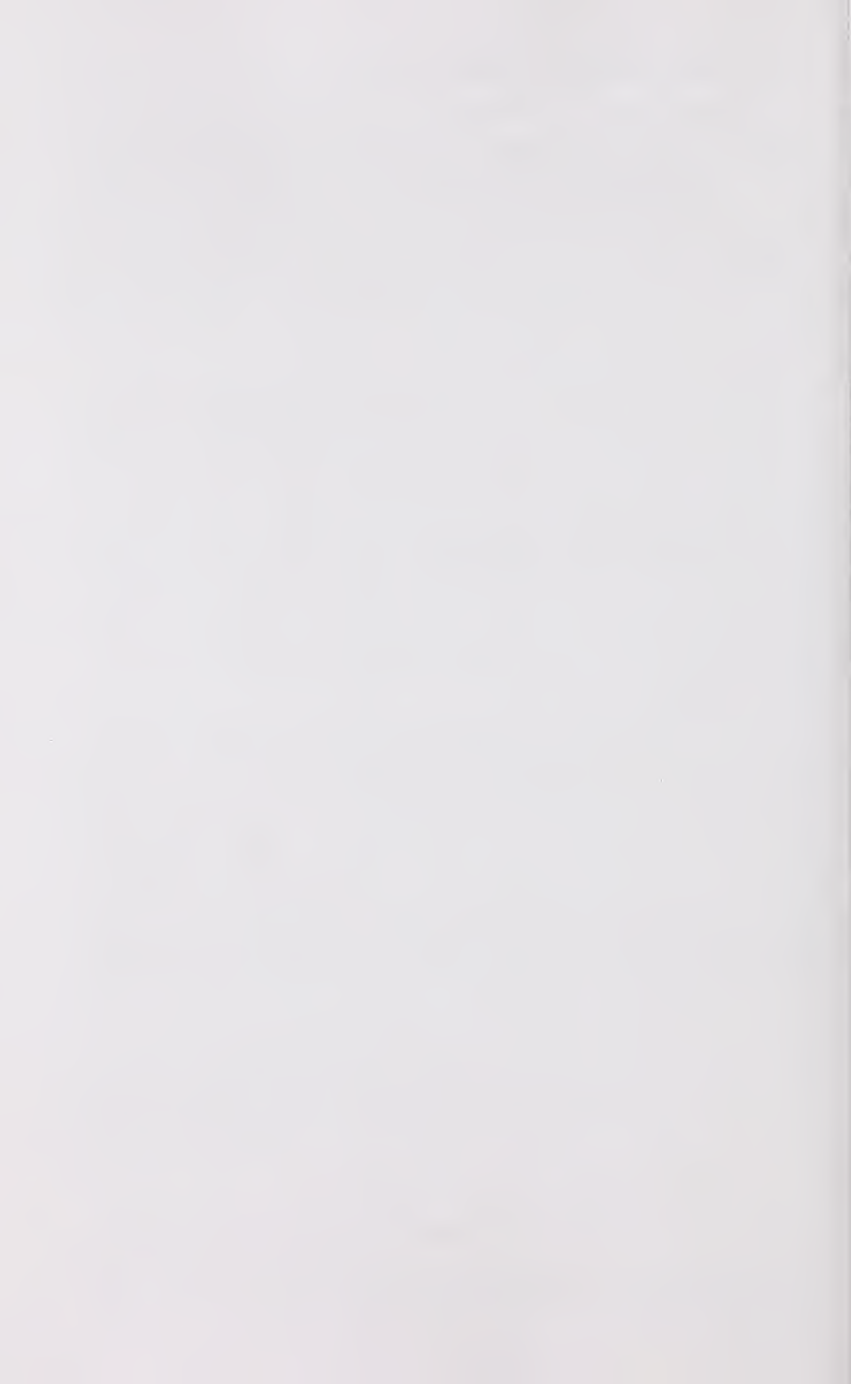
24. T. S. Eliot, "Tradition and the Individual Talent," in *Twentieth-Century Literary Criticism: The Greeks to the Present*, ed. Robert Con Davis and Laurie Finke (New York:



Among the innovations introduced into the genre since the 1960s, which in many cases meant the reapplication of specific means from earlier centuries, one should note in particular such theatrical means as music, dance, masks, and other visual stage devices. The Greek chorus was artfully employed in new ways by Levada and Drach, and a variant of the chorus—the use of portraits proclaiming certain judgments or truths—was used by Pachovsky, Levada, and Drach. Although Yeats was encouraging the use of masks, music, ritual, and verse as early as 1910, Ukrainian authors only began incorporating them into verse drama in the 1960s.

During the first half of the twentieth century, Ukrainian verse drama was influenced by neo-Romanticism, symbolism, and expressionism, with some typical avant-garde attributes. In the second half of the century, writers continued to rely on expressionistic devices, and their dramas became quite fragmented in form (e.g., Vovk's "fresco and monologue" verse dramas). Frequently they incorporated old Ukrainian literary forms (the intermede and *duma*), utilized intertextuality (e.g., folklore, biblical references, Faust, quotations from Ukrainian poets) and irony (e.g., in the works of Drach, Vovk, and Barka), and stressed the importance of time. In short, Ukrainian verse dramas exhibited all of the typical postmodernist qualities. Meanwhile Soviet Ukrainian dramatists were obliged to adhere to the demands of socialist realism and to eschew tragedy. Only Kostenko did not comply with this stricture.

It is worth noting that better verse dramas were created by outstanding poets: by Kocherha, Mosendz, and Lypa in the 1930s, and, since the 1960s, by Drach, Kostenko, and Vovk. It should also be noted that many of the Ukrainian practitioners of this genre are women (about a third)—more than in most Western literatures. Ukrainian verse drama is varied in diction, rhetoric, form, poetics, poetic vision, and subject matter. It combines both traditional and innovative means and approaches and is meant for both reading and staging. Poets have continued to be drawn to the genre, rescuing it from the extinction that appears to threaten it from time to time and providing Ukrainian literature with worthy dramas in every decade.



# The Christian Experience in the Soviet Empire: Church-State Relations in Eastern Europe, 1917–1991

*Oleh W. Gerus*

Church-state conflicts are as old as Christianity itself, but beginning in 1918, for the first time in history, organized religion—Christianity in particular—was faced with ruthless and militant atheism. The roots of Bolshevik/Soviet atheism lay in the materialistic Marxist-Leninist philosophy, which is incompatible and irreconcilable with religion. To the fathers of Communism, religion represented a reactionary and deceptive superstition, and the church a clever institutional instrument of class oppression. It was a tool of bourgeois reaction for the repression of the proletariat (“Submit to authority, for all authority is ordained by God”). Religion thus had no place in a socialist society.<sup>1</sup> In theoretical Marxism, freedom of conscience could be achieved only by freeing the masses from the chains of religion by means of a permanent ideological struggle (dialectical materialism) against the religious conception of the world. However, such a struggle was to be conducted by education and propaganda, but not by wholesale suppression of religion. In fact, before the 1917 revolution even Lenin had argued that large-scale repression would be counterproductive because it would raise the church to martyrdom, revitalize the faithful, and prolong the church’s life. It was a given that in a Marxist state organized religion would be completely separated from the state and from public education. Citizens would

---

1. “Of course, we say that we do not believe in God. We know perfectly well that the clergy, the landlords, and the bourgeoisie all claimed to speak in the name of god, in order to protect their own interests as exploiters.... We deny all morality taken from superhuman or non-class conceptions. We say that this is a deception, a swindle, a befogging of the minds of the workers and peasants in the interests of the landlords and capitalist” (V. I. Lenin, *On Religion*, 3d ed. [Moscow: Progress Publishers, 1969], 131); see also Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels, *On Religion* (New York: Schocken Books, 1971).

be free, at least in theory, to choose whether to believe or not while being inundated with anti-religious propaganda. Thus, it was the concept of a militant ideological struggle against religion and leading to its anticipated demise that distinguished the Marxist idea from the Western practice of church-state separation, wherein the state generally maintained neutrality in ecclesiastical matters.

When Marxist/Communist regimes were established, first in Russia and later in Eastern Europe, the foundations of their religious policies were determined by their ideology. But at the same time these policies were shaped by the prevailing historical and political circumstances, especially by questions of state security. Hence, the nature and intensity of the confrontation between church and state differed from place to place. Giovanni Barbini is correct in his assessment that, in general, never before had the church been so unyieldingly opposed by a state that was ideologically hostile to organized religion and wholly committed to the construction of an atheist socialist society.<sup>2</sup> On occasion it even seemed that the very survival of religion was threatened. Yet, in reality the church was less vulnerable than it appeared. Depending on the circumstances, the church offered either active or passive resistance to Communism. The Soviet empire's rulers had to cope with a thousand-year-old Christian tradition representing a cultural and spiritual framework encompassing millions of people, which the Communists never really understood.

### *The Church in the Soviet Union*

The Russian Orthodox Church was the largest Orthodox community in the world. It was an offshoot of the church of Kyivan Rus' founded in 988 and moulded by Byzantine missionaries and philosophy. In imperial Russia the Orthodox Church was the official church of the land. The emperor himself was the guardian of the dogmas of the Orthodox faith and the preserver of Orthodoxy as its secular head. It was a highly conservative, privileged (it alone had the right to proselytize), and economically powerful institution with huge landholdings and properties to which nearly seventy percent of the multinational population belonged, at least formally.<sup>3</sup> All ethnic Russians, Ukrainians, and Belarusians

---

2. Erich Weingartner, ed., *Church within Socialism: Church and State in East European Socialist Republics* (Rome: International Documentation and Communication Centre, 1976), 7.

3. According to the official statistics, in 1900 there were 49,000 Orthodox churches in the Russian Empire, divided into sixty-four eparchies and served by 104,500 members of the secular clergy. There were also 380 monasteries with 15,000 monks and 170 convents with 48,000 nuns. The clergy was trained in fifty-eight seminaries and three theological academies (equivalent to universities). The twelve Roman Catholic dioceses had 3,000 parishes that served over eleven million faithful. There were nearly four million

were considered, ipso facto, members of the Russian Orthodox Church and were forbidden to leave it. In return for its denominational primacy, the church was subjected to tsarist control through a special ecclesiastical department, the Holy Synod, which in the eighteenth century had replaced the Patriarchate of Moscow. During the imperial period the Russian Orthodox Church, as a loyal servant of the state, acted as a staunch proponent of reactionary tsarism and Russian cultural imperialism (Russification), thereby alienating the liberal, non-Russian, and radical intelligentsia. The Roman Catholic Church in Russian-ruled Poland and Lithuania and several Protestant denominations (Lutherans in Latvia and Estonia, Baptists and Mennonites in Ukraine and southern Russia) enjoyed legal status but not equality with the Orthodox Church. There were also numerous sectarian groups, mainly the Old Believers, embracing millions of Russians, but because there was no freedom of religion until 1905, they were obliged to worship in secrecy.

At the beginning of the Russian Revolution, for the first time in Russian history all religions enjoyed a brief period of real freedom. The Russian Orthodox Church convened a general sobor, the first since the eighteenth century, which restored the Moscow Patriarchate as the executive office of the church. The council initiated other reforms designed to maintain the primacy of the Russian church and, at the same time, to free the church from state control, but not from its financial support. The reformed patriarchal church would be autonomous yet loyal to the imperial concept of the Russian state. For example, when the Ukrainians took steps to revive their own independent Orthodox church (taken over by Moscow in 1686), the Moscow Patriarchate vigorously opposed them.<sup>4</sup> The Bolshevik seizure of power threw Russia and Ukraine into a bloody civil war in which millions of people perished. It was only logical that the Orthodox Church would support the anti-Bolshevik forces. This action provoked Lenin into launching an unprecedented campaign of terror against the church. Right from the inception of the Soviet state, considerations of internal and external security were always present in the government's formulation of religious policies. Naturally, the greater the perceived threat, the harsher the

---

Protestants. Islam was the largest non-Christian religion, with over 14 million followers, mainly in Central Asia. Useful background information may be found in Anton Kartashev, *Ocherki po istorii Ruskoi Tserkvi*, 2 vols. (Paris: YMCA Press, 1959); Georgii Fedotov, *The Russian Religious Mind* (New York: Harper Torchbooks, 1960); and John Shelton Curtiss, *Church and State in Russia: The Last Years of the Empire, 1900–1917* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1940).

4. A reliable documentary account is provided in *Martyrolohiia ukrainskykh Tserkov u chotyrokhtomakh*, vol. 1, *Ukrainska Pravoslavna Tserkva*, ed. Osep Zinkevych and O. Voronyn (Toronto and Baltimore: V. Symonenko Smoloskyp Publishers, 1987).



persecution. To Lenin the Russian church was nothing less than a treacherous agent of counter-revolution.

The Soviet government used legal measures and outright force to undermine organized religion in general and the Russian church in particular. Lenin's Decree on the Separation of Church from State and School from Religion of 23 January 1918 provided the legal basis for a provisional church-state relationship in Soviet Russia. After World War II this decree would serve as a model for church-state relations in Eastern Europe. Lenin's regime secularized the Soviet state and declared war on organized religion with a specific focus on the Russian Orthodox Church. The church was deprived of the status of a judicial person and stripped of all its properties (land, church buildings, monasteries, bank accounts, and parochial schools) and the right to teach religion outside the church. Individual parishes could try to function by registering with the local authorities and then leasing back their former property. The church was further crippled when legislation, passed in 1929, deprived believers of the right to conduct religious propaganda and defend religion in public. In the face of systematic discrimination and persecution of believers, the constitutional freedom to "confess any religion or not at all" sounded rather hollow.<sup>5</sup>

The surprising level of popular, especially peasant, resistance to anti-religious campaigns compelled the Soviet government to change its tactics. It turned to the time-tested policy of "divide and rule." Still focussing on the patriarchal Russian Orthodox Church as its main enemy, the regime intensified a campaign of terror against its hierarchy, clergy, and faithful. At the same time it gave tactical support to anti-patriarchal dissident Orthodox Christian movements, such as the Living Church and the Ukrainian Autocephalous Orthodox Church. But when the patriarchal church weakened, the regime turned against the dissident churches, which enjoyed a high degree of public support, and crushed them. Efforts by the Russian church leadership to reach an understanding with the government were rebuffed.

---

5. The subject of religion in the Soviet Union has received considerable attention. See John Shelton Curtiss, *The Russian Church and the Soviet State, 1917-1950* (Boston: Little, Brown, 1953); Max Hayward and William C. Fletcher, eds., *Religion and the Soviet State: A Dilemma of Power* (London: Pall Mall Press, 1969); Walter Kolarz, *Religion in the Soviet Union* (New York: Praeger, 1968); Richard H. Marshall, ed., *Aspects of Religion in the Soviet Union, 1917-1967* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1971); Bohdan R. Bociurkiw, "Church-State Relations in the USSR," *Survey* (London), January 1968, 4-32; idem, "The Shaping of Soviet Religious Policy," *Problems of Communism*, May-June 1973, 37-51; and Dimitry Pospelovsky, *The Russian Church under the Soviet Regime, 1917-1982*, 2 vols. (Crestwood, N.Y.: St. Vladimir's Seminary Press, 1984).

In the 1930s the anti-religious activities of the Soviet state blended with the general wave of Stalinist terror that was being waged in the name of socialism. In this unprecedented genocide more than twenty million innocent people perished. People were punished not for what they did, but for who they were. As disclosed recently by the Russian presidential commission documenting Soviet repression, hundreds of bishops and tens of thousands of clergymen of all Christian denominations were murdered as dreaded "enemies of the people." The lucky ones were sentenced to long terms in Gulag slave-labour camps. Thousands of church buildings, representing the spiritual and artistic legacy of Russia, Ukraine, Belarus, Armenia, and Georgia were destroyed, and their religious contents looted. Of those that managed to survive the physical destruction, many became warehouses and museums of atheism.

On the eve of World War II, after years of systematic persecution, the historic Russian Orthodox Church had virtually ceased to exist as an institution. Throughout the entire Soviet Union fewer than four hundred churches still functioned with some regularity. The patriarchal office was vacant, and only four elderly bishops remained at liberty. Ironically, it was the outbreak of World War II and the German invasion of the Soviet Union that halted persecution and made possible the institutional survival of the Russian Orthodox Church. When it became obvious that the Soviet people would not fight to defend Communism, the pragmatic Stalin turned to patriotism for salvation. Perhaps guided by the tremendous revival of religious life in German-occupied areas of the USSR, Stalin, the lapsed seminarian, reached an understanding with the church leadership (Metropolitan Sergii), and the church responded with patriotic fervour.

The church's unselfish support for the war effort and its demonstrated loyalty to Stalin were rewarded with a legitimate though strictly controlled existence. The church was obliged to remain an exclusively liturgical institution; its social mission and educational function were not restored. Limited as its sphere of activity was, the Russian Orthodox Church once again enjoyed a greater status than other recognized religious denominations. It should be noted that the anti-religious legislation was not withdrawn; it was merely suspended, to be reintroduced whenever necessary. Both sides correctly viewed this truce between the brutal Communist regime and the Russian church as a temporary arrangement. The Kremlin made no secret of the fact that it was still committed to the eradication of all forms of religion.

Beginning in 1943 with Patriarch Sergii Stragorodsky (1867–1944), the church leadership saw its subservience to the Communist power, unpleasant as it was, as the only realistic way of preserving the church's structure until such time that Communism, a temporal force, would eventually disappear. The church, of course, was eternal. It had already outlived the Tatars and the tsars. This rationalization of subservience (the creed of resignation) as a strategy of survival was not shared by all Orthodox faithful. Many of them, perhaps in the millions,

turned away from the "tainted" and police-infiltrated official church and formed underground alternative religious communities, the "True Orthodox Church" so sympathetically discussed by William C. Fletcher.<sup>6</sup>

The governmental watchdog, the Council of Religious Affairs, was in charge of organized religion in the Soviet Union. But in practical terms, the welfare of parish life depended not so much on the central authority as on the attitude of the local Party officials. Their attitude toward religion was marked by outright hostility, indifference, or occasionally even sympathy. The rampant corruption of the Soviet bureaucracy actually allowed the wealthier parishes to buy protection from harassment even during periods of official persecution.

In the postwar period Stalin began using the church as an instrument of state policy.<sup>7</sup> The Russian Orthodox Church was authorized to play an important part in the Sovietization of Ukrainian and Belarusian lands that the USSR had taken from Poland. First, the Ukrainian and Belarusian Orthodox faithful were denied their own churches and integrated into the revived "imperial" Russian church.<sup>8</sup> Then the Ukrainian Greek Catholic Church, a bastion of Ukrainian nationalism in interwar Poland, with some five million adherents and extensive properties, was formally liquidated in 1946 by a patented Soviet method of forced "reunification" with Orthodoxy.<sup>9</sup> The move to abolish the Ukrainian Greek Catholic Church was inspired by the mutual interests of Stalin and the Moscow Patriarchate. Moscow had never recognized that church's legitimacy and feared its Western orientation. The majority of the banned Ukrainian Catholics, however, never reconciled themselves to Russian Orthodoxy, but as recent events in Ukraine have demonstrated, remained closet Catholics, worshipping in the underground church or simply pretending to be Orthodox.<sup>10</sup> The liquidation of the Ukrainian Greek Catholic Church was a tactical error on the part of the Kremlin, for it sharpened Western Ukrainian hostility towards the

6. *The Russian Orthodox Church Underground, 1917-1970* (London: Oxford University Press, 1971).

7. See Michael A. Meerson, "The Political Philosophy of the Russian Orthodox Episcopate in the Soviet Period," in *Church, Nation and State in Russia and Ukraine*, ed. Geoffrey A. Hosking (Edmonton: Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies Press, 1990), 210-27.

8. See my article "The Ukrainian Orthodox Church during World War II," *Vira i kultura/Faith and Culture* (Winnipeg), no. 7 (1985-9): 83-120.

9. See Bohdan Rostyslav Bociurkiw, *The Ukrainian Greek Catholic Church and the Soviet State (1939-1950)* (Edmonton and Toronto: Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies Press, 1996).

10. Bohdan Botsiurkiv [Bociurkiw], "Relihiia i natsionalnist u SRSR," *Suchasnist*, 1985, no. 7-8: 110-30; and idem, "The Ukrainian Catholic Church in the USSR under Gorbachev," *Problems of Communism*, November-December 1990, 1-19.

Soviet system. It would have been easier to control a legal church than a shady underground ecclesiastical organization.

The gradual improvement in the institutional life of the Russian Orthodox Church was severely shaken by the sudden and virulent anti-religious campaign undertaken by Nikita Khrushchev. This erratic Soviet leader (1953–64) actually tried to humanize Communism on the one hand, while destroying religion on the other. Mountains of anti-religious literature, renewed atheist instructions in schools and factories, the denunciation and arrests of priests, and even punishment of those Communists who tolerated religious practices characterized the anti-religious campaign of 1959–64. Although statistical data is vague, it is estimated that half of the working Orthodox churches were closed down, leaving approximately ten thousand churches, more than half of which were located in Ukraine, for an estimated thirty to fifty million still-practicing believers. While the casual Christians had succumbed to governmental pressure and withdrawn from the church, millions of hardcore faithful still clung to their religion. The fall of Khrushchev in 1964 ended the persecution, and the church began the slow process of regaining its losses. It became obvious in the 1970s that, despite the continuing promotion of atheism and the clumsy portrayal of Marxism-Leninism as a secular religion with Lenin as its central icon, the stagnating Brezhnev regime lacked both the ideological commitment and the political resolve to liquidate the church in the near future. Large-scale persecution was replaced with a system of harassment.

Severe restrictions on the printing of religious books were combined with an import embargo aimed at frustrating all religious pastoral and educational efforts. Theological expertise was certainly compromised. Religious instruction was inculcated orally and generally carried out privately at home and in prison camps. In the entire USSR there were only three Orthodox seminaries and one theological academy with a limited enrolment. Religious dissidents or activists, particularly non-Orthodox ones, were regularly arrested.

At the same time the Russian Orthodox Church became an important tool of the Kremlin. Serving as apologists of the Soviet system, the Moscow Patriarchate and its Orthodox counterparts in Eastern Europe became useful extensions of Soviet foreign policy.<sup>11</sup> As a member of the World Council of Churches and various world peace organizations, the Russian Orthodox Church and its allies diligently promoted the legitimization of the Soviet empire in Eastern Europe through detente and the Kremlin version of international peace and nuclear disarmament. Soviet propagandists sowed disinformation by using the

---

11. See John B. Dunlop, *The Recent Activities of the Moscow Patriarchate Abroad and in the USSR* (Seattle: University of Washington Press, 1967).



example of "freedom of religion" in the Soviet Union as proof of Soviet democracy.

### *The Church in Eastern Europe, 1945–91*

Between 1944 and 1948 Communist regimes were established in Eastern Europe mainly with the aid of the victorious Red Army. Indigenous Communist movements were relatively insignificant in Poland, Germany, Hungary, Bulgaria, and Romania; only in Yugoslavia and Czechoslovakia were they influential. As the Soviet forces of liberation turned into an army of occupation, local Communist regimes were instrumental in establishing a loyal buffer zone between the USSR and the West. Using Stalin's Soviet Union as the official model, the new East European regimes first set out to consolidate their power and then to launch a Soviet-type socialist revolution. Both stages involved the unleashing of a wide-ranging campaign of social purge and terror. In this formative phase of East European Communism, tens of thousands of "class enemies" were victimized by the brutal methods of Stalinist social engineering. As in the USSR, organized religion and the church were considered as formidable ideological and political adversaries of the new order.

Eastern Europe represented a mixture of Roman Catholic, Orthodox, and Protestant churches. In the pre-Communist period these churches had enjoyed status, influence, and considerable economic power. But they were not immune to the emerging forces of modernization and secularization. The Communist regimes attempted to establish firm control over organized religion by means of legislation and force. In varying degrees the churches were deprived of much of their traditional privileges and economic wealth. Their influence over secular education and young people was either seriously curtailed or eliminated outright. In the Roman Catholic countries of Poland, Hungary, and Czechoslovakia special efforts were made to isolate the local Catholic Church from the Vatican. The Vatican's uncompromising anti-Communist posture made it a target of vicious propaganda, which denounced it as a tool of American imperialism. The imposition of Marxist ideology and Soviet policies in Eastern Europe meant a direct confrontation with the local national churches, for they naturally resisted the drastic change to their status and loudly protested the general repression of real, potential, and imagined enemies of socialism. While all Communist regimes formally guaranteed in law "the liberty of conscience and confession and of all religious rituals," in practice they waged a bitter conflict with organized religion, especially in the initial stages of the consolidation of their power.

The situation in postwar Orthodox Europe reflected several aspects of the Russian experience. As in Russia, the Orthodox Churches there had had the status of national religions and were integral parts of the prewar states in Bulgaria (representing 85 percent of the population), Romania (70 percent), and Serbia (65 percent). As such, these official churches defined the national identity



of their adherents and tended to reflect the political views of the governments in power. In the Balkans the long-standing Byzantine tradition of political authoritarianism and cultural-religious conformity inadvertently facilitated the relatively rapid imposition of the Communist system. But there was an important difference in the attitudes of the Bulgarian and Romanian governments towards their churches. Unlike the Soviet version, their atheism was not militant. In fact, the Bulgarian and Romanian Communist regimes understood the historical and strategic importance of the Orthodox Church, and, at least in the short term, they chose to use the church for their own purposes rather than attempt to destroy it. Thus, while the survival of the church in Bulgaria and Romania was not threatened, the church's ecclesiastical independence, its social mission, and its traditional community leadership were certainly restricted and controlled. Still, the Orthodox Church in Bulgaria and Romania fared appreciably better than its Russian counterpart.<sup>12</sup>

In Bulgaria and Romania the church was purged of unreliable elements, and the legal church-state relationship was reorganized along the lines of the Russian Orthodox Church. In those countries the church reluctantly became an agent of the Communist regimes, whose policies effectively destroyed it as a potential centre of opposition. But as long as the faithful were still allowed to worship, they and their church remained outwardly content and passive. The submissive behaviour of the Orthodox Churches in Bulgaria and Romania was the reflection of the traditional Balkan strategy of survival by adapting outwardly to the occupying powers. Just as the church displayed passivity towards the Bulgarian regime, the same regime was equally subservient to Moscow, making Bulgaria the only satellite not to experience any crisis in its relationship with the Soviet Union.<sup>13</sup>

In the formative phase of Communist rule in Bulgaria, the primate of the Orthodox Church, Exarch Stefan, resisted the abolition of the church's traditional status and was removed. A number of priests were also arrested, but by Soviet standards the purge was rather mild. A new, mutually advantageous relationship

---

12. In 1966 Bulgaria had one church for every 1,600 worshippers, and in 1977 Romania had one church for every 1,100 faithful. Bucharest, with a population of 1.5 million, had 250 Orthodox churches, while Moscow, with a population of 7.6 million had only forty-three functioning Orthodox churches. See Jane Ellis, *The Russian Orthodox Church: A Contemporary History* (London and Sydney: Croom Helm, 1986), 16–17.

13. See Marin V. Pundeff, "Bulgarian Nationalism," in *Nationalism in Eastern Europe*, ed. Peter F. Sugar and Ivo J. Lederer (Seattle: University of Washington Press, 1969), 93–165; Christo Ognjanoff, "Religion and Atheism in Bulgaria under Communism," in the special issue *Twenty Years of Bulgarian Review* (1961–1980), June 1980, 65–77; and F. Stephen Larrabee, "Bulgaria's Politics of Conformity," *Problems of Communism*, January–February 1972, 42–52.

between the government and the church hierarchy was worked out in 1953. In return for complete obedience, the government constitutionally recognized the Bulgarian Orthodox Church as the historic church of the Bulgarian people. Furthermore, the Communist regime, with Moscow's approval, elevated the church to the prestigious status of patriarchate. The restoration of the patriarchal office (Patriarch Kiril), which was lost in the fourteenth century when the Turks occupied the Balkans, was a wise political move, as it appeased the Bulgarian sense of patriotism and pride. Curiously, Bulgaria even tolerated its Greek Catholic (Uniate) minority.

In return for its steadfast public support of the system and political leadership, the Bulgarian Orthodox Church was treated reasonably well and was allowed to remain the largest non-Communist institution in the country. In the 1970s it had nearly four thousand parishes, several monasteries, a seminary, a theological school, and a small publishing house that was permitted to produce limited religious literature. The Bulgarian church was maintained not only by donations from its mainly rural faithful, but also by operating several government-approved church-goods enterprises. Its monopoly of candle production, for example, was a major source of revenue. However, it was prevented from ministering to young people, and the latter were pressured into avoiding church services. It seems that the Bulgarian regime was in no hurry to liquidate a church that it controlled and manipulated. It was assumed that in time, as the old pious generation died out, the younger generation, educated in the spirit of Marxism-Leninism, would have no need for religion, and the church would wither away.

Romania had been a police state before the war and continued to be one after the end of the conflict. The Communist regime, especially under Nicolae Ceausescu, was the most repressive in the entire Soviet system, and there was little scope for any activity outside the Party structure.<sup>14</sup> Like its Bulgarian neighbour, the Romanian Orthodox Church had been a major force in the Romanian nation-building process in the nineteenth century. The Communist regime officially recognized the historical importance of that church by proclaiming it first among the country's Christian denominations and providing it with state funding. Unlike in the Soviet Union, a single Orthodox place of worship was closed. At the same time, however, the government placed numerous restrictions on the activities of organized religion, including the

---

14. See Keith Hitchins, "The Romanian Orthodox Church and the State," in *Religion and Atheism in the USSR and Eastern Europe*, ed. Bohdan R. Bociurkiw and John W. Strong (London: Macmillan), 279–308; and Stephen A. Fischer-Galati, "Autocracy, Orthodoxy, and Nationality in the Twentieth Century: The Romanian Case," *East European Quarterly* 18, no. 1 (March 1984): 25–34.

Orthodox Church. The Ministry of Cults had extensive discretionary power to interfere in religious affairs.

It was the Romanian Uniate Church (approx. 1,600,000 faithful) that suffered the most. Like the Ukrainian Catholic Church in the Soviet Union, it was singled out for liquidation both by the Orthodox Church and the government. To the Orthodox Church the Uniates were national renegades; to the Communists the church was an agent of Western imperialism. Those Uniate bishops and priests who protested their arbitrary incorporation into the Orthodox Church were imprisoned; some were executed. Nonetheless, their church was formally "reunited" with the Orthodox Church. The Roman Catholics escaped a similar fate because they consisted of ethnic minorities.

It was the Roman Catholic Church in Poland and, to a lesser extent, in Hungary and Czechoslovakia that was responsible for East European divergence from the Soviet model. As a result of the bitter medieval church-state struggle, the Roman Catholic Church had developed a strong tradition of independence from secular interference in ecclesiastical affairs. In the Communist period the Polish church, under the strong leadership of its primate, Stefan Cardinal Wyszyński, was particularly noted for its successful refusal to submit to the government. The steadfast resistance of the church to Communist pressure in Poland and Hungary and its denunciation of totalitarianism and atheism served as an inspiration to domestic pro-democracy elements.

In the 1960s Vatican II ushered in profound changes in the Roman Catholic Church, and the cold war between the papacy and the Communist world began to relax. The new Vatican policy of moderation ("from anathema to dialogue") resulted in a series of new concordats between the papacy and the Communist regimes of Catholic Eastern Europe, which ended the imposed isolation of the church there.<sup>15</sup> The Polish church gained much from the new relations, while the Czechoslovakian church remained the most repressed until the Prague Spring of 1968. In Czechoslovakia Roman Catholicism functioned mainly underground.<sup>16</sup>

---

15. See M. K. Dziewanowski, "The Vatican's Ostpolitik Reexamined," *Problems of Communism*, January-February 1978, 68-71.

16. The difficulties of religious life in Czechoslovakia are vividly summarized by Michael Lavelle, a Jesuit who spent twenty-eight years there:

In 1950, all religious orders were declared illegal, and many members of international religious orders were put in jail for periods from one year to fifteen years, with work camp stints tacked onto the lighter sentence. At the height of the Cold War, the Church did not know what its plight would be and assumed the future would mirror the Soviet model of repression. Clandestine seminaries were started in jails and work camps, with former teachers of philosophy and theology teaching the non-ordained members of the orders and bringing them to a readiness for ordination. Often they were ordained in prison,

The Catholic and Protestant experience under Communism ranged from serious difficulties to reasonable accommodation. In Hungary (which was 63 percent Roman Catholic and 25 percent Protestant), for instance, the Communist regime was in the hands of Soviet-trained leaders who strove to make Hungary a carbon copy of their sponsor. As a result, Hungary experienced more terror between 1948 and 1953 than any other satellite. József Cardinal Mindszenty, the conservative primate of the Hungarian Roman Catholic Church, was an outspoken anti-Communist who refused to co-operate with the regime.<sup>17</sup> The government imprisoned him and unleashed a crackdown on the Catholic Church. It dissolved religious orders, imprisoned nearly 4,000 monks, nuns and priests, confiscated church properties, secularized parochial schools, and disbanded the charitable organization Caritas. At the same time the secret police sowed disunity in the Catholic community by organizing a pro-Communist group of clergy called the "peace priests" into a short-lived Progressive Catholic Church. Despite an agreement between the Catholic bishops and the government (August 1950) whereby the church pledged loyalty to the state, pressure on the church continued. Protestant denominations (Calvinists and Lutherans) fared better because they did not have external ties like the Catholic Church and were more co-operative, especially on social issues.

After the failure of the Hungarian Revolution in 1956, relations between the pragmatic government of János Kádár (1956–88) and the churches improved. Perhaps the most important gain for the Catholic and Protestant churches was the right from 1957 to offer limited religious education in public schools after hours. Although attendance was voluntary, atheistic indoctrination of the young could be legally countered by religious instruction. In return the church recognized the determining role of the government in the area of senior church appointments and agreed to endorse the cause of socialism, except atheism. Further improvement in church-state relations was illustrated by the election of several prominent Protestant clergymen to the Hungarian parliament in 1975.

The religious situation in East Germany was unique in the Soviet empire.<sup>18</sup>

---

in secret. Some of these young men, twenty-six or twenty-seven years old at the time, were almost immediately secretly ordained bishops.

As these priests and bishops came out of prison, they began their underground activity forming study and prayer groups, clandestinely saying Mass in private homes, teaching catechism while working as brick layers, cab drivers, crane operators, truck drivers" ("New Perspectives for the Catholic Church in the Former Iron Curtain Countries," *Diaconia* [Scranton] 27, no. 2–3 [1994]: 129).

17. Mindszenty, who was sentenced to life imprisonment in 1948, was released during the Hungarian uprising in 1956 and found refuge in the American embassy until 1972, when he was allowed to immigrate to Austria. He died in Vienna in 1975.

18. See Pedro Ramet, "Church and Peace in the GDR," *Problems of Communism*,



First, by Soviet standards, the regime was comparatively moderate. Since the East German leadership was sensitive about its Nazi past and because Berlin was the focal point of East-West tensions, it refrained from undertaking Stalinist-type purges. Secondly, this was the only Communist state with a large and dynamic Protestant church—the Evangelical Lutheran Church (44 percent of the population). The Roman Catholic Church (47 percent) tended to be a relatively passive institution. Until 1952 the Evangelical Lutheran Church enjoyed relative freedom to perform a wide range of religious, social, and educational functions. Then, in response to escalating cold-war tensions, the East German government assumed a hard line on the question of church-state relations. For a time religious instruction in schools was banned, and the Lutheran church became isolated from its counterpart in West Germany. However, in 1969 the Federation of Evangelical Churches was established as a sign of new and improved church-state relations. The government reaffirmed Evangelical and Catholic ownership of extensive properties, including church lands, and provided funding from the national budget for salaries and limited social work. Evangelical theological faculties at six state universities were strengthened. The church in East Germany certainly did not appear to have been under siege.

The East German church leadership, while co-operative, was not subservient in the manner of the Orthodox hierarchies. It not only defended the principle and practice of religious freedom, but periodically spoke out independently on controversial national issues, such as immigration to the West, conscription, and peace. The difficulty that the government had in controlling the Protestant church without resorting to violence was largely due to the Lutheran tradition of putting individual conscience above institutional discipline. As Pedro Ramet points out, this lack of uniformity and consensus, which frustrated the authorities, was due to the fact that church-state relations worked out on one level may be rejected on another.<sup>19</sup>

In the late 1970s, as a result of improved relations between the two Germanys, a new church-state relationship was worked out. The agreement lifted most of the remaining restrictions on church activities, removed discrimination in education and employment against believers, and toned down the government's atheistic campaigns. The Evangelical Lutheran Church was even permitted limited access to radio and television, a privilege that existed only in Poland. Still, a sense of ambivalence continued to characterize church-state relations. For example, the Lutheran Church was generally supportive of the government welfare system, but it promoted its own version of a peace campaign called Swords into Ploughshares. The church enjoyed a high degree of credibility



among the young and the intelligentsia, but had little support among the industrial workers. In the 1980s the regime of Erich Honecker apparently revised its strategic approach to religion; it no longer characterized religion as a reactionary force but as a necessary part of a socialist society in the formative phase.

In the interwar period Czechoslovakia was the only democratic state in Eastern Europe. Religious toleration was a way of life there. Although the majority of the population was nominally Roman Catholic (77 percent), the nature of Catholicism differed between the Czechs and the Slovaks.<sup>20</sup> The Westernized and urban Czech culture had become secularized early in the twentieth century, and the Czech church played only a marginal political role in the lives of the people. Catholicism was not tied to the sense of Czech national identity, and an attitude of indifference towards religion seemed to dominate. There was also a strong Hussite Protestant tradition, which counterbalanced traditional Roman Catholicism. In contrast, Slovakia had a formidable Catholic tradition and church—one that constituted a defining part of the Slovak national consciousness and, as such, exerted dominant influence, especially over the rural population. Historically, the clergy had been the actual leaders of Slovak nationalism. This differing background was translated into a wider acceptance of Communist religious policies among the Czechs and into resistance among the Slovaks.

With the establishment of a neo-Stalinist regime in Czechoslovakia in 1948, the government mounted a concerted campaign against the church, closing seminaries, secularizing parochial schools, and confiscating church property. The ranks of the clergy were purged of “suspicious” elements. Nevertheless, religious worship was constitutionally permitted and generally allowed. In Slovakia the traditional influence of the Catholic clergy, although somewhat diminished, remained important among the peasantry.

During the brief Prague Spring of 1968 the reformist Communists, headed by Alexander Dubček (1923–93), assumed power and, two decades before Mikhail Gorbachev’s glasnost and perestroika, attempted to humanize and democratize the brutal Stalinist system. Stifled religious life was revitalized, and church contacts with Rome and the West were re-established. The Dubček government even promised to restore the right of religious education. But the leaders of the Prague Spring were ahead of their time, and they consequently panicked the repressive regimes of the Soviet empire. Moscow intervened, the Warsaw Pact forces crushed this experiment in real socialist democracy, and the

---

20. See Pedro Ramet, “Christianity and National Heritage among the Czechs and Slovaks,” in *Religion and Nationalism in Soviet and East European Politics*, ed. in Pedro Ramet (Durham: Duke University Press, 1989), 264–85.

Communist hard-liners resumed control of Czechoslovakia for the next twenty years.

The Catholic Church of Czechoslovakia assumed a politically quiescent appearance while quietly conducting its pastoral activities on both the public and the clandestine level. The fact that the church maintained its presence in the country was politically important. As one of the few surviving non-Communist institutions in the country, it acted as a beacon for a variety of political dissidents, including non-believers. People could and did express their inner hostility towards the regime by their association with the church, the symbolic and ideological antithesis of Communism. The church itself remained cautious and apolitical until 1988. Then, influenced by the events unfolding in the USSR and Poland, the elderly primate, František Cardinal Tomášek (1899–1992) called for religious freedom and human rights. A huge demonstration (600,000 participants) in Bratislava led by a newly formed Christian Democratic Movement was disbanded by force, and this act turned the cautious public against the government. The new coalition of the church, the political dissenters (Public Forum), and the general pro-democracy public resulted in the remarkable Velvet Revolution that peacefully overthrew the Communist regime in 1990.<sup>21</sup>

Of all the Soviet satellites Poland was the most restive. The Polish people despised their Moscow-imposed Communist regime and rejected conformity and obedience. Furthermore, the Polish government simply lacked the capacity to consolidate its authority over the resentful population. As a result, the society experienced much popular and industrial unrest, especially after Stalin's death in 1953. Dissident labour, peasant, intellectual, and Catholic elements eventually coalesced in 1980 into the famous Solidarity movement, which challenged the monopoly of Communist power.

The main reason why this popular opposition to the government did not erupt into a bloody upheaval was the Polish Catholic Church.<sup>22</sup> Poland represented the largest Catholic community (approx. 36 million adherents) in the Soviet empire. The Polish church was a powerful historical and national institution. During the Communist period it was not afraid to criticize the regime when it threatened its prerogatives. Cardinal Wyszyński proved to be a courageous and skilful opponent of the regime and of its encroachment on

---

21. See Otto Ulc, "The Bumpy Road of Czechoslovakia's Velvet Revolution," *Problems of Communism*, May–June 1992, 19–33; and Bernard Wheaton and Zdenek Kavan, *The Velvet Revolution: Czechoslovakia, 1988–1991* (Boulder, Colo.: Westview Press, 1992).

22. A special issue of *Canadian Slavonic Papers*, vol. 15, nos. 1–2 (1973), contains the following relevant articles: Jerzy Turowicz, "The Changing Catholicism in Poland," 151–57; Stanislaw Staron, "The State and Church," 158–75; and Ludwik Dembinski, "The Catholics and Politics in Poland," 176–83.

Catholic liberties. The Communist Party made attempts to subvert the church, but proved to be simply too weak and was obliged to tolerate its rival as an autonomous institution and alternative value system. In the Polish circumstances atheism had no chance of success. The church not only considered itself as the sole and true guardian of Polish national interests, but also acted as such with the approval and support of the people. The Catholic Church remained a political force that the Communist Party was obliged to recognize. In addition to its moral prestige and credibility, it succeeded in preserving its considerable economic power and legal means for further growth and influence. In practical terms this meant its extensive property holdings, a system of parochial schools, thousands of clergymen and nuns, its own press, seminaries, and lay associations, and the only denominational university (the Lublin Catholic University) in the Communist world. The fact that the Polish church grew larger and stronger in Communist Poland than it had been in prewar Poland testifies to the most unusual church-state relations in that country.<sup>23</sup> Poland was indeed a special case among the Soviet satellites.

The power and influence, both moral and political, of the Catholic Church was based on the deep religiosity of the Polish people and even more so on their identity with the church as an embodiment of the Polish nation. To be a Catholic was to be a Pole. The church nourished the acute sense of frustrated Polish nationalism with its appeals to tradition and patriotism, especially in its criticism of the servility of the Polish leadership to Moscow, which the Poles considered culturally inferior. With the election of Karol Cardinal Wojtyła to the papacy as John Paul II in 1978, the already formidable church received a powerful boost at the expense of the regime. The pope's three triumphant visits to his homeland as the uncrowned king of Poland further undermined the political legitimacy of the Polish government in the eyes of the nation.

In the 1980s the church became a key player in the political struggle between the incompetent but repressive regime and the increasingly rebellious Polish society, as represented in the Solidarity movement under the leadership of Lech Wałęsa. While sympathetic to popular grievances, the church leadership (led by Józef Cardinal Glemp) was mindful of the Czechoslovak tragedy of 1968 and determined to prevent a violent social upheaval and Soviet intervention. It preached moderation. Under martial law in the 1980s the prestige of the church was at its height. The majority of Poles demonstratively flocked to the church in a manifestation of contempt for the repressive and incompetent administration of General Wojciech Jaruzelski. Although mutual criticism characterized public

---

23. Between 1937 and 1972, the number of parishes increased from 5,170 to 6,470; churches and chapels from 7,257 to 13,600; priests from 11,239 to 18,650; and monks and nuns from 24,000 to 35,550. See Weingartner, *Church within Socialism*, 174.

church-state relations in the 1980s, secret negotiations between the government, the Catholic Church, and the pope eventually led to the restoration of civil authority. This retreat by the Polish government, in combination with Gorbachev's critical decision to keep out of Eastern European affairs, represented the beginning of the end of the Communist system in Poland. By 1990 the mediation of the Catholic Church made possible the peaceful transfer of power from the Communists to the nationalist and democratic forces represented by the Solidarity opposition. The successful example of the Polish drive for freedom had broad political ramifications. It served to erode further the unpopular Communist regimes in Eastern Europe and encouraged the non-Russian republics of the Soviet Union to demand their own national sovereignty.

### *The Collapse of the Empire*

Underground processes—the human-rights movements and minorities nationalism—were decisive factors in the undermining of Communism and of the Soviet Union itself during perestroika.<sup>24</sup> It must be emphasized that religion was an important part of both processes. The dissident movement in the Soviet Union emerged during the period of de-Stalinization under Khrushchev's rule. It became a catalyst around which small groups of democrats (including Communist reformers), minority nationalists, and human-rights and Christian activists coalesced into an illegal political opposition to the status quo. Although this opposition remained amorphous until the late 1980s, the dissidents succeeded in compromising the moral legitimacy of Communist rule by defiantly challenging the glaring discrepancies between constitutional guarantees of human rights and the regime's brutal violation of them. These highly principled and courageous members of the Soviet intelligentsia (e.g., Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn, Andrei

---

24. The subject of dissent in the Soviet empire has been well researched. The following works are useful: William C. Fletcher, "Religious Dissent in the USSR in the 1960s," *Slavic Review* 30, no. 2 (June 1971): 298–316; Lubomyr Hajda and Mark Beissinger, eds., *The Nationalities Factor in Soviet Politics and Society* (Boulder, Colo.: Westview Press, 1990); Lyman H. Legters, comp., *Eastern Europe: Transformation and Revolution, 1945–1991: Documents and Analyses* (Lexington, Mass.: Heath, 1992); Bohdan Nahaylo and Victor Swoboda, *Soviet Disunion: A History of the Nationalities Problem in the USSR* (New York: Free Press, 1990); Peter Reddaway, "Dissent in the Soviet Union," *Problems of Communism*, November–December 1983, 1–15; Walter D. Connor, "Dissent in a Complex Society," *Problems of Communism*, March–April 1973, 39–52; Peter Sugar and Ivo Lederer, eds., *Nationalism in Eastern Europe*; Michael Bordeaux, *Religious Ferment in Russia: Protestant Opposition to Soviet Religious Policy* (London: Macmillan, 1968); George W. Simmonds, ed., *Nationalism in the USSR and Eastern Europe in the Era of Brezhnev and Kosygin* (Detroit: University of Detroit Press, 1977); and John B. Dunlop, *The Rise of Russia and the Fall of the Soviet Empire* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1993).



Sakharov, and V"iacheslav Chornovil) captured the attention of the Western media and focussed the unwanted spotlight on Soviet internal affairs. Similar dissident movements emerged in Czechoslovakia, Poland, and Hungary. To the dissidents the question of religious freedom was an integral part of the broader issue of human rights. In the 1970s, contrary to the Helsinki Accords on human rights, which Moscow had signed, non-Orthodox denominations in the Soviet Union, notably the Baptists, Catholics, Adventists, and Pentecostals, albeit small in number, felt the full force of KGB harassment. Thanks to the underground press (*samizdat*) their plight could no longer be kept secret. In Moscow an underground body, the Christian Committee to Defend Believers' Rights headed by the imprisoned but defiant Orthodox priest Gleb Iakunin, sharply challenged Soviet lawlessness. Iakunin also berated the hierarchy of his church for its collaboration with the atheist regime. He was particularly critical of the church leadership's public denial that religious oppression existed in the Soviet Union.<sup>25</sup>

Religious-rights activists were joined by growing numbers of sympathetic non-believers. In Russia segments of the intelligentsia and youth, although indoctrinated in Communism, began to show interest in the Orthodox Church because it represented to them their history and culture. Others sought in religion moral values that were clearly absent in Marxism. Even Komsomol members were occasionally drawn to the church by a genuine curiosity about the "forbidden fruit." In the fourteen non-Russian Soviet republics, religion (Christianity and Islam) was also imbued with local, generally clandestine, nationalism. This interdependence was particularly noticeable in Lithuania, where the traditional Roman Catholic Church (two to three million faithful), which was more active underground than openly, came to personify the Lithuanian nation and its aspirations to independence.<sup>26</sup> In the Baltic republics, Ukraine, and the Moslem regions of Caucasia and Central Asia, local nationalism was stimulated by Moscow's rigid administrative centralism and Russian cultural imperialism. The nationalism of the national minorities often manifested itself in the numerous local heritage committees for the preservation and restoration of historical monuments, which in most cases meant the surviving churches and mosques. There was also a very practical reason for political dissidents to associate themselves with religion: under Soviet law religious crimes carried lighter penalties than political crimes.

---

25. See Ellis, *The Russian Orthodox Church*, 369–447.

26. The Catholic Committee for the Defense of Believers' Rights was formed in Lithuania in 1978 and acted as a catalyst for the defense of human and national rights in that republic despite police harassment.



Lithuania's agitation for independence was followed by similar demands from Latvia and Estonia, where Lutheranism was prominent.<sup>27</sup> Inspired by the Baltic republics' defiance of Moscow and partially safeguarded by Gorbachev's democratization process, popular nationalist-democratic movements mushroomed throughout the USSR, including Russia. The once mighty Communist Party of the Soviet Union, now confused and demoralized by the rapid changes and challenges, began to disintegrate. Its moderate elements turned to republican nationalism. With the Party in disarray, the empire lost its only ideological, political and administrative cohesiveness.

## *Conclusion*

Throughout their existence, the Communist regimes in the USSR and Eastern Europe demonstrated contempt for and fear of religion. Concerned about the traditional influence of the church and fearful of any alternative belief system that challenged the validity of Marxism and the totalitarianism of their Party, Communist leaders worked hard to reduce religion's influence on society. Using legal and coercive means, they attempted to create an allegedly superior atheist society by discrediting religion, repressing the faithful, and controlling the church. The ideological struggle and restrictions on religious activities in violation of constitutional guarantees negated the principle of church-state separation that formally characterized the Communist regimes in the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe.

It has been difficult to quantify the real impact of anti-religious policies in the Soviet empire. First of all, Soviet and East European statistical data has never been renowned for its reliability. It generally reflected government objectives rather than actual results. Second, the prevailing authoritarian or totalitarian political culture prevented free investigation. Thus scholars can only make educated guesses. Soviet data on the success of atheism is at odds with the post-Soviet religious revival among Christians and Moslems of the former USSR. At the same time significant numbers of people do not profess any religion, and this may be the result of the normal secularizing process of modernization rather than of official anti-religious propaganda.

The rulers of the Soviet empire were led by their own disinformation and propaganda to underestimate the actual depth of religious convictions in their domain. Ancient religious traditions and beliefs had too much history behind them to be swept away by violence or crude indoctrination. The millions of practicing Christians proved to be quite resilient in their adjustment to the new

---

27. A comprehensive account of the Baltic separation from the Soviet Union can be found in Anatol Lieven, *The Baltic Revolution: Estonia, Latvia, and Lithuania and the Path for Independence* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1993).

circumstances without giving up their basic beliefs. Adversity strengthened their faith and further alienated them from the Soviet system. By its mere presence organized religion offered an alternative value system to the secular religion of Marxism-Leninism. The repression of the church surrounded it with an aura of martyrdom, and this, as Lenin had feared, served to reinforce rather than weaken the faith of many of its followers.

Christianity also served a political function in undermining the Communist system. It did so by attracting to the church a variety of political and social dissidents, including non-believers, who could identify with the church's historical, national, or cultural role. Most importantly, however, there was a powerful historical relationship between nationalism and religion, which Communism did not fully understand. In the Soviet empire religious affiliation generally defined nationality. It was the clandestine nationalism of the subjugated nations that inspired and fuelled their drive for liberation from Soviet imperialism. Insofar as Christianity has been an integral component of Eastern European nationalism, it contributed directly and indirectly to the demise of Communism and the disintegration of the Soviet empire.

Soviet public policy in regard to the Russian Orthodox Church and other Christian denominations, as well as Islam, began to change from outbursts of hostility to open accommodation only in 1988.<sup>28</sup> This was the third year of Gorbachev's reforms and the millennium year of Christianity in Ukraine, Russia, and Belarus. Gorbachev's reconciliation with organized religion was most likely motivated by the need to generate greater public support for his reforms, which were being obstructed by the conservative Communists. In his historic meeting with Patriarch Aleksii II of Moscow, which took place on 29 April 1988, the Soviet leader expressed regret about the past treatment of the church and promised that there would be genuine freedom of conscience in the reformed Soviet Union.

Gorbachev's statement was followed by the relaxation of restrictions on many of the activities of all religious institutions. For the first time since the Bolshevik revolution, the clergy was encouraged to participate in civic affairs, and in 1990 more than three hundred clergymen, mainly Orthodox priests, were elected to the local soviets. Permission was granted to print religious material on government presses. The ban on the importation of the Bible and the Koran was lifted. The ban on churches' outreach activities also ended, and churches were authorized to engage in charitable and educational activities. After decades of repression and clandestine worship, emancipated Christianity was being reborn in a spectacular fashion. Despite the acute shortage of clergy, hundreds of old

---

28. See John B. Dunlop, "Gorbachev and Russian Orthodoxy," *Problems of Communism*, July–August 1989, 96–116.

churches were reopened, and new parishes were founded by enthusiastic believers. Among Christian denominations themselves, new tensions and conflicts erupted with the rise of a brand-new phenomenon—the competition for souls, church properties, and jurisdictions.

Not surprisingly, it was the Russian Orthodox Church that experienced a major loss in jurisdiction and wealth. Of the estimated eleven thousand Russian Orthodox parishes in the USSR in 1989 more than half were in Ukraine, with the majority located in the western part. It was in Western Ukraine that the two banned churches, the Ukrainian Autocephalous Orthodox Church and the Ukrainian Catholic Church, were revived.<sup>29</sup> Both drew heavily on Ukrainian nationalism and the membership and ecclesiastical property of the Russian church. With the disintegration of the USSR, the Russian church has been steadily pushed out of the former Soviet republics, where it is considered an imperial church and an agent of the Kremlin. Furthermore, as Orthodox dissidents have pointed out, the moral leadership of the Russian church, including Patriarch Aleksii, has been compromised by its collaboration with the former Communist regime. Given the hierarchy's past relationship with the Communist authorities, it is debatable whether the Russian Orthodox Church will be able to exercise a full measure of influence for quite some time. The rapid growth of Protestant denominations in Russia at the expense of the patriarchal church may be the reflection of its moral dilemma.

There are many explanations for the fall of the Soviet empire. Most identify the dismal performance of the Soviet economy as the prime reason. But the collapse may also be attributed to the moral bankruptcy of pseudo-scientific and misguided ideology. It is obvious that the Soviet system was based on ideological myth and terror, both physical and psychological. The enforced and irrational pursuit of an earthly paradise sacrificed millions of lives, inflicted tremendous suffering, and gave little in return. Gorbachev's noble but futile efforts to revive the moribund system by injecting it with doses of freedom and democracy only strengthened the centrifugal forces and hastened its inevitable disintegration. In Eastern Europe Communist authority was less firmly established than in the USSR. Its ultimate guarantee of security lay in Moscow, which had intervened militarily in 1956 and 1968 to save its puppet regimes from their own people. But Gorbachev was no longer prepared to enforce the myth of Communist solidarity and left these regimes to their own resources. This change in policy sounded the death knell for the Soviet satellite system. By 1989 democratic-nationalist coalitions, supplemented by repentant Communists, swept the old discredited regimes from power. The liberation from Soviet imperialism was

---

29. See my article "Church Politics in Contemporary Ukraine," *The Ukrainian Quarterly* 51, no. 1 (Spring 1996): 28–46.

achieved with remarkably little bloodshed. With the exception of Romania, where specific local conditions necessitated violence, the Communist regimes in Eastern Europe and the Soviet Union capitulated with a remarkable degree of passivity. The world witnessed a unique peacetime dissolution of its largest surviving empire. As the post-ideological society of Eastern Europe and the former Soviet Union returns to the market economy, it faces an uncertain and disturbing future—a future where nationalism, a critical ingredient of Eastern European Christianity, has been changing from a liberating force to a repressive one. The post-Soviet world certainly offers new challenges for Christianity.

# Jaroslav Rozumnyj: A Bibliography

*Nevenka Koscevic*

This is a bibliography of Professor Jaroslav Rozumnyj's works published in books and refereed scholarly journals, and of his major translating and editing work. A selection of his book reviews, newspaper articles, letters to the editor, and interviews is also included.

The English translations of the Ukrainian-language titles in this bibliography were kindly supplied by Professor Rozumnyj. In cases of bilingual publications, the Ukrainian and English titles are reproduced here as they originally appeared. The reverse chronological order is used throughout.

## *Books*

Editor in chief. *Naukovyi zbirnyk Ukrainskoho vilnoho universytetu* (Scholarly Collection of the Ukrainian Free University). Vol. 18. Munich: Ukrainische Freie Universität, 1996. 210 pp.

Literary editor. *Zbirnyk muzychnykh tvoriv na slova Markiiiana Shashkevycha: u 180 richchia vid dnia narodzhenniia poeta, 1811–1991* (Collection of Musical Compositions to the Lyrics of Markiiian Shashkevych, 1811–1911). Winnipeg: Markian Shashkevych Centre, 1992. 362 pp.

Editor. *New Soil, Old Roots: The Ukrainian Experience in Canada*. Winnipeg: Ukrainian Academy of Arts and Sciences in Canada, 1983. 334 pp.

Translator. *Orchard Lamps* by Ivan Drach. Ed. Stanley Kunitz. New York: Sheep Meadow Press, 1978. 71 pp.

Co-editor, with Alexander Baran and Oleh W. Gerus. *Iuvileinyi zbirnyk Ukrainskoi vilnoi akademii nauk v Kanadi / The Jubilee Collection of the Ukrainian Free Academy of Arts and Sciences in Canada*. Winnipeg: Ukrainian Free Academy of Arts and Sciences in Canada, 1976. 657 pp.

## *Articles in Books and Collections*

"Markiiian Shashkevych—taiemnytsi mitu" (Markiiian Shashkevych: The Secrets of a Myth). In *Shashkevychiana: Zbirnyk naukovykh prats* (Shashkevychiana: A Collection of Scholarly Works). Issue 3–4. New series. Lviv and



Winnipeg: Instytut ukrainoznavstva im. I. Krypiakevycha Natsionalnoi akademii nauk Ukrainy, 2000.

"Do dzherel problem ukrainskoi diaspory v Kanadi" (On the Sources of the Problems of the Ukrainian Diaspora in Canada). In *Publitsyst mysli i sertsia: Zbirnyk prats na poshanu 80-richchia Romana Oliinyka-Rakhmannoho* (A Publicist of Thought and Heart: A Collection of Works in Honour of Roman Olynyk-Rakhmanny on His Eightieth Birthday), 62–76. Ed. Fedir Pohrebennyk. Kyiv: Chetverta khvyliya, 2000.

"Skovoroda v poezii Dracha, Kalyntsia, Barky, Tychyny i Shevchuka (Do 200-richchia vid smerty filosofa, 1794–1994)" (Skovoroda in the Poetry of Drach, Kalynets, Barka, Tychyna and, Shevchuk [On (the Occasion of) the Second Centenary of the Philosopher's Death, 1774–1994]). In *Annales Universitatis Mariae Curie-Sklodowska. Section FF: Philologia* (Lublin) 14–15 (1997): 509–17.

"Druha svitova viina v suchasni ukrainskii poezii" (World War II in Contemporary Ukrainian Poetry). In *A Collection of Essays in Memory of Hryhory Luzhnytsky, 1903–1990*, 265–76. Zapysky Naukovoho tovarystva im. Shevchenka, vol. 212. Lviv and New York: Shevchenko Scientific Society, 1996.

"Tema zrazy u dramatychnykh tvorakh Liny Kostenko" (The Theme of Betrayal in Lina Kostenko's Dramatic Works). In *A Collection of Essays in Memory of Wasyly Lew, 1903–1991*, 242–8. Zapysky Naukovoho tovarystva im. Shevchenka, vol. 211. Lviv and New York: Shevchenko Scientific Society, 1996.

"Rozumove i chuttieve v 'Kaminnomu khresti' Vasyli Stefanyka" (The Rational and Emotional in Vasyly Stefanyk's "Stone Cross"). In *The Ukrainian Experience in Canada: Reflections / Zhyttievyi dosvid ukrainsiv v Kanada: Refleksii*, 231–44. Ed. Oleh W. Gerus et al. Winnipeg: Ukrainian Academy of Arts and Sciences in Canada, 1995.

"Povernennia do relihiinykh tem Ivana Franka" (Ivan Franko's Religious Themes Revisited). In *Druhyi Mizhnarodnyi konhres ukrainistiv, Lviv, 22–28 serpnia 1993: Dopovidi i povidomlennia. Literaturoznavstvo* (Second International Congress of Ukrainian Studies, Lviv, 22–8 August 1993: Lectures and Reports. Literary Scholarship), 306–9. Lviv: Akademia nauk Ukrainy, 1993.

"Chy vycherpano 'Moskalevu krynytsiu'?" (Has "The Soldier's Well" Been Exhausted?). In *Svity Tarasa Shevchenka: Zbirnyk statei do 175-richchia z dnia narodzhennia poeta* (The Worlds of Taras Shevchenko: A Collection of Articles Commemorating the 175th Anniversary of the Poet's Birth), 91–110. Ed. Larysa M. L. Zaleska Onyshkevych et al. Zapysky Naukovoho tovarystva im. Shevchenka, vol. 214. New York: Shevchenko Scientific Society, 1991.

- "Interpretatsiia khrystianskykh tem u modernii ukrainskii poezii" (Interpretation of Christian Themes in Modern Ukrainian Poetry). In *Living Record: Essays in Memory of Constantine Bida, 1916–1979*, 122–33. Ed. Irena R. Makaryk. University of Ottawa Ukrainian Studies, no. 12. Ottawa: University of Ottawa Press, 1991.
- "Leonid Kyselov—fenomen poetychnyi chy psykholohichnyi?" (Leonid Kyselov—A Poetic or Psychological Phenomenon?). In Leonid Kyselov, *Tilky dvichi zhyvemo: Virshi, proza, spohady pro poeta* (We Live Only Twice: Poetry, Prose, Memoirs about the Poet), 350–70. Kyiv: Dnipro, 1991.
- "Lina Kostenko's Dramatic Poems: Metahistoricity of Themes and Innovation in Genre." In *Slavic Drama: The Question of Innovation: Proceedings*, 143–50. Ed. Andrew Donskov and Richard Sokoloski. Ottawa: University of Ottawa, 1991.
- "'Moskaleva krynytsia' okom ironii" ("The Soldier's Well" from an Ironic Perspective). In *Zbirnyk tysiacholittia khrystianstva v Ukraini, 988–1988* (The Millennium of Christianity in Ukraine Collection, 988–1988), 155–74. Ed. Oleksander Baran and Oleh W. Gerus. Winnipeg: Ukrainian Academy of Arts and Sciences in Canada, 1991.
- "The *Ostrih Bible* and Other Sources of Pamvo Berynda's *Lexicon* (1627)." In *Millennium of Christianity in Ukraine, 988–1988*, 147–62. Ed. Oleh W. Gerus and Alexander Baran. Winnipeg: Ukrainian Academy of Arts and Sciences in Canada, 1989.
- "The Return of a Symbol: Shevchenko's 'Kateryna' in Contemporary Soviet Ukrainian Literature." In *In Working Order: Essays Presented to G. S. N. Luckyj*, 129–42. Vol. 14, nos. 1–2 (Summer–Winter 1989) of *Journal of Ukrainian Studies*. Ed. E. N. Burstynsky and R. Lindheim.
- "Vid symbolizmu do ekzystentsiializmu: Khrystianski elementy v ukrainskii poezii dvadtsiatoho stolitta" (From Symbolism to Existentialism: Christian Elements in Twentieth-Century Ukrainian Poetry), 491–515. In *Zbirnyk prats Iuvileinoho komitetu* (The Jubilee Committee's Collection of Papers). Ed. Wolodymyr Janiw. Munich: 1989.
- "Markiiian Shashkevych: Taiemnytsi mitu" (Markiiian Shashkevych: Secrets of a Myth). In *Rusalka Dnistrova, 1837–1987: Fotokopiia z vydannia 1837 r. zi slovom vid vydavtsiv ta vstupnoi statteiu i ikh perekladamy na movu ukrainskoi diiaspory* (The Dniester Nymph: Photocopy of the [Original] 1837 Edition with a Foreword from the Publishers and an Introduction and Their Translations into Languages Used by the Ukrainian Diaspora), 13–23. Winnipeg: Markian Shashkevych Centre, 1987. Translated as "Markian Shashkevych: Secrets of the Myth," 25–33; "Markian Shashkevych: Les secrets de son oeuvre mythique," 35–45; "Markijan Shaschkewytch: Geheimnisse eines Mythos," 47–56; "Markian Shashkevych: Arcanos de un Mito," 57–65; and "Markian Chachkevtych: Os Misterios do Mito," 67–76.

- "One Immigrant's Saga: The Sheptycky Colony in Quebec." In *New Soil, Old Roots: The Ukrainian Experience in Canada*, 58–70. Ed. Jaroslav Rozumnyj. Winnipeg: Ukrainian Academy of Arts and Sciences in Canada, 1983.
- "Etymologies of Proper Names in Pamvo Berynda's *Lexicon* of 1627." In *Iuvileinyi zbirnyk Ukrainkoi vilnoi akademii nauk v Kanadi / The Jubilee Collection of the Ukrainian Free Academy of Arts and Sciences in Canada*, 181–212. Winnipeg: Ukrainian Free Academy of Arts and Sciences in Canada, 1976.
- "Pokhodzhennia Pamva Beryndy" (Pamvo Berynda's Origin). In *Slovo: Zbirnyk. Literatura, mystetstvo, krytyka, memuary, dokumenty* 6 (1976): 251–4. Toronto: Ob"iednannia ukrainskykh pysmennykiv u Kanadi "Slovo."
- "Problemy liudskykh vzaiemyn u 'Kaminnomu hospodari' Lesi Ukrainky" (The Problems of Human Relations in Lesia Ukrainka's "Stone Host"). In *Slovo: zbirnyk. Literatura, mystetstvo, krytyka, memuary, dokumenty* 5 (1973): 205–10. Edmonton: Ob"iednannia ukrainskykh pysmennykiv u Kanadi "Slovo."
- "Pysmennytsia, shcho liubyla osin i samotnist" (A Writer Who Loved Autumn and Solitude). Introduction to Oleksandra Kopach, *Movostyl Olhy Kobylianskoi* (Olha Kobylianska's Language and Style), 5–10. Toronto: Shevchenko Scientific Society in Canada, 1972.
- "Chy budut novi shestydesiatnyky?" (Will There Be [Any] New Shestydesiatnyky?) In *Kalendar-almanakh "Novoho shliakhu" na 1971 rik* (Calendar-Almanac: 40th Anniversary of *The New Pathway*), 87–9. Winnipeg, 1971. (Signed S. R-ch)

## Encyclopedia Articles

- "Franko, Ivan Yakovych". In *The Modern Encyclopedia of Russian and Soviet Literatures: Including Non-Russian and Emigre Literatures*. Vol. 8: 19–28. Ed. Harry B. Weber. Gulf Breeze, Fla.: Academic International Press, 1987.
- "Drach, Ivan Fedorovych." In *The Modern Encyclopedia of Russian and Soviet Literatures: Including Non-Russian and Emigre Literatures*. Vol. 6: 1–6. Ed. Harry B. Weber. Gulf Breeze, Fla.: Academic International Press, 1982.

## Articles in Journals

- "Lesya Ukrayinka's Don Juan Revisited." *The Ukrainian Quarterly* 55, no. 3–4 (Fall–Winter 1999): 252–9.
- "Chy my shche ziidemosia znovu?: Kyrylo-metodiivske bratstvo z perspektyvy 150 rokiv" (Shall We Ever Meet Again?: The Cyril and Methodius Brotherhood Seen 150 Years Later). *Suchasnist* (Kyiv), 1998, no. 12: 121–35.

- "Problemy i perspektyvy ukrainskoi diiaspory v Kanadi" (The Problems and Perspectives of the Ukrainian Diaspora in Canada). *Ukrainski problemy* (Kyiv), 1998, no. 2: 110–16.
- "U poshukakh hluzdu: Skovoroda v poezii Volodymyra Pidpaloho" (In Search of Sense: Skovoroda in Volodymyr Pidpaly's Poetry). *Literaturna Ukraina* (Kyiv), 23 May 1996.
- "Mykola Vinhranovs'kyi's Cine-Poem *Zoloti Vorota*." *The Ukrainian Quarterly* 51, no. 4 (Winter 1995): 350–8.
- "Markiian Shashkevych—synonim natsionalnoho vidrozhennia" (Markiian Shashkevych—The Synonym of the [Ukrainian] National Revival). *Suchasnist*, 1992, no. 6: 138–42.
- "Stefanykiv portret emigranta: Do storichchia ukrainskoho poselennia v Kanadi, 1891–1991" (Stefanyk's Portrait of the Emigrant: On the (Occasion of the) Centenary of Ukrainian Emigration to Canada). *Suchasnist*, 1992, no. 2: 151–6.
- "Ukrainskist Dona Zhuana v 'Kaminnomu hospodari' Lesi Ukrainky" (Don Juan's Ukrainianness in Lesia Ukrainka's "Stone Host"). *Suchasnist*, 1991, no. 12: 26–36.
- "Moskaleva krynytsia' prymruzhnym okom" ("The Russian Soldier's Well" Viewed with a Jaundiced Eye). *Suchasnist*, 1991, no. 3: 25–41. Abridged version in *Slovo i chas* (Kyiv), 1991, no. 11: 57–63.
- "Plid kaiattia: Problematyka navkolo chornobylskoi temy" (The Fruit of Repentance: Issues Surrounding the Theme of [the] Chornobyl [Nuclear Accident]). *Literaturna Ukraina*, 25 April 1991.
- "Literaturna diialnist M. Shashkevycha i zachidnoukrainske vidrozhennia 19-ho stolittia" (M. Shashkevych's Literary Activity and the Nineteenth-Century West Ukrainian Revival). *Bohosloviia* (Rome) 52 (1988): 86–107.
- "Vid realnosti do mrii: Kinopoema Mykoly Vinhranovskoho 'Zoloti vorota.'" (From Reality to a Dream: Mykola Vinhranovsky's [Cinematic Poem] "The Golden Gate"). *Studia Ucrainica* (Ottawa) 4 (1988): 53–65.
- "Vidkrytyi lyst do Borysa Oliinyka" (An Open Letter to Borys Oliinyk). *Suchasnist*, 1988, no. 3: 126–7.
- "Ulas Samchuk, 1905–1987." *Suchasnist*, 1987, no. 12: 30–4.
- "Heroika chy antyheroika: Viina v poezii shestydesiatnykiv i Niu-Iorskoi hrupy" (Heroism or Anti-Heroism: War in the Poetry of the Shestydesiatnyky and the New York Group). *Suchasnist*, 1986, no. 11: 34–45.
- "Povernennia symbolu: Shevchenkova Kateryna v suchasni ukrainskii literaturi" (The Return of a Symbol: Shevchenko's Kateryna in Contemporary Ukrainian Literature). *Suchasnist*, 1986, no. 3: 9–22.
- "Mity v poezii Leonida Kyselova" (Myths in Leonid Kyselov's Poetry). *Studia Ucrainica* 2 (1984): 65–83.

- "Leonid Kyselov—fenomen poetychnyi chy psykholohichnyi?" (Leonid Kyselov: A Poetic or Psychological Phenomenon?). *Suchasnist*, 1984, no. 7–8: 37–58.
- "Markiiian Shashkevych u molodii poezii" (Markian Shashkevych in Poetry by Youngsters). *Shashkevychiana* (Winnipeg), no. 10 (1984): 2–5.
- "A Report on Ukrainian Language Textbooks (in Universities and Colleges)." *Journal of Ukrainian Graduate Studies* (Toronto) 3, no. 2 (Fall 1978): 68–82.
- "Byzantinism and Idealism in the Aesthetic Views of Taras Shevchenko." *Canadian Slavonic Papers* 19, no. 2 (1977): 193–207.
- "Conflicting Ideals in Lesia Ukrainka's 'Stone Host.'" *Canadian Slavonic Papers* 15, no. 3 (1973): 382–9.
- "Estetychni pohliady Shevchenka na vizantynizm i nimetskyi idealizm" (Shevchenko's Aesthetic Views on Byzantinism and German Idealism). *Suchasnist*, 1973, no. 7–8: 52–69.
- "Panika vid 'Mecha Areia.'" (The Panic [Caused] by [Ivan Bilyk's Novel] *Arei's Sword*). *Novi dni* (Toronto), no. 284 (September 1973): 9–11.
- "Ukrainian American Poet of the Avant Garde (George Tarnawsky)." *Forum: A Ukrainian Review* (Scranton, Penn.), no. 21 (1973): 18.
- "U Kyievi vidznacheno uchenoho-poeta Ahatanhela Krymskoho" (The Scholar and Poet Ahatanhel Krymsky Commemorated in Kyiv). *Suchasnist*, 1971, no. 4: 126.
- "U chomu velych M. Shashkevycha" (What Makes Markiiian Shashkevych Great). *Shaskevychiana*, no. 11 (1968): 248–56.
- "Teaching of Ukrainian in Canada." *Manitoba Modern Language Bulletin* 2, no. 2 (Winter 1967): 11–13.
- "M. Kociubynskyj, 1864–1964 (Centenary of Birth)." *Zhinochyi svit* (Winnipeg), 16, no. 6 (June 1965): 13.

## *Writings in Newspapers and Bulletins*

- "Reminiscences of a Good Person." *Postup / Progress* (Winnipeg), 7 December 1997.
- "Rozpochynaietsia pratsia nad kanadskym tomom 'Entsyklopedii ukrainskoi diiaspory'" (Work on the Canadian Volume of the *Encyclopedia of the Ukrainian Diaspora* Has Begun). *Novyi shliakh* (Toronto), 22 March 1997.
- "Pratsia nad kanadskym tomom 'Entsyklopedii ukrainskoi diiaspory' i deshcho pro ukrainsku kanadsku diiasporu" (Work in Progress on the *Encyclopedia of the Ukrainian Diaspora* and Some Remarks About the Ukrainian Diaspora in Canada). *Biuleten / Ukrainska vilna akademiia nauk (UVAN) u Kanadi* (Bulletin / Ukrainian Academy of Arts and Sciences in Canada), no. 34 (Summer 1997).
- "Kanadskyi tom 'Entsyklopedii ukrainskoi diiaspory' — vidpovidalnist kanadskykh ukraintsiiv" (The Canadian Volume of the *Encyclopedia of the*



- Ukrainian Diaspora Is the Responsibility of Ukrainian Canadians*) *Biuletén / Ukrainska vilna akademiia nauk (UVAN) u Kanadi* (Bulletin / Ukrainian Academy of Arts and Sciences in Canada), no. 33 (1996–7): 3–4
- “Shevchenko 1996: Slovo na Shevchenkivskomu vechori v Miunkheni, 16 bereznia 1996” (Shevchenko 1996: Remarks at the Evening Commemorating Shevchenko in Munich, 16 March 1996). *Ukrainskyi holos / Ukrainian Voice* (Winnipeg), 1 April 1996.
- “Iuvilei UVU: Vchora i zavtra” (The Ukrainian Free University’s Anniversaries: Yesterday and Tomorrow). *Ukrainski visti / Ukrainian News* (Edmonton), 13–16 January 1996.
- “Kongres italiiskykh ukrainistiv” (Congress of the Italian Association for Ukrainian Studies). *Ukraina i svit / Ukraine and the World* (Toronto) 7–13 February 1996.
- “Beresteisko-uzhhorodskyi kongres u Lvovi” (Brest-Uzhhorod Congress in Lviv). *Ukrainskyi holos / Ukrainian Voice* (Winnipeg) 31 July 1995.
- “Nationalnyi universytet ‘Kyievo-Mohylianska Akademiia’” (The National University of “Kyiv-Mohyla Academy”). *Ukrainskyi holos / Ukrainian Voice* (Winnipeg). April 1995.
- “Mystetska vystavka O. Mazuryka v Vinniugu” (O. Mazuryk’s Art Exhibit in Winnipeg). *Novyi shliakh* (Toronto), 11 June 1994; and *Ukrainskyi holos / Ukrainian Voice* (Winnipeg), 6 June 1994.
- “September 1993, the Month of Mourning and Memory.” *Postup / Progress* (Winnipeg), 17 October 1993.
- “Litnia polova arkeolohichna shkola Universytetu ‘Kyievo-Mohylianska Akademiia’” (The Archaeological Fieldwork Summer School of the University of “Kyiv-Mohyla Academy”). *Svoboda* (New Jersey), 6 March 1993.
- “Maibutnie Kanadskoho tovarystva prykhylnykiv Rukhu” (The Future of the Canadian Friends of *Rukh*). *Ukrainskyi holos / Ukrainian Voice* (Winnipeg), 29 March, 1993.
- “Eksperty UNESCO pro pratsiu UKMA” (UNESCO Experts about the University of “Kyiv-Mohyla Academy”). *Ukrainskyi holos / Ukrainian voice* (Winnipeg), 2 August 1993.
- “Kyievo-Mohylianska Akademiia” (The Kyiv-Mohyla Academy). *Visnyk / The Herald* (Winnipeg), November 1992.
- “Universytet ‘Kyievo-Mohylianska Akademiia’” (The University of “Kyiv-Mohyla Academy”). *Novyi shliakh* (Toronto), 21–8 December 1991.
- “Vasyl Stefanyk: Emigrant — ‘i bil, i poeziia’” (Vasyl Stefanyk: The emigrant — “the pain and the poetry”). *Pedahoh Prykarpattia* (Ivano-Frankivsk), 1 October 1991.
- “Siimo, a zbyraty budem: Iuvilei hromadskoi hidnosti. Slovo na benketi 50-littia sviashchenstva Metropolyta Maksyma Hermaniuka” (Sow and We Shall

- Reap: A Jubilee of Service to the Community. Remarks at the Banquet Celebrating the Fiftieth Anniversary of Metropolitan Maxim Hermaniuk's Priesthood). *Postup / Progress* (Winnipeg), 11 December 1988.
- "Tovarystvo Ukraina i holod 1933 roku" (The Ukraina Association and the 1933 Famine). *Ukrainskyi holos / Ukrainian Voice* (Winnipeg), 19 December 1988. Unsigned editorial.
- "Do 150-richchia 'Rusalky Dnistrovoi'" (On the Occasion of the 150th Anniversary of *The Dnister Nymph*). *Ukrainskyi holos / Ukrainian Voice* (Winnipeg), 23 November 1987. Unsigned editorial.
- "Dva iuvilei, odna ideia" (Two Jubilees, One Idea). *Ukrainskyi holos / Ukrainian Voice* (Winnipeg), 20 October 1986.
- "Tradytiiine v novomu odiazi" (The Traditional in New Attire). *Ukrainski visti / Ukrainian News* (Edmonton), 2 January 1986.
- "A New voice of Tradition." *Ukrainian Voice / Canadian Farmer* (Winnipeg), 24 March 1986.
- "Ukrainska derzhavnist pered sudom" (Ukrainian Statehood on Trial). *Novyi shliakh* (Toronto), 26 March 1983.
- "Vidznachennia sumnoi daty [na Manitobskomu universyteti]: Holod 1933" (Commemoration [at the University of Manitoba] of a Mournful Event: The Famine of 1933). *Novyi shliakh* (Toronto), 12 November 1983. Unsigned article.
- "Shevchenkivski chytannia" (Shevchenko Readings). *Novyi shliakh* (Toronto), 1 May 1982. Signed P. S.
- "Myr vam" (Peace Be Unto You [Dedicated to Leonid Novychenko]). *Novyi shliakh* (Toronto), 19 August 1981. Signed Ohliadach (the Observer).
- "Dumky z pryvodu sviata derzhavnosti" (Reflections on [Ukrainian] Independence Day Celebrations). *Ukrainskyi holos / Ukrainian Voice* (Winnipeg), 18 February 1981.
- "Zamist feiletona" (Instead of a Feuilleton). *Novyi shliakh* (Toronto), 4–11 August 1979. Signed P. Laureatus.
- "Rolia dukhovnoho providnyka: Slovo z nahody iuvileiu Mytropolyta Hermaniuka" (The Role of a Spiritual Leader: Remarks on the Occasion of Metropolitan Hermaniuk's Jubilee). *Postup / Progress* (Winnipeg), 24 September 1978.
- "Vystavka B. Bozhemskoho v Vinnipezi" (B. Bozhemsky's Art Exhibit in Winnipeg). *Svoboda* (Jersey City), 16 January 1976; and *Novyi shliakh* (Toronto), 3–10 January 1976.
- "A Rare Book Donated to the Ukrainian [Cultural and Educational] Centre [in Winnipeg]." *Kanadska Ukraina / The Canadian Ukraine*, no. 2 (1976).
- "Uspishna dysertatsiia ukrainskoho muzykoznavtsia" (A Successful Dissertation by a Ukrainian Musicologist). *Ekran* (Chicago and Detroit), no. 81–2 (1975): 9. Reprint from *Khrystyianskyi holos* (Munich), no. 31 (134), 5 August 1951.

- "Holliandtsi po-nashomu" (The Dutch in Ukrainian). *Ekran* (Chicago and Detroit), no. 81–82 (1975): 4–5. Reprint from *Khrystyianskyi holos* (Munich), 1951.
- "Poetesa Patrytsiia Kylyna" (Poetess Patricia Kylyna). *Svoboda* (Jersey City), 10 November 1971.
- "Iurii Tarnavsky" (Yuriy Tarnawsky). *Novyi shliakh* (Winnipeg and Toronto), 20 November 1971.
- "Vystupaiut u Vinnipeg [IU. Tarnavsky i P. Kylyna]" (An Evening of Poetry in Winnipeg with Y. Tarnawsky and P. Kylyna). *Ukrainskyi holos / Ukrainian Voice* (Winnipeg), 17 November 1971.
- "Vechir Iuriia Tarnavskoho v Vinnipeg" (Yuriy Tarnawsky's Poetry Evening in Winnipeg). *Svoboda* (Jersey City), 18 November 1971.
- "Vechir, prysviachenyi Bachvanskym rusynam" (An Evening Dedicated to the Rusyns of the Bachka Region). *Ukrainskyi holos / Ukrainian Voice* (Winnipeg), 21 April 1971.
- "Poet Bohdan Boichuk" (The Poet Bohdan Boychuk). *Novyi shliakh* (Toronto), 26 October 1968.
- "Deshcho pro Frankovoho heroia" (Some Thoughts about [Ivan] Franko's Hero). *Novyi shliakh* (Winnipeg and Toronto), 18 June 1966.
- "Poet Vitalii Korotych: Literaturnyi syluet" (The Poet Vitalii Korotych: A Literary Silhouette). *Novyi shliakh* (Toronto), 8 May 1965.
- "Renesans shkilnytstva i osvity v Ukraini Mazepynskoho periodu" (The Revival of Education in Ukraine during the Mazepa Period). *Nasha meta* (Toronto), 1960, nos. 14–17.
- "Vyslidy Chetvertoho z'izdu TUSM im. M. Mikhnovskoho" (The Results of the Fourth Convention of the Mikhnovsky Ukrainian Student Association). *Ukrainskyi samostiinyk* (Munich), 27 November 1955, 6.

## Letters to the Editor

- Ukrainskyi holos / Ukrainian voice* (Winnipeg), 17 April 1989.
- "Soviet Riots." *Winnipeg Free Press*, 9 February 1987.
- "Stick to Selling." *Winnipeg Free Press*, 10 March 1986.
- Novyi shliakh* (Toronto), 20 June 1981. Signed I. H. Parubochy.

## Reviews and Review Articles

- Lev Krevza's *A Defense of Church Unity* and Zaxarija Kopystens'kyj's *Palinodia*, Part 1: *Texts*. Trans. with a foreword by Bohdan Strumiński. Ed. Roman Koropec'kyj et al.; Part 2: *Sources*. Compiled by Bohdan Strumiński and Igor Strumiński. Harvard Library of Early Ukrainian Literature, English Translations, Vol. 3. pts. 1–2. Cambridge: Ukrainian Research Institute, Harvard University, 1995. *Ukrainian Quarterly* 53, no. 3 (Fall 1997): 265–7.

- The Refugee Experience: Ukrainian Displaced Persons after World War II.* Ed. Wsewolod W. Isajiw, Yury Boshyk, and Roman Senkus. Edmonton: Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies, 1992. *Ethnic Forum*, 1995, 215–18.
- Sofiia Maidanska. *Osvidchennia: Poezii.* (Sofiia Maidanska. *Declaration: Poems*). Kyiv: Molod, 1990. *Suchasnist*, 1994, no. 4: 102–3.
- Pavlo Zaitsev. *Taras Shevchenko: A Life.* Ed., abridged, and trans. with an intro. by George S. N. Luckyj. Toronto: University of Toronto Press, for the Shevchenko Scientific Society, 1988. *Journal of Ukrainian Studies* 14, no. 1 (Summer 1990): 77–8.
- The World's Major Languages.* Ed. Bernard Comrie. New York: Oxford University Press, 1987. *Suchasnist* 1988, no. 11: 90–1.
- Ivan Franko. *The Master's Jest.* Trans. Roman Tatchyn. Intro. by Leonid Rudnytzky. New York: Shevchenko Scientific Society, 1979. 133 pp. *Harvard Ukrainian Studies* 6, no. 4 (1982): 536–9.
- Ukrainians in Quebec, 1890–1945: The Formative Years.* Les Courts Mètrages, 1980. Film, 28 min. *OKO* (Montreal) 2, no. 9 (1980).
- Michael Ewanchuk. *Spruce, Swamp and Stone.* Winnipeg: M. Ewanchuk, 1977. *The University of Manitoba Alumni Journal* (Winnipeg) 40, no. 1 (Autumn 1979): 15–16.
- Oleksander Baran. *Homiletychni "besidy" Mykhaila Luchkaia z 1830 roku* (Mykhailo Luchkai's Homiletic "Talks" of 1830). Winnipeg: Ukrainian Academy of Arts and Sciences in Canada, 1977. *Ukrainskyi istoryk* (New York), 1979, no. 1–4 (61–4): 158–9.
- Iar Slavutych. *Zavoioynyky prerii* (The Conquerors of the Prairies). 2d ed. Edmonton: Slavuta, 1974. In *Tvorchist Iara Slavutycha: Statti i retsenzii* (The Works of Yar Slavutych: Essays and Reviews), 282–5. Ed. Wolodymyr Zyla. Edmonton: Iuvileinyi komitet, 1978.
- "Dmytro Chyzhevsky anhliiskoiu movoiu" (Chyzhevsky in English) = Dmytro Čyžev's'kyj. *A History of Ukrainian Literature: From the 11th to the End of the 19th Century.* Littleton, Colo.: Ukrainian Academic Press, 1975. *Suchasnist* 16 (1976), no. 7–8: 234–5; and in *Canadian Modern Language Review* 33, no. 5 (1977): 757.
- "Pioneer Saga with Live Heroes" = Mykhailo Ivanchuk. *Istoriia ukrainskoho poselennia v okolytsi Gimli* (Michael Ewanchuk. *History of Ukrainian Settlement in the Gimli District*). Winnipeg: Trident Press, 1975. *The Winnipeg Tribune*, 14 August 1976.
- Ivan Kovach. *Iavir, shcho v poli odynokyi: Noveli* (The Lone Sycamore Maple in the Field: Stories). Bucharest: Kriterion, 1974. *Novyi shliakh* (Toronto), 24 May 1975.
- George Duravetz. *Ukrainian: Conversational and Grammatical, Level I.* Toronto: Ukrainian Teachers Committee, Ontario Modern Language Teachers Association, 1973. *Novi dni* (Toronto), no. 305 (1975).

- Ivan Bodnarchuk. *Pokolinnia zhidutsia: Povist* (The Generations Will Come Together: A Novel). Edmonton: Slovo, 1974. *Suchasnist*, 1974, no. 11: 113–15.
- Dmitrij Čiževskij. *Comparative History of Slavic Literatures*. Trans. from the German by Richard Noel Porter and Martin P. Rice. Ed. with a foreword by Serge Zenkovsky. [Nashville, Tenn.:] Vanderbilt University Press, 1971. *Suchasnist* 1973, no. 2: 33–43, and *Ukrainskyi istoryk*, 1974, no. 1–3: 218–20.
- D. S. Struk. *A Study of Vasyl' Stefanyk: The Pain at the Heart of Existence*. Littleton, Colo.: Ukrainian Academic Press, 1973. *Slavic Review* 33, no. 2 (June 1974): 403–4.
- George Gajecky and Alexander Baran. *The Cossacks in the Thirty Years War*. Volume 1. 1619–1624. Analecta OSBM, series 2, section 1, vol. 24. Rome: PP. Basiliani, 1969. *The Polish Review* (New York) 18, no. 3 (1973): 91–3.
- Pivnichne siaivo: Almanakh* (Northern Lights: Almanac). No. 5. Ed. Yar Slavutych. Edmonton: Slavuta, 1971. *Novyi shliakh* (Toronto), 19 August 1972.
- Hanna Cherin. *Vahonetky: Poezii* (Trolleys: Poems). Chicago and New York: the author, 1969. *Suchasnist*, 1971, no. 5: 126–7.
- “Derevo hovoryt” (The Tree Speaks [Mykola Chernysh’s Exhibit in Kyiv]). *Suchasnist* 1971, no. 3: 125–6.
- Bohdan Boichuk and Bohdan T. Rubchak. *Koordynaty: Antolohiia suchasnoi ukrainskoi poezii na Zakhodi* (Co-ordinates: An Anthology of Modern Ukrainian Poetry in the West). 2 vols. New York: Suchasnist, 1969. *Suchasnist* 1970, no. 12: 61–6.
- Iar Slavutych. *Zavoioivnyky prerii* (Conquerors of the Prairies). Edmonton: Slavuta, 1968. *Suchasnist* 1969, no. 12: 110–11.
- Yar Slavutych. *Conversational Ukrainian*. 2d ed. Edmonton: Gateway, 1961. *Slavic and East European Journal* 9, no. 3 (1965): 345–6; *Canadian Association of Slavists Newsletter*, no. 10 (May): 22–4; review in *Ukrainian in Suchasnist*, 1962, no. 9: 122–4.





## Contributors

VIRA AHEIEVA is a lecturer at the Kyiv-Mohyla Academy National University; and the author of *Pam"iat podvyhu: Ukrainska voienna proza 60–80-kh rokiv* (Kyiv: Naukova dumka, 1989), *Ukrainska impresionistychna proza* (Kyiv: Instytut literatury im. T. H. Shevchenka, 1994), and *Poetesa zlamu stolit: Tvorchist Lesi Ukrainky v postmodernii interpretatsii* (Kyiv: Lybid, 1999).

OLEH W. GERUS is a professor of history at the University of Manitoba. He edited and updated *A Survey of Ukrainian History* by Dmytro Doroshenko (Winnipeg: Humeniuk Publication Foundation, 1975); and is an author of articles on Ukrainian and Ukrainian-Canadian history.

OLEH S. ILNYTZKYJ is a professor of Ukrainian literature at the University of Alberta; the author of *Ukrainian Futurism, 1914–1930: A Historical and Critical Study* (Ukrainian Research Institute, Harvard University, 1997) and articles on Ukrainian realist and modernist writers; and the compiler, with George Hawrysch, of *A Concordance to the Poetic Works of Taras Shevchenko* (Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies Press, forthcoming in 2001).

ROBERT KARPIAK is a professor of Russian literature and language at the University of Waterloo; the former editor of *Germano-Slavica*, a journal of Germano-Slavic comparative and interdisciplinary studies; and the author of a forthcoming book on the Don Juan myth in Russian literature.

NEVENKA KOSCEVIC was, until recently, the Slavic librarian at the University of Manitoba. She now lives in Montreal.

HALYNA KOSCHARSKY is a senior lecturer in Ukrainian language and literature at Macquarie University, Sydney, Australia; and the author of *Tvorchist Liny Kostenko z pohliadu poetyky ekspresyvnosti* (Kyiv: KM Academia, 1994) and articles on contemporary Ukrainian poets and poetry.

LARISSA M. L. ZALESKA ONYSHKEVYCH is the president of the Shevchenko Scientific Society in the United States. She has written extensively on Ukrainian drama and has edited several Ukrainian-language collections of scholarly articles and plays, including *Blyzniata shche zustrinutsia: Antolohiia dramaturhii ukrainskoi* (Kyiv: Chas, 1997) and *Antolohiia modernoi ukrainskoi dramy* (Kyiv: Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies and TAKSON, 1998).

MARKO PAVLYSHYN is the Mykola Zerov Professor of Ukrainian Literature at Monash University, Melbourne; and the author of articles on Ukrainian literature, including the collection *Kanon ta ikonostas* (Kyiv: Chas, 1997).

NELLI PRYSTALENKO is a curator at the National Art Museum of Ukraine in Kyiv. She is the co-author (with Liudmyla Kovalska) of *The Monumentalists: Mykhailo Boichuk and His School of Art* (University of Alberta Press, forthcoming in 2001).

MYROSLAV SHKANDRIJ is a professor of Ukrainian and Russian literature at the University of Manitoba; and the author of *Modernists, Marxists and the Nation: The Ukrainian Literary Discussion of the 1920s* (Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies Press, 1993) and *Russia and Ukraine: Literature and the Discourse of Empire from Napoleonic to Postcolonial Times* (McGill-Queen's University Press, forthcoming in 2001).

WALTER SMYRNIW is a professor emeritus of Russian literature at McMaster University; and the author of *Turgenev's Early Works: From Character Sketches to a Novel* (Mosaic Press, 1980) and articles on Ukrainian science fiction, poetry, and drama.

MAXIM TARNAWSKY is a professor of Ukrainian literature at the University of Toronto; and the author of *Between Reason and Irrationality: The Prose of Valerijan Pidmohyl'nyj* (University of Toronto Press, 1994) and articles on Ukrainian modernist and realist prose.

ROMAN WERETELNYK has taught Ukrainian literature at the University of Ottawa and now teaches Ukrainian and American literature and literary theory at the Kyiv-Mohyla Academy National University. He has written on Lesia Ukrainka and feminism in Ukrainian literature.

## Review Articles

### A Pioneering Oral History of Collectivization

Natalia Shostak

Viliam [William] Noll. *Transformatsiia hromadianskoho suspilstva: Usna istoriia ukrainskoi selianskoi kultury 1920–30 rokiv*. Kyiv: Tsentr doslidzhen usnoi istorii ta kultury “Rodovid.” 1999. 559 pp. U.S.\$25.00 paper.

William Noll, an American ethnomusicologist, moved to Ukraine in the early 1990s to study Ukrainian peasant music culture. Over time, much of which was spent among Ukrainian villagers, his professional engagement with village music grew into a research agenda on the socio-cultural changes in Ukrainian peasant society that were triggered by collectivization in the 1930s. In 1993 he initiated an oral history project under the auspices of the Rodovid Center for the Study of Oral History and Culture in Kyiv. The project attracted ten other professional ethnographers, who took responsibility for recording Ukrainian villagers’ oral histories. Five years later, the results of their research have been collected into the publication under review.

The subject of Noll’s analysis is the changing civil society of the Ukrainian village throughout the twentieth century. Relying almost exclusively on information obtained from those interviewed, Noll attempts to reconstruct Ukrainian civil society prior to collectivization, discusses dramatic changes it has undergone during collectivization, and contemplates contemporary village culture in Ukraine in the light of the dramatic transformations of the 1930s.

The purpose of Noll’s study is twofold—to describe the catastrophic process of collectivization in Ukraine as seen by peasants who were directly involved in and affected by it, and to demonstrate the interrelationship between collectivization as a state policy and the destruction of the peasant civil society due to implementation of that policy. Not only does Noll view collectivization as one of the worst crimes against humanity in the twentieth century, he underlines that it has also significantly affected and altered the long established cultural and social norms of the Ukrainian peasant world.

In his introduction, Noll presents a set of theoretical concepts on which he relies in his book: civil society, worldview, and peasantry. He defines peasantry as collectivity based on family labour and involved in agrarian production. His analytical framework has been inspired by pro-Marxist writers in the areas of peasant studies (Robert Redfield, Eric

Wolf, George Dalton, John Powell) and social theory (Karl Polanyi, an economist, incorrectly described in the book as an American anthropologist). In Noll's opinion, civil society should only be approached *in situ* and as a part of the peasant culture in general. It includes "those institutions and activities which lie outside the pale of governmental control. The civil society is historic (long-standing), a congregation of people on an equal basis, and voluntary" (p. 10). Ritual, political, and commercial institutions are seen as the building blocks of a civil society. Much of Noll's argument concerning socio-cultural changes in the Ukrainian village draws upon the issue of power relations between the ideologues and peasantry, the city and the village, the colonial efforts of Soviet Marxism, and the Ukrainian periphery of the Soviet empire. In the framework of these overarching questions the argument for the progressive repression of Ukrainian village culture in the twentieth century unfolds throughout the book.

To present a thorough picture of how collectivization affected long-established cultural institutions of peasant civil society, Noll divides his book into two parts. The first part addresses changes in economic and material life in the village before, during, and after collectivization. The second part touches on the issues of "cultural" matters, religion, expressive culture, and rituals before and after collectivization. Each chapter is supplemented by extensive citations from the interviews, which offer the reader the opportunity to interpret the scope of the issue under discussion and to hear the opinions of peasants on the subject. The book is supplemented with appendices (bibliography, questionnaires, lists of informants, several interviews cited in full, and tables combining information scattered throughout the interviews).

The first part of the book discusses changes in the economic and material life of peasants in terms of land ownership, household economic activities, hired work, political institutions of peasant communities (e.g., the *skhodka*, or annual meeting of the village masters), and family as a powerful social and economic unit. Noll offers a detailed outline of each cultural institution in the first chapter of Part 1. For example, the reader will learn much about the economic institution of hired work as practiced among the villagers prior to collectivization: who could be hired, the amount of payment that could be expected for a particular kind of work, what kind of hired work was available to those seeking it, and so on. This aspect of village culture is rarely, if ever, discussed by traditional Ukrainian ethnology.

In the second chapter, dealing with the period of collectivization, Noll introduces opposing viewpoints on collectivization presented in the interviews. Although the majority of interviewees recollected how they had resisted collectivization and recalled their great sufferings during its implementation, a few informants, mostly those who had actively promoted collectivization, seem to have remained loyal to the ideals of Soviet-style collective farming. Despite their active role in destroying other lives, these peasants did not consider individuals as enemies of the Soviet state. Rather, they saw private property as the target of the collectivization campaign (p. 126). Today many of them admit the link between collectivization and the famine that followed it in 1932 and 1933.

In the discussion of peasant life under the collective-farm system in the concluding chapter of Part 1, Noll touches on the elaborate mechanism of state control over the "collectivized" territories. This study sheds light on what the payment and tax systems were at the time and on how much the workings of it depended on the whimsical moods of local activists. This, in turn, suggests that much of the oppression actually was carried



out locally. It often was impossible for the peasants to pay the various kinds of newly introduced taxes. There were taxes on property, household production, childlessness, and even taxes on *obligatsii*, the state bonds that peasants were forced to buy from the state. Thus the new system quickly made members of collective farms debtors of the collective farm and the state instead of providing them with payment for their labour (p. 210). Under such conditions the previous economic system, which was based on household family production, quickly deteriorated.

In the same chapter Noll deals with the question of power organization in the collective farm. Villagers' comments on who wielded authority in the village suggest that collectivization also violated the democratic principles of village organization and of its main social institution, the *skhodka*. Instead of the collective authority of village masters, local power became concentrated in the hands of individuals, collective-farm directors, and Party leaders. Another interesting subject broached here is the social phenomenon of theft, which became a "normal" social practice and integral part of the life in the collective farm. Noll comments that prior to collectivization peasant ethics disapproved of any kind of stealing and theft was not as widespread as it was during the years of collective farming. However, the peasants differentiated between stealing from a collective farm and stealing from villagers, with the former accepted as normal and the latter disparaged. Noll thus asserts that theft was a product of the collective-farm system (p. 234).

The second part of the book addresses cultural aspects of village life before and after collectivization. In this section familiar subjects of Ukrainian ethnology are examined in the context of socio-cultural changes. Noll looks at changes that affected the religious life of the village, wedding and funeral rituals, carolling, icon painting, village music life, the art of the *kobzari* and *lirnyky*, and other calendar-based cultural activities characteristic of village life. With the help of his interview subjects, Noll discusses the deterioration of the village's social organization and institutions. He claims that the traditional village organization of neighbourhoods, or *kutky*, were eventually replaced by collective farm brigades that were assembled from around the village and remained unchanged for years. In the same chapter Noll discusses the emergence of village clubs that were instrumental in removing *dosvitky* (seasonal communal-work parties) and other social institutions of the young from the cultural landscape of village life. Newly created village folk ensembles with generic song repertoires introduced by professionals—individuals from outside the village who were specially trained for such occasions—were some of the innovations that accelerated the disappearance of rich local folk traditions.

In his research into the transformation of Ukrainian civil society in the twentieth century, Noll asked his interviewees two other questions, about their attitudes to civil society and its culture as they existed prior to collectivization. In view of the differing and sometimes contradictory answers, Noll suspects that the peasants participating in his study were very fearful that they might experience new repressions, just like after the NEP was introduced in the 1920s, should they take the initiative to start up their own farms. These attitudes were most likely introduced to illustrate the degree to which the collective-farm system was counterproductive and to confirm the author's hypothesis that collectivization destroyed initiative among the peasants. In the concluding chapter Noll refers to a certain nostalgia among old people for their previous lifestyle, i.e., before the 1930s. Returning to the issue of peasants' attitudes to their collective past and their contemplations of the

future of the Ukrainian village, Noll links the past with the present, seeing a direct connection between the destruction of Ukrainian peasant culture in the 1930s and its post-Soviet problematic momentum.

The book under review is a welcome and unique contribution to Ukrainian ethnological scholarship. Its content, research methodologies, intellectual approach, format, and even design stand out. The originality of Noll's work lies in his use of oral history—the presentation of villagers' detailed descriptions of what it was like to live through the period of collectivization. This groundbreaking work on the ethnography of collectivization relies fully on the voices of aging peasants who lived through the events of the years 1928–33. Approximately 450 peasant farmers from central, northeastern, and eastern Ukraine were interviewed for this study after the completion of a lengthy questionnaire designed by the team of ethnographers headed by Noll. Their recollections, stories, and philosophizing take up almost half the volume.

These personal oral histories provided the researchers with an unofficial vision of history based on the peasants' understanding of their own past. Noll values this kind of subjectivity over the ostensibly objective data that other Ukrainian ethnographers claim to rely on when dealing with Ukrainian folklore culture—texts, rituals, customs, and material culture—as documented by nineteenth-century ethnographers. Overall, the peasants' interpretation of events, rather than events themselves, are his chief concern, for incidents gain meaning only through personal experience. The author pays insufficient attention to oral history as a discipline in contemporary scholarship—there is only one paragraph devoted to this subject on p. 29. This is regrettable, because oral history as a method of examining history or culture from within is not a well developed genre of ethnography in Ukraine. Ethnographic studies there would benefit greatly from a more extended discussion of this subject. Indeed, in theoretical terms such a discussion is demanded by the very claims made by the author.

The author, trained in the North American tradition of anthropological studies, moves away from the traditional understanding of folk culture as a set of ahistorical institutions that have survived from bygone years; instead, he treats folklore as one of several institutions of a civil society. This methodological move is clearly targeted at a Ukrainian scholarly audience that traditionally views folklore from outside the social context of village life. For Noll folklore is not an entity in itself, but a complex of cultural institutions that, together with other institutions, constitute peasant civil society.

This epic anthropological study challenges many established lexicons and notions on which both Ukrainian and Western scholarship have relied in dealing with peasant culture. Thus Noll suggests that the traditional terminology, widely used in dealing with the period of collectivization, be reconsidered. For example, the words *kurkul* (Ukrainian) or *kulak* (Russian), *rozkurkuliuvannia/raskulachivanie* (de-kulakization), and *seredniak* (middle peasant) should be used with caution, since all of these terms were invented by urban-based ideologues who required a conceptual framework and system of references for their collectivizing efforts in the countryside. Noll suggests that in order to deal with the true course of collectivization in the Ukrainian village, researchers should rely on the peasants' vocabulary for the social and civic norms that were practiced at the time (p. 22). He makes it clear that the term *kurkul/kulak* was unknown among villagers prior to collectivization. Instead, *khaziain* (master) was used, and *khaziainy* were well respected

and recognized. No class distinction was made between a *khaziain* and other villagers, especially when *khaziainy* were a majority in the village.

In this reviewer's opinion, Noll should have discussed Soviet state policies in a more systematic way to show the causal link between collectivization and the destruction of the traditional peasant way of life in Ukraine. (Noll does state, however, that the Rodovid Center is planning more publications on this subject.) Despite this minor shortcoming, the main goal of the book—to present an oral history of collectivization and of the dramatic social changes that it brought about—has been achieved. This extensive summary of peasant culture in twentieth-century Ukraine is a novel contribution to Ukrainian ethnography and an excellent reference for historians, anthropologists, folklorists, and linguists in Ukraine and abroad.

## **Nation Building in Ukraine and the Former USSR**

*Taras Kuzio*

Pal Kolsto. *Political Construction Sites: Nation-Building in Russia and the Post-Soviet States*. Boulder, Colo.: Westview Press, 2000. xi, 308 pp. U.S.\$24.00 paper, U.S.\$65.00 cloth.

Jan Germen Janmaat. *Nation-Building in Post-Soviet Ukraine: Educational Policy and the Response of the Russian-Speaking Population*. Vol. 268 of Netherlands Geographical Studies. Utrecht and Amsterdam: The Royal Dutch Geographical Society and the Faculty of Social and Behavioural Sciences, University of Amsterdam, 2000. 243 pp. U.S.\$23.00 paper. Order from Netherlands Geographical Studies, P.O. Box 80123, 3508 TC Utrecht, The Netherlands; fax: +31 30 253 5523; e-mail: knag@geog.uu.nl

Pal Kolsto is a well-known scholar who has written extensively on nation building and national minorities in the former Soviet Union (FSU). Nation building in the post-Soviet states has had to confront the legacies of tsarist and Soviet colonial rule and nationality policies—Russification, large numbers of Russians, Russophones, and Sovietophiles in these countries, and urban centres in which these states' titular languages and cultures do not dominate. Nation builders there ultimately have three major choices—to maintain the legacies (for example, in Belarus), to attempt to remove them partially (for example, in large parts of Ukraine), or to try to erase the Soviet past completely (for example, in the three Baltic states and the western oblasts of Ukraine).

The legacy of Soviet nationality policy is confusing. The fifteen independent states that emerged after the collapse of the USSR are based on the territorial units of the fifteen Union republics. As in Yugoslavia and Czechoslovakia, only these republics, but none of the former or current autonomous republics within them, have become independent states. Each non-Russian republic of the FSU has been portrayed as the “homeland” of a titular nation. The Russian SFSR, on the other hand, was never perceived by the Russians as their “homeland”; instead, they considered it to be the entire USSR. Russian was the de facto state language of the USSR—and the language of Soviet modernization—and the Russian Orthodox Church was the Soviet state church. This ethno-cultural definition of the

non-Russian republics was balanced against a civic notion of a supra-national Soviet identity. In the aftermath of the disintegration of the USSR, the citizens in the newly independent republics have had a choice in defining their identity. Ukraine's citizens have been able to choose either a Ukrainian identity or one that is both Ukrainian and Soviet/pan-East Slavic. The latter is the domain of the radical Left, particularly the Communists, and it constitutes the basis of the official ideology of President Aliaksandr Lukashenka of Belarus. Soviet/pan-East Slavic nationalism has been largely ignored in discussions of "nationalism" in Ukraine.<sup>1</sup> Yet this nationalism is as much ethnic as the nationalism of the Ukrainian radical Right. Kolsto calls it an "expression of skewed ethnic nationalism" (p. 162).

Kolsto's volume begins with a discussion of the legacies described above and of how nation building can be incorporated into the political-science literature on national and social integration. The most influential postwar theorists in this area of study have been Karl Deutsch, Charles Tilly, and Reinhard Bendix. They have argued that nation building consists of the centre's integration of regions into the larger polity through a consolidation of the nation-state. This takes place at the same time as modernization, urbanization, and the development of communications. The central elites promote cultural and economic unification, and local identity declines in favour of a national allegiance. The process of the dissolution of minority cultures and languages into a "higher" culture is inevitable and beneficial, according to Deutsch.

Since the 1960s other scholars have criticized these views as being too optimistic and for not taking into account the widespread opposition that the central authorities may meet from regional groups. Whether assimilation is "beneficial" or not is obviously debatable. In the case of those Bretons who assimilated into the French culture, for example, or of those Ukrainians who became Russophones, some scholars will argue that this was beneficial because it allowed such individuals to take part in the modernization processes that occurred in France and the USSR respectively. Others might concur with Walker Connor's view that nation building can also be defined as "nation destroying" (e.g., through Russification and de-nationalization) and therefore should be perceived negatively.

In Ukraine's case these debates have serious conclusions. Is the Soviet legacy all bad, partly bad, or not bad at all? Those who argue, like Connor, against assimilation will see the USSR in a completely negative light. This view might be shared by many Ukrainian speakers, inhabitants of Western Ukraine, and members of Ukrainian Centre-Right parties who led the drive to independence (e.g., Rukh). Those who take the middle ground, such as President Leonid Kuchma, are selectively critical of the Soviet legacy. This is not surprising: they are products of the Soviet era, when many adopted Russian as their "mother tongue" (e.g., President Kuchma) and created centrist "parties of power" with close ties to the authorities. Those who laud the Soviet era are primarily members and supporters of left-wing parties.

---

1. On Russian nationalism in Ukraine, see Oleksandr Maiboroda, *Rosiiskyi natsionalizm v Ukraini (1991–1998 r.r.)* (Kyiv, 1999). On nationalism in Ukraine in general, see my articles "Nationalism in Ukraine: Towards a New Framework," *Politics* 20, no. 2 (May 2000): 77–86; and "The Nation and Nationalists in Ukraine," in *Nationalism after Independence*, ed. Lowell Barrington (forthcoming).



If, as in Deutsch's model, national integration aims to integrate regions into "higher cultures," how can this be accomplished in a Ukraine where the Ukrainian language and culture were depicted in Soviet times as rural, provincial, and something that was dying out and therefore not part of modernity? Will the predominantly Russian-speaking inhabitants of eastern Ukraine's urban centres integrate into the "higher culture" of Kyiv if that culture is Ukrainian? That is, will they integrate into a culture that they previously despised? Perhaps they will simply have to accept that the Ukrainian language has a right to exist and be used alongside Russian in a bilingual linguistic framework, because an independent Ukraine, the Ukrainian elites believe, requires a state language. The lessons of Belarus, where the situation for the native language is dire and the country's president still harbours a Soviet-style disdain for it, have not been lost on Ukraine's elites. Without Ukrainian as the language of the state, they believe, there will be no independence. Kolsto argues that Kuchma backed the cultural intelligentsia's view that a "separate state must have its own language" (p. 189) and that by 1996 he had come around to the view that there was a link between the "homeland," the titular nation, and the nation-state.

Kolsto describes the republics of the FSU as "construction sites" where nation building and national consolidation are taking place. National identities are being constructed through the integration of culture, national historiography, language, and the economy. The questions of who are the titular nations and who are the indigenes must be resolved. The cultures and languages of the Slavic states of Ukraine and Belarus are similar to the Slavic part of the Russian Federation. In four states—Latvia, Estonia, Kazakhstan, and Kirgizia—Russians make up more than a quarter of the population. Only Armenia is ethnically homogenous. In most of the other post-Soviet states the titular nation has not been consolidated, and nation building on the civic level (that is, involving the entire population) is matched by the ethnic consolidation of the titular nation. In Kazakhstan, Kirgizia, and Belarus the titular nations have been the weakest (p. 125), and this probably explains the Russophile stance of these countries' ruling elites.

Kolsto defines Estonia and Latvia as "ethnic democracies" because of the heavy influence of ethnic nationalism there. Nevertheless, it is not clear how their policies are different from those of many Western "civic" states, such as France, Germany, Greece, and the United States. German citizenship, for example, is not open to non-Germans, and citizenship in the United States and Canada is not granted to immigrants automatically, but only after a three- to five-year probation period and language and history tests. Although Kolsto has an impressive understanding of the theoretical literature on nationalism, he becomes confused when applying theory to the FSU, as do many Western scholars. Contrary to his view, the ninety-one percent of Ukrainians who voted "yes" in the 1 December 1991 referendum on independence did not do so because they watched a film on the 1932–33 artificial famine (p. 39)!

Kolsto discusses the alleged "strong impulse of Ukrainianization" (p. 12), evidence of which is seen when eastern Ukrainians move to Kyiv. At the same time he argues that Ukraine "is one of the Soviet successor states where the ideal of a non-ethnic, civic nation-state has dominated the nation-building discourse" (p. 97). He also supports the view of many Western scholars that during the presidency of Leonid Kravchuk (1991–94)

Ukraine moved away from a civic to an ethnic definition of the state.<sup>2</sup> This allegedly damaged the credibility of Ukraine as a multi-ethnic civic state.

Having accepted this commonly held misconception of Ukraine under Kravchuk as an ethnic "nationalizing state," Kolsto becomes perplexed. Neither he nor the scholars with whom he agrees are able to understand why "Ukrainianization" has continued under Kuchma.<sup>3</sup> According to their analysis, Kuchma should have dropped these "nationalizing" policies. Kolsto hypothesizes that the elites believe that an independent state needs a culture that provides it with an identity different from Russia's. The main pillar of Ukraine's distinctiveness vis-à-vis Russia is the Ukrainian language (p. 193). Tension in the state is caused by competing views as to how the "we" of Ukraine should be defined—in ethno-national terms (the view of the cultural intelligentsia) or in state-national terms (Kuchma's view). Kolsto concludes that after 1996 Kuchma adopted ethno-nationalist terms of reference (p. 189). But he cannot explain why "Ukrainianization" continued after the Galician cultural intelligentsia was removed from power in Kyiv in 1994 and thereby no longer "set the political agenda in the republic" (p. 193). Such a conclusion will be news to many. After all, Kolsto admits that greater concessions to Russophones have been granted in Ukraine than in most of the other countries of the FSU (p. 192). He may have failed to see the forest for the trees because he has too readily accepted a clear-cut distinction between "civic" and "ethnic" states. He himself admits that *both* civic and ethnic states can be "nationalizing" (i.e., assimilating) and that Rogers Brubaker's concept of "nationalizing states" "is one of stages and degrees rather than qualitative differences" (p. 27).

The role of historical symbols, historiography (note that Kolsto misspells Mykhailo Hrushevsky's name as "Khrushkevsky"), and myths are aptly discussed by Kolsto, who explains the significance of Ukraine to Russia (e.g., does Ukraine have a greater claim to the legacy of Kyivan Rus' and was the 1654 agreement of Pereiaslav beneficial to Ukraine?). He also criticizes Western historians who have adopted Russophile historiographical frameworks and "brushed these [Ukrainian] objections aside, dismissing them as rather pathetic manifestations of Ukrainian nationalism" (p. 35). Unlike the British scholar Andrew Wilson,<sup>4</sup> Kolsto believes that state symbols and historiography

---

2. See, for example, Dominique Arel, "Ukraine—The Temptation of the Nationalizing State," in *Political Culture and Civil Society in Russia and the New States of Eurasia*, ed. Vladimir Tismaneanu (Armonk, N.Y., 1995), 157–88; Andrew Wilson, *Ukrainian Nationalism in the 1990s: A Minority Faith* (Cambridge, 1997); and David D. Laitin, *Identity in Formation: The Russian-Speaking Populations in the Near Abroad* (Ithaca and London, 1998).

3. Anatol Lieven is similarly puzzled why the "nationalizing" policies adopted during Kravchuk's presidency have been continued by Kuchma. See his *Ukraine and Russia: A Fraternal Rivalry* (Washington D.C., 1999).

4. See the latter's "Myths of National History in Belarus and Ukraine," in *Myths and Nationhood*, ed. Geoffrey Hosking and George Schopflin (London, 1997), 182–97; and idem, "National History and National Identity in Ukraine and Belarus," in *Nation-Building in the Post-Soviet Borderlands: The Politics of National Identities*, ed. Graham Smith et al. (Cambridge, 1998), 23–47.

have not been divisive in Ukraine (p. 244). He makes the point that Stepan Bandera, a Nationalist leader, could not have collaborated with the Nazis during the Second World War because he was a concentration-camp inmate at Auschwitz (p. 52).

Kolsto also points out that the Russian Federation never declared independence from the USSR (p. 46). That is why it celebrates its independence on the day in May when it declared sovereignty in 1990. After one non-Russian republic after another declared independence at that time, the Russian RSFSR was left without the Union and became independent by default. In December 1991 President Boris Yeltsin unsuccessfully pushed for the creation of a confederal Commonwealth of Independent States. As a result, the Russian Federation became the USSR's "continuator state."

Kolsto concludes that the twenty-five million Russians in the FSU outside Russia do not constitute a single diaspora, but fourteen different ones. They have found it difficult to accept being classified as national minorities and often seek territorial autonomy, define the states in which they live as bicultural (not multicultural), and clamour for dual citizenship. These Russophones also do not exhibit a uniform identity: some are similar to Russians, while others are more "Soviet." But "Soviet" identity is declining increasingly as the possibility of resurrecting the USSR or a similar union becomes less and less probable with the passage of time.

Both tsarist Russia and the USSR did not adopt policies to promote Russian nation building. Of the Soviet republics, only the Russian SFSR did not have any republican institutions until 1990, and in 1991 it simply appropriated the Soviet central institutions. Russian identity was therefore tied to the state and empire, not ethnicity (unlike Serbian identity). Russian dissidents never called for the secession of the Russian SFSR from the USSR, and they, like most Russians, can therefore be best defined as imperialists rather than nationalists.<sup>5</sup> Russian ethnic nationalism is as much a "minority faith" as is the Ukrainian.<sup>6</sup> Discussions about the nature of "Russia" and how the "we" there should therefore be defined have been more intense than the similar debates in Ukraine. As Kolsto argues, "Most of the ideas that have been presented define Russia in such a way that the state borders fail to coincide with the borders of the Russian Federation" (p. 204). Russia's definition of itself as a civic state called "Rossiia" is confounded by the fact that the Russian Federation is a mini-version of the USSR, with many autonomous ethnic homelands.

Russian nation building is thus problematic. The symbols of the Russian Federation are from imperial Russia, but have still to be defined constitutionally. It is difficult to accept Kolsto's view that these symbols are not resented by non-Russians in the Russian Federation (p. 245). Is this really the case with the Tatars, the largest minority, or the Chechens, in whose homeland a bloody conflict still rages?

Jan Germen Janmaat's volume is one of a growing number of Ph.D. theses on contemporary Ukraine that have been converted into books. As a volume on nation building, it is mired in the controversy surrounding such misused terms as "nationalism"

5. For an elaboration of this argument, see David. G. Rowley, "Imperial versus National Discourse: The Case of Russia," *Nations and Nationalism* 6, no. 1 (January 2000): 23–42.

6. See Anatol Lieven, "The Weakness of Russian Nationalism," *Survival* 41, no. 2 (Summer 1999): 53–70.

and "nationalizing state." Janmaat argues that western Ukrainians "tend to be more nationalist in outlook than Ukrainians in the rest of Ukraine (p. 13) and that Lviv is "the centre of nationalist western Ukraine" (p. 121). This common misconception is only understood if we accept the Soviet-era view of national consciousness and language use as tantamount to nationalism (then "bourgeois," now "ethnic"). As I have argued elsewhere, it also completely ignores the existence of Soviet and Russian nationalism in eastern Ukraine and Crimea.

Like most Western scholars, Janmaat characterizes the eastern Ukrainians as Russophones or Russophiles, but never as nationalists. But Ukrainian nationalism having a "limited appeal" (p. 42) is the case only if it is understood to mean ethnic nationalism, which has a limited appeal throughout Europe. Janmaat's assertion does not tell us anything that we do not already know. He argues that Ukraine is "unlikely to embark on a course of strong state nationalism" (p. 37). In contrast, Kolsto believes that Ukraine has adopted nationalist policies, and he would disagree with Janmaat's view that the Ukrainian ruling elites are not civic or state nationalists. Janmaat accepts the confusing framework laid down by scholars such as Arel, Wilson, Lieven, and others who define nationalism far too narrowly as western Ukrainian, Ukrainophone, and national-democratic rather than as a state ideology common to the ruling elites of all civic states.

How do Ukraine's nation builders define who the "we" are? Janmaat describes Ukraine as a "bi-national state" (p. 18). This is a view also propounded by Russophiles in Ukraine and the FSU; it has led Ukraine's Vladimir Grinev to argue for two titular nations.<sup>7</sup> At the same time Janmaat is reluctant to label Ukraine a "nationalizing state," because this would be a "serious misrepresentation of reality" (p. 176). He disagrees with Arel, Wilson, and Laitin that Ukraine under Kravchuk was a "nationalizing state" dominated by exclusionary nationalism (p. 64). The Ukrainian state adopted an inclusive civic concept of citizenship, and its ethnic minorities are accommodated and accorded equal civil and cultural rights. Janmaat believes that this is because a more radical nationality policy is not possible because of the amorphous nature of Ukrainian national identity (p. 83). In Ukraine, the expansion of Ukrainian language use is being undertaken in an evolutionary manner. Janmaat therefore concludes that Ukraine's nation-building policies are "fairly liberal/permissive with a mild but nonetheless incessant drive to culturally homogenize the country" (p. 177).

It is difficult to accept this assertion, given that nearly half of all mass media in Ukraine are in Russian; that Russian broadcasts still prevail on the private television channels (especially former Channel Three, now called Inter); that publications aimed at the "New Ukrainian" businessmen are in Russian; that pirated computer programs are in Russian; and that Western films are dubbed into Russian instead of Ukrainian. Like Kolsto, Janmaat believes that the Ukrainianization policies were consolidated under Kuchma, and he provides impressive figures to show how the Ukrainianization of all levels of education has continued (p. 112). (Many other scholars had predicted that the pace of Ukrainianization would slow down.) The reasons that Janmaat provides for the continuation of these policies are the same as those that Kolsto proposes: an independent

---

7. For details, see my review article in the *Journal of Ukrainian Studies* 22, nos. 1–2 (Summer–Winter 1997): 145–63.



state needs symbols that differentiate it from Russia, and language is central to constituting "otherness." Janmaat concludes that civic (state) nationalism will continue to dominate within Ukraine's ruling elites, despite arguing to the contrary earlier. It seems that he concurs with Paul D'Anieri's statement that the central elites, whatever their origins, "are likely to back Ukrainianization as long as they want Ukraine to remain an independent state (which, once they are in office, they are almost sure to want). This, in turn, would lead one to believe that Ukrainianization is most probably a permanent feature of central state policy."<sup>8</sup>

Near the end of his book, Janmaat argues more cautiously that because Ukrainian nationalism is only a "minority faith" and there has to be some compromise owing to the large numbers of Russophones in Ukraine, the prospects for Ukrainianization are highly uncertain (p. 189). Like Kolsto, he remains confused as to why Kuchma, "the candidate of the Russian-speaking east and south," has not slowed down the Ukrainianization of education (p. 112). Janmaat concludes that the authorities believe that the percentage of education in Ukrainian should approximate the same percentage of ethnic Ukrainians in the population. What percentage of the population ethnic Ukrainians constitute is in flux, however: it has risen from seventy-two percent (in the 1989 Soviet census) to nearly eighty percent, according to unofficial figures provided to me by Volodymyr Malynkovych, a civic activist and a former Soviet dissident, in Kyiv on 15 August 2000. Since more than thirty percent of marriages in Soviet Ukraine were between persons with different ethnic backgrounds, these persons have become prime candidates for changing their ethnic affiliation from the Russian to the Ukrainian. One Western study predicted that the number of Russians could decline by half in Ukraine.<sup>9</sup> The February 1991 State Program for the Development of the Ukrainian Language, designed to implement the 1989 language law over a ten-year period, states that "Language shapes national consciousness, [and] it is the basis of a nation's spirit."

The major contribution of Janmaat's book is his focus on a surprisingly neglected topic—education. In Ukraine's education system, history and literature have been the backbone of the nation-building program. Russian language and literature are no longer core subjects and are taught only as a foreign language and within the context of world literature. Janmaat argues that every multi-national state promotes national integration and a single identity, defends its territorial integrity, officially fosters the language of the titular group, and remodels national historiography and geography; the mass media, education, and the security forces are used to promote such socialization. In independent Ukraine's Ukrainian- and Russian-language schools, the same textbooks are used (many Western scholars have assumed that Russophones would strongly oppose such a policy). In the Russian-language schools, be they state- or privately run, students are taught three languages—Russian, Ukrainian, and a foreign one. Nation building in education is facilitated, Janmaat believes, by the continued use of the Soviet model in education. The greatest uphill struggle for education in the Ukrainian language is evident in Ukraine's

---

8. Paul D'Anieri, *Economic Interdependence in Ukrainian-Russian Relations* (New York, 1999), 78.

9. See Stephen Rapawy, *Ethnic Reidentification in Ukraine*, IPC Staff Paper 90 (Washington, D.C.: U.S. Bureau of the Census, August 1997).



east and south, where such education experienced a dramatic decline during the Soviet era; parents there lost their theoretical right to choose in which language their children should be taught (p. 111). The three factors that have shaped the degree of Russification in a region have been the duration of the region's incorporation into the USSR, the proportion of ethnic Ukrainian inhabitants there, and the urban-rural population ratio. In regions where ethnic Ukrainians comprise less than sixty percent of the population, such as the Donbas and Crimea, Ukrainianization has proceeded slowly.

During the 1990s education in the Ukrainian language increased beyond the percentage of ethnic Ukrainians in western and central Ukraine. It also made tremendous gains in much of the rest of Ukraine, except the Donbas and Crimea. In Kyiv there are now proportionately fewer Russian-language schools (4.25 per cent of all schools) than in Lviv (4.63 percent). Since the summer of 1997, even Crimea has been brought into the Ukrainian education system, and students there are using the same history and language textbooks as elsewhere in Ukraine. Janmaat points out that the gains of Ukrainian-language education have differed regionally and have often been dependent on the attitude of local personnel, the extent of local law-abiding traditions, and the availability or shortage of textbooks and teachers. All students in Ukraine, be they ethnic Ukrainians, Russians, or members of other ethnic minorities, are taught Ukrainian history.

Janmaat's discussion of Ukrainian historiography is a weak point in his otherwise commendable study. He argues that Ukrainians do not suffer from "lost pride syndrome" (p. 80), that they cannot look back on earlier periods of independence interrupted by Soviet rule, and that they possess few "heroic" periods in history. Hence he concludes that feelings of pride "appear to be few and far between" (p. 86). Janmaat argues, in a manner similar to many other Western scholars, that a "radical Ukrainian-nationalist version of history" (p. 86) will not be acceptable in eastern and southern Ukraine. But he never outlines the differences between a "nationalist" version of history and a "national historiography." Ukrainian nation builders, he himself admits, have not used Russian/Soviet historiography, because it denies the very existence of a separate Ukrainian nation and undermines the country's territorial integrity. Yet Janmaat does not define this historiography as nationalist. Neither do most Western scholars; on the contrary, as Kolsto points out, they have accepted it as "objective." Janmaat expresses astonishment in discovering that the same history textbooks are being used throughout Ukraine, even in Crimea. In other words, a "national historiography" is being taught to Ukrainophones and Russophones. Like other Western scholars, he believes that this might lead to Russophone opposition because it is "strongly nationalizing in content and misses no opportunity to criticize aspects of Soviet society" (p. 107). Since no evidence of opposition to these texts can be found, is it not time for these scholars to change their analytical frameworks?

Janmaat also expresses surprise that Russophones in eastern and southern Ukraine are not opposed to Hrushevsky's historical teachings (p. 180). From his study of a limited number of Soviet and post-Soviet Russian-language textbooks, he concludes that the latter are more balanced and more critical, present a variety of viewpoints, and stress Ukrainian national identity, Ukrainian statehood traditions, and the centrality of language. The post-Soviet textbooks discuss the suppression of the Ukrainian language, treat Russian and Polish as foreign languages, play down any striving for unity with Russia, and stress Ukraine's distinctiveness vis-à-vis Russia. They define Kyivan Rus' as a Ukrainian proto-nation, and the Ukrainians as either the only or the main inheritors of its legacy.

They discuss Hetman Ivan Mazepa and his failed uprising against Russia in 1709, the destruction of the Hetmanate, and the growing dissatisfaction with tsarist rule. They point out that the Bolsheviks had little support in Ukraine during the revolutionary war years of 1917–21, and they present the Organization of Ukrainian Nationalists and the Ukrainian Insurgent Army in a positive light.

The answer to why—to Janmaat's surprise—there has been no Russophone opposition to Ukraine's nation-building policies may be found in his book. He has found that the identity of Ukraine's Russians and Russophones is not distinct, that their mobilization on cultural issues has therefore been "amateurish" (p. 167), and that Russian organizations are continually at loggerheads with each other and are poorly financed and organized. These organizations are best organized in Lviv, where eight societies with close Communist ties are active. Janmaat concludes that the Russians in the other cities he studied (Kyiv, Donetsk, Odesa) did not organize themselves because their language and culture were not under threat.

Another reason why the mobilization of "Russians" in Ukraine has proven to be difficult is that they are not a distinct ethnic group. Many of those who defined themselves as Russian in the 1989 Soviet census were of ethnically mixed heritage, and by today they may have redefined themselves as Ukrainian or Soviet. Because the USSR was the "homeland" of all Russians, it did not develop nation-building policies for them, and the designation of "Russian" in the Soviet census and passports was less an ethnic one than one that allowed for a range of possible post-Soviet identities. Russophone Ukrainians, Janmaat points out, could still define themselves as Ukrainians, albeit ones with an amorphous identity, and families with one parent who was Ukrainian and one who was Russian have been more prone to become linguistically and culturally Ukrainian, especially in two of the four cities he studied, Kyiv and Lviv. In contrast, in the east and south Janmaat sees less likelihood of a change in language use from Russian to Ukrainian unless there is a sustained policy of Ukrainianization (p. 189). For this to happen, the Ukrainian language would have to have a high status and be urban-based. Janmaat argues that there is no precedent for the introduction of Ukrainian, a former language of low esteem, into an urban environment where the dominant language has been Russian, which previously had a higher status. How then, one wonders, did Prague's and Bratislava's inhabitants manage to switch from using German to Czech and from Hungarian to Slovak respectively in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries?

Kolsto and Janmaat both deal with complex, multifaceted aspects of nation building in Ukraine and the other countries of the FSU. Kolsto's volume is intended to be a textbook for new students in the field, and it will be useful at the undergraduate and general levels. Janmaat's volume is a solid contribution to the study of nation building in contemporary Ukraine; it is obviously directed at the advanced reader. Its drawbacks are increasingly common in the field where Ph.D. dissertations on Ukraine are undertaken without any command of the Ukrainian language. Most Western students of post-Soviet Ukraine know Russian and assume that this is sufficient for their research needs. This is an anomaly. After all, would a student writing a dissertation on nation building in Poland be allowed to do so without any knowledge of Polish? Today all Ukrainian government publications, which are growing in number as state building progresses, are in Ukrainian, the state language. It is no longer possible to study contemporary Ukraine fully without utilizing these Ukrainian-language primary sources.

## **The First Ukrainian Historiography Textbook in Independent Ukraine**

*Borys Biletsky and Pavlo Mykhailyna*

Viktor P. Kotsur and Anatolii P. Kotsur. *Istoriografia istorii Ukrainy: Kurs lektsii*. Chernivtsi: Zoloti lytavry, 1999. 520 pp.

This is the first textbook on Ukrainian historiography published in independent Ukraine. It gives a broad overview of basic trends in Ukraine's historical thought from antiquity to the present. By examining the development of historical knowledge in Ukraine, one obtains a more complete conception of Ukrainian historiography as a discipline. At the same time, while studying the chronicles of Ukraine, the authors highlight those features of Ukrainian historiography that are specific to certain stages of Ukrainian social relations and Ukraine's socio-economic, political, and cultural life. The result is a simultaneously comprehensive and detailed approach to Ukrainian historiography.

The authors point out that in the eleventh and twelfth centuries historical writing in Kyivan Rus' reflected both all-Rus' events and the particular features of the southern Rus' lands with their local cultural accretions and particular historical concepts. From a socio-political point of view, the compilers of the old Rus' chronicles reflected the early feudal society's ideology, contradictions, and social struggles. Early historical writings of southern Rus' origin, especially the chronicles, show a local specificity that became more distinct as the broader Rus' lands became fragmented from the mid-twelfth century and into the thirteenth.

According to the periodization put forward in the book, historians developed the tradition of writing chronicles and other historical genres in Kyivan Rus' in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries. Although historical knowledge in Ukraine at this time is closely connected with Belarusian chronicle writing and Belarusian culture, it also retains and develops specific local features. Ukraine's historical works reflect the social- and national-liberation aspirations of the Ukrainian people.

The authors stress that Ukrainian chronicle writing and other historical genres acquired a truly national character during the struggles with the Polish gentry, Turkey, and Crimea in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries. They see clearer common features in the Ukrainian history of this period than at any other time, since the historiographic records of this period reflect the just nature of the Ukrainian people's struggle against external enemies. The Cossack chronicles of the late sixteenth to early eighteenth centuries reflect a great epoch in the history of the Ukrainian people and its struggle for social and national liberation.

In lecture six the authors show that a characteristic feature of eighteenth-century Ukrainian historiography, in both the Cossack and monastery chronicles, is a complete break with church scholastics and the beginning of an emphasis on social educational interests. Even sixteenth-century monastery chronicles show only faint traces of the older church chronicles and, like the Cossack chronicles, are primarily military accounts imbued with the pathos of national heroism. Because of the many popular sources that historians drew on, eighteenth-century historical writings are often rich in popular features.

The authors characterize the first half of the nineteenth century as a new stage in the development of Ukrainian historiography at a time when more progressive capitalist relations were gradually replacing feudal relations. The upheavals in Ukrainian socio-economic and political life at this time could not fail to leave their mark on historiography.

Clearly formed historical schools and directions were virtually non-existent at this time, as in the past. The exception to this were institutions and societies for the study of early texts: the Kyiv Provisional Commission for the Study of Ancient Acts; the Odesa Society for History and Antiquities; the Kharkiv Romantics, with Izmail Sreznevsky at their helm; and the small group of historians gathered around the first Kyiv journals, *Dennitsa* and *Kievlia*, which were published by Mykhailo Maksymovych. Although they contributed to the study of Ukrainian history, their activities were still inchoate. For the most part, historians were acting individually—among them anonymous author of *Istoriia Rusov*, Iakiv and Oleksander Markovych, Dmytro Bantysh-Kamensky, Mykola Markevych, and Maksymovych. The isolation of these scholars from each other did not mean that they were completely isolated from society, nor that they created their concepts without regard for the opinions of enlightened society as a whole. Almost all of them were educated members of the gentry, who were descended from the old Ukrainian Cossack ruling class. The autonomist goals and historical views of the Ukrainian gentry in the first half of the nineteenth century were not prompted by its struggle against the tsarist regime or even by dreams of a future Ukraine, but merely by memories of the gentry's past. Nevertheless, the writings of the gentry stimulated interest in the history of the land and made significant contributions to historical knowledge.

In lecture eight the authors stress that Ukrainian historical thinking in the second half of the nineteenth century reflected the socio-economic and political life of the period. The absolutization of the interests of the people, support for all opposition, and an active struggle against the dominance of the state were the characteristic features of Ukrainian historiography at this time. The supporters of populist conceptions, who emphasized the ideals, aspirations, struggle, gains, and losses of the Ukrainian people and put questions of state formation in second place, prevailed. The populist school in Ukrainian historical thinking included Volodymyr Antonovych, Mykhailo Kostomarov, Oleksander Lazarevsky, Mykhailo Maksymovych, Aleksandra Iefymenko, and Dmytro Iavornytsky.

In characterizing Ukrainian historiography in the early twentieth century, the authors focus on the writings of Mykhailo Hrushevsky. His great achievement was the founding of a historical school in Lviv. The work of the Lviv historical centre had an all-Ukrainian significance not only because of its subject matter: thanks to Hrushevsky's efforts, historians from eastern and central Ukraine—Viacheslav Lypynsky, Mykola Vasylenko, Vadym Modzalevsky, Mykhailo Slabchenko, Viktor Barvinsky, and others—contributed to the publications of the Lviv-based Shevchenko Scientific Society. When Hrushevsky moved his scholarly activities to Kyiv after 1905, historical research was centred at the



Ukrainian Scientific Society there. Hrushevsky's *Istoriia Ukrainy-Rusy* pointed out new questions for Ukrainian historical scholarship and created an opportunity to investigate the historical past. A statist direction in Ukrainian historiography, founded by Lypynsky and Stepan Tomashivsky, was established soon thereafter.

More than two hundred pages are devoted to Soviet Ukrainian historiography. Because it developed in the conditions of totalitarianism, it is rife with contradictions, ambiguities, and factual distortions. In the Soviet period, native patriotic motifs were eliminated and subsequently banned from historical research. The national traditions that had been reborn during the 1917–21 struggle for independence were continued by Hrushevsky after he returned to Kyiv from Vienna in 1924 and by the other members of his influential historical school in Soviet Ukraine. In the 1920s there were numerous misunderstandings and open conflicts among the various historical schools. In the late 1920s and early 1930s the level of professionalism declined as historical scholarship was transformed into a propaganda tool of totalitarian power.

The collapse of the Communist regime that had subjected politics, history, and scholarship to dogmatic ideological stereotypes and sacrificed objectivity to ideology, coupled with the rebirth of an independent Ukrainian state, created favourable preconditions for the objective study of Ukrainian history and historiography. Numerous writings on socio-political processes in Ukraine in the context of Soviet totalitarianism appeared in the 1990s. Almost all of them promoted the idea of developing a new conceptual basis for Ukrainian history. These new studies and recent trends in historical studies are discussed in a separate section, "The Contemporary Stage in the Historiography of Ukraine's History: Problems and Perspectives."

The principal achievement of the book under review is that it is the first thorough and objective study of the principal stages in the development of Ukrainian historiography in the totalitarian and post-totalitarian periods. Another major achievement is the authors' focus on the problems and prospects of contemporary Ukrainian historiography. They stress the importance of reissuing the writings of Ukrainian émigré scholars that were published in the West and banned in Soviet Ukraine.

Among other new areas of investigation, the authors note the need for a thorough study of the changes that took place in the social composition of the working class, which changed as a result of the massive influx of peasants into industry during the industrialization of the country. They also see a need for further study of issues of discipline, qualifications, and political awareness of producers; social adaptation of former peasants to the industrial environment; changes in peasant psychology; and the effect of peasant dissatisfaction with collectivization on the attitudes of the younger generation of workers. These and other topics require a deeper understanding of the workers' situation. Soviet historiography characterized the development of the working class as the appearance of a "completely new class" without really addressing its qualitative and quantitative changes over time. The inadequacy of Soviet historiography necessitates a thorough review of the history of the Ukrainian working class during the twentieth century.

Present-day historiography devotes a great deal of attention to the peasantry. Research on this problem began in the late 1980s and early 1990s, when previously banned subjects and "blank spots" began to draw attention of scholars and the general public (e.g., Stanislav Kulchytsky's *Komunizm v Ukraini: Pershe desiatylittia, 1919–1928*



[Kyiv, 1996]). In their work the authors offer a profound analysis of studies of the Terror Famine of 1932–33 in Ukraine.

In 1991 Ukrainian historians began investigating the insurgent movement in Ukraine. The authors point out that in the 1990s these historians rejected the notion of political banditry and kulak opposition to Soviet power and began revealing the scale of the peasant anti-Bolshevik movement in Ukraine, thereby refuting the Soviet claim that by the mid-1930s the peasants had completely accepted Communist ideology and were convinced that the methods chosen by the state to develop agriculture were correct.

A new stage in the study of the history of the intelligentsia also began in 1991 (e.g., Heorhii Kasianov and Viktor Danylenko's *Stalinizm i ukrainska intelihentsiia (20–30-i roky)* [Kyiv, 1991] and Kasianov's *Ukrainska intelihentsiia 1920-kh–30-kh roky: Sotsialnyi portret ta istorychna dolia* [Kyiv, 1992]). General works on the history of the Ukrainian intelligentsia in the twentieth century, which use new conceptual approaches to reveal the social, political, and cultural aspects of the Soviet intelligentsia, have appeared. Biographies of such prominent intellectuals as Mykhailo Hrushevsky, Mykola Vasylenko, and Serhii Iefremov have been written. Political prejudices and uniform approaches to the contradictory and ambiguous roles of Mykola Skrypnyk, Khristian Rakovsky, Panas Liubchenko, and Oleksander Shumsky have been overcome. The human dimension, not class, has become the foundation of the study of the history of the Ukrainian intelligentsia.

It is worth noting that files from the archives of the Security Service of Ukraine, collections of documents, and memoirs by eyewitnesses are increasingly being used. The historiographic source base has been enriched, which helps in the writing of a more thorough history of the Ukrainian intelligentsia in the age of totalitarianism. With the collapse of the USSR, the appearance of Ukraine on the world stage as an independent state, and the Communist Party's loss of its political and ideological monopoly, new works have appeared. Their authors have tried to rethink both the formation of the USSR and the system of nationality relations in the former Soviet Union. These new works, based on files in previously inaccessible archives, express opinions and conclusions that are fundamentally different from those that dominated in Soviet historiography (for example, O. Iusunovsky's 1991 article "Kryza natsionalnykh vidnosyn v SRSR iak systema problem"). By the early 1990s most Ukrainian historians of the Soviet school—including Volodymyr Baran, Ivan Bilas, Vladyslav Verstiuk, Oleksii Haran, Iaroslav Hrytsak, Heorhii Kasianov, and Iurii Shapoval—had renounced Marxist ideology, switched to studying other subjects and to a different conceptual framework, and adopted the approaches of the historical schools of Antonovych and Hrushevsky, who had stressed direct work with historical sources.

New synthetic works on Ukrainian history by scholars living in the West (Ivan L. Rudnytsky, Orest Subtelny, and others) were translated and published in Ukraine in the years 1991–94. Researchers reassessed the postulates of traditional historiography and overcame the isolation of Ukrainian historical scholarship from world scholarship. A specific feature of these writings was that the formation of the Ukrainian nation was examined in the context of the European historical process, which re-established the legitimacy of Ukrainian history in the Western academic world. New syntheses of Ukrainian history have been published in the West, and its problems are being discussed in prestigious scholarly journals.

Works that examined various aspects of nationality relations in Ukraine in the 1920s and 1930s were also published in Ukraine in the 1990s: for example, Maryna Mukhina's collection of documents *Upokorennia holodom* (Kyiv, 1993) and the multi-volume collection *Istoriia Ukrainy: Malovidomi imena, podii, fakty*, ed. P. T. Tronko et al. (Kyiv, 1996–). Monographs by Dmytro Doroshenko, Bohdan Krawchenko, and Hryhory Kostyuk, and other scholars that had originally appeared in the West were republished in Ukraine. National Communism is now being studied as a variant of Ukrainian statist thinking.

A milestone in the historiography of nationalities relations was a conference that was held in Lviv in June 1991 on the national-liberation struggle in Ukraine from the 1920s to the 1950s. It focussed attention on the search for new documents on the history of this struggle and the preparation of fundamental investigations of nationality problems. Doctoral dissertations on these questions were completed between 1994 and 1996 by Iaroslav Dashkevych, Dmytro Tabachnyk, and T. Horban. These authors consider it necessary to develop new paradigms for the study of recent history, the development and liquidation of Ukrainization, and the development of Ukrainian studies in the context of Ukraine's cultural revival. One feature of contemporary historiography on Ukrainization is that it studies the problem largely through the prism of developments in scholarship, literature, and art. New contributions to the source base of research on the history of nationalities relations in Ukraine in the 1920s and 1930s also have been made—for instance, with the collection of documents *Natsionalni vidnosyny v Ukraini u XX st.: Zbirnyk dokumentiv*, comp. M. I. Panchuk et al. (Kyiv, 1994), and Iurii Shapoval, Volodymyr Prystaiko, and Vadym Zolotarov's *ChK-HPU-NKVD v Ukraini: Osoby, fakty, dokumenty* (Kyiv, 1997).

The 1990s were characterized by the appearance of studies of the Soviet political system in the 1920s and 1930s, with monographs by Vasyl Kremen, Dmytro Tabachnyk, Vasyl Tkachenko, Iurii Shapoval, and others. Researchers have tried to offer a complete picture of political processes in Ukraine in order to “determine the degree of the Ukrainian people's self-organization and its ability to create independently a state according to the requirements of the present.” Finally, scholars have used the newly developed approaches to Ukrainian history in order to write university textbooks.

As *Istoriografii istorii Ukrainy* shows, the present stage in Ukrainian historiography is characterized by a rethinking of all the elements of socio-political history—workers, peasants, the intelligentsia, and national minorities. The emerging histories have a clearly defined new approach toward the role of the Communist Party in the totalitarian system and the role of the soviets, mass social organizations, and the punitive organs as the mainstay of the anti-democratic regime. The present stage differs from the Soviet period in the republication of a large corpus of previously banned diasporic literature. Historiosophical and methodological writings have appeared. These works view historical processes through the prism of the human dimension and offer a synthesis of methodological approaches for the study of the complex and contradictory totalitarian period. This literature is grounded in a source base that is constantly growing, as new collections of documents from the Party and security-service archives appear.

Viktor and Anatolii Kotsur's volume shows the development of historical thought in Ukraine in the most objective light. It is a major contribution to the restoration of the Ukrainian people's historical memory.

## A Fundamental Work on the Ethnography of Bukovyna

*Vsevolod Naulko*

Heorhii Kozholianko. *Etnohrafiia Bukovyny*. Vol. 1. Chernivtsi: Zoloti lytavry, 1999. 384 pp.

The author of this book is a well-known doctor of history and professor of ethnology at Chernivtsi University, the head of the Bukovynian Ethnographic Society, and the author of more than one hundred scholarly works. This publication is a real event in the cultural life not only of Bukovyna, but of Ukraine as a whole. It fills in many blank spots in Bukovynian ethnographic studies and is the first fundamental scholarly work on the settlement of the Bukovynian land, the formation of the ethnic composition of the population, and Bukovynian folkways, customary law, traditional agriculture, settlements and folk architecture, traditional dress, and foods.

This book is the result of more than thirty years of ethnological fieldwork. Armed with notebook and camera, Kozholianko made the rounds of nearly every Bukovynian village, questioned thousands of old inhabitants, observed celebrations and important events, and gathered information about the traditional culture of the Ukrainians, Moldovans, Romanians, Russian Old Believers, Poles, and other ethnic groups living in Bukovyna in compact or mixed settlements. He also conducted research in the field in regions not only adjacent to but also at some distance from Bukovyna—the Hutsul region in Transcarpathia and Ivano-Frankivsk oblasts, Subcarpathia, Podillia, and the northern parts of Moldova. Kozholianko also studied Bukovynian Ukrainian immigrants living in western Siberia, the United States, and Canada. He consulted a wide variety of sources in writing his book: chronicles and statistical compendiums; a sizable amount of materials collected in the archives of Moscow, Lviv, Chişinau, Chernivtsi, and other cities; Austrian, Romanian, and Ukrainian literature and periodicals of the nineteenth and the first half of the twentieth centuries; and materials collected during his ethnographic observations in the field.

In the introduction, Kozholianko defines the principal traits of material and spiritual culture and of ethnography, ethnology, folklore studies, and the component parts of ethnography that are examined in the book. He gives the reader a detailed survey of sources and literature on the problems of the cultural development of Bukovyna's population; and provides the first scholarly assessment of the contributions to Bukovynian studies written by such late nineteenth- and early twentieth-century ethnographers as Volodymyr Shukhevych, Hryhorii Kupchanko, Fedir Vovk, Raimund Kaindl, Dimitrie

Dan, and Oskar Kolberg. Already in his introduction Kozholianko expresses specific conclusions about the general state of development of certain spheres of traditional Bukovynian culture. He writes: "Not entirely objective is the [Soviet] assessment of vestiges of communal relations, which are most often characterized as a negative phenomenon, a phenomenon that negates the traditional norms of life. But the practices and objective reality of the further development of the Ukrainian village in the period of the socialist era showed that the communal ways, which were often called vestigial and rudimentary, were quite progressive. Attempts to destroy communal customs led to the emergence of significant problems both in the socio-economic and cultural development of the population of Bukovyna."

Kozholianko's ethnographic analysis is preceded by a chapter on Bukovyna's history, with specific reference to the socio-economic and historical conditions under which the traits of the traditional culture of the Ukrainians were formed. He includes archaeological data attesting that this land was inhabited in the first millennium AD by a Slavic population with quite a high level of economic and cultural development. Later Bukovyna was part of Kyivan Rus', and after its disintegration it came under the sway of the Principality of Galicia-Volhynia. In the mid-thirteenth century Bukovyna was conquered by the Tatars, and for several centuries afterwards it remained under the oppressive rule of Magyar and Polish magnates, Moldavian hospodars, Turkish feudal lords, Austrian barons, and Romanian boyars. Kozholianko discusses the causes, circumstances, and process of Austria's annexation of Bukovyna in 1774, the period of Bukovyna's inclusion in the Austro-Hungarian Empire and interwar Romania, and the incorporation of Bukovyna as Chernivtsi oblast into the USSR in 1940. He also examines the historical events of independent Ukraine in the 1990s. During the referendum on Ukraine's independence, a large majority of Bukovyna's population voted for the creation of a free economic zone in the region. As Kozholianko notes, however, during the 1990s Ukraine's socio-economic development and the Ukrainian government's political and economic reforms have brought Ukrainian society to the brink of disaster. Unemployment, banditry, racketeering, corruption, and suicide have, unfortunately, become all too common occurrences in Bukovynians' lives, and their demands for the creation of a free economic zone have been ignored.

A wealth of interesting information may be found in the second chapter. There the author confirms that human settlements were already present on the territory of Bukovyna 100,000 years ago, and draws attention to the fact that the oldest extant mentions of the inhabitants of this land are found in ancient manuscripts that were preserved in the Lamaist monasteries near Harbin and Changchun. He notes that the region's various inhabitants are also mentioned in ancient Egyptian, Babylonian, and Assyrian texts and in the Old and New Testaments, and that there are many references to them in the works of Homer, Aeschylus, Pindar, Herodotus, Philarchos, Strabo, Marcus Tullius Cicerone, Publius Ovidius Naso, Gaius Plinius Secundus, Tacitus Cornelius, and other ancient Greek and Roman authors.

With regard to the formation of ethnocultural communities on the territory of Ukraine, including Bukovyna, the author presents several theories and hypotheses that, in his opinion, have a claim to veracity. He lists various nomadic peoples (the Getae, Goths, Huns, Pechenegs, Polovtsians, and others) who at one time or another passed through the territory of Ukraine and left certain traces of their habitation in Bukovyna.



In his analysis of the ethnic composition of the population during the twelfth through seventeenth centuries, the author notes that large Slavic villages and former sites of cities predominated on the territory of Bukovyna. Only from the fourteenth century, when Bukovyna became part of the Moldavian principality, are traces of Romanian-Moldavian settlements found on its territory.

Despite the steady influx of Roman settlers who settled during the period of Moldavian rule, the Ukrainian population continued to predominate over other ethnic groups, a fact attested to by the seventeenth-century Moldavian chronicler Miron Kostin. The author has traced in detail the settlement of Bukovyna by Germans, Poles, Russian Old Believers, Jews, Armenians, and Roma. After Bukovyna was occupied by Austria in 1774, German colonies appeared in the villages of Stara Huta, Nova Huta, Krasna, Molodiia, Roshia, Stara Shuchka, and others. Particularly interesting is the history of the settlement of Bukovyna by the nomadic Roma, who, during their several centuries-long migration from India to Europe, penetrated into Moldavian-ruled Bukovyna.

The author has made a fundamental study of the question of the Romanianization of the Ukrainian population during the nineteenth century and until the 1930s, focussing on such questions as the organization of church administration and elementary-school education. Moldavian-Romanian influence on the organization of the Orthodox Church of Bukovyna was very powerful, and through the agency of priests Romanophile tendencies were transmitted to the parishioners. Another important tool in the Romanianization of Ukrainians were private Romanian schools.

After Bukovyna was occupied by Romania in 1918, the government's policy to Romanianize the Ukrainians was also carried out by force (e.g., a ban on speaking Ukrainian in public places, persecution of the Ukrainian intelligentsia by the authorities, and so on). During periodic enumerations of the population, in particular the census of 1930, religious adherence rather than nationality was taken into account. Since the great majority of Ukrainians in Bukovyna was Orthodox, as were the Romanians, the 1930 census included 280,000 Ukrainian-speaking Romanians.

Migration processes played an important role in the ethno-demographic development of Bukovyna from the mid-nineteenth century onwards. The abolition of serfdom in 1848 significantly increased the mobility of the population. Reforms speeded the process of the stratification and impoverishment of the peasantry, which was gradually divested of land. These factors created the conditions leading to the intensive emigration of the Bukovynians. The author also examines the question of Bukovynian immigration to Canada, the United States, and Latin America, which was supported and encouraged by the governments of North and South America that were interested in colonizing their unpopulated territories and obtaining cheap labour for mines, building railways, and agriculture.

Communal relations and norms of common law are examined in the third chapter, in which the author notes that in nineteenth-century Bukovyna communal relations were rather well developed and relations among people, leisure activities, and administration were conducted according to the norms of customs that had evolved throughout the Ukrainians' centuries-long history. Kozholianko examines various types of communal landholding, forms of division and re-division of land among the members of the community, forms of collective community labour and mutual aid, the role of commu-



nities in the resolution of domestic disputes, the care of orphans and the elderly unfit for work, and the organization of collective pasturing.

The next four chapters are devoted to the material culture of the Ukrainians of Bukovyna. In this section the author analyzes the terrain of Bukovyna, categorizing it according to landscape and climatic zones distinguished from one another by relief, geological structure, flora, and climatic conditions. In discussing the exploitation of land, he focusses on agricultural cultivation and harvest yields. Particular attention is paid to agricultural tools. Kozholianko concludes that the preponderance of progressive agricultural systems in the late nineteenth century was conditioned by a general increase in labour productivity, the evolution of the folk culture, particularly agricultural techniques, and changes in the socio-economic development of the Bukovynian village. He describes various types of settlements, the traditional peasant-house plan, and methods and materials used in constructing houses and farm buildings. Besides providing descriptions of these structures and settlements, he explains the times and circumstances of the emergence of various types of settlements, technological devices, and socio-economic factors that influenced the development of housing construction. Besides a wealth of illustrative material and drawings, the monograph also contains diagrams of various types of village settlements during the nineteenth and the first half of the twentieth centuries; manor house construction and planning of traditional peasant housing; seasonal housing structures; and utilization of building materials.

Kozholianko concludes that natural geographic conditions and husbandry culture determined to a significant degree the variety of housing structures in Bukovyna. At the same he notes many common features in the planning and construction of homes throughout rural Bukovyna and the features that they have in common with the architecture elsewhere in Ukraine and in neighbouring countries.

An important component of the material culture of the Bukovynians is folk dress, the focus of the penultimate chapter of the monograph. More than any other sphere of material culture, folk dress characterizes the specificity of the ethnos and bears an ethnic stamp. Kozholianko emphasizes that folk dress is connected with the entire history of a nation, and the formation and development of folk costume is influenced by many factors, the most significant of which are types of homesteads, the level of development of productive forces, historical traditions, and aesthetic tastes. The study of Bukovynian traditional dress includes the history and formation of folk dress; the material and techniques of preparation; individual components of traditional garb; and local complexes of the traditional Bukovynian costume. The author notes that a national style and ethnic traditions were formed throughout the millennia and that both the day-to-day and festive garb of the Bukovynian Ukrainians can be traced back to antiquity. He concludes that the folk dress of Bukovynian Ukrainians is mainly characterized by features common to the folk dress of other regions of Ukraine and reflects the particularities of homesteads, lifestyle, and forms of family and community life. Socio-economic and historical factors also influenced the development of the traditional Bukovynian costume.

Kozholianko discusses the attempt to de-nationalize Ukrainian folk culture on the whole and folk dress in particular in the Communist period. He notes the practice of exploiting the component parts of festive dress, whereby it became impossible to distinguish the clothing of Ukrainians from that of the Belarusians, Moldovans, Armenians, or some other nation—a practice that was introduced between 1950 and 1980.

In the post-Communist period partially forgotten progressive elements began to be revived in the sphere of the material and spiritual culture, and a return to traditional elements of folk dress during seasonal and family festivities has become noticeable.

The final chapter of the book is devoted to an analysis of such elements of material culture as national foods and household objects. The author lists daily foods according to their ingredients; a separate section includes festive and ritual foods that clearly demonstrate the people's ethnic originality and the state of development of its culture. Many of the foods of the Bukovynian Ukrainians may be traced back to pre-Christian times.

The author's classification of the material culture of the population of Bukovyna and its division into three periods is an innovation in Ukrainian ethnographic literature. The first period, encompassing the nineteenth and early part of the twentieth centuries, shows the material culture in its basic components (folk agro-technology, housing, dress, foods), reflecting the greatest number of features common to the material culture of the population of other Ukrainian regions. The second period (1920–40) coincides with the Romanian occupation when, under pressure from the authorities, many traits of the Ukrainians' material culture were transformed. The third period (1940–80) is characterized by a significant decline in the traditional culture and such negative tendencies as the change to the collective-farm system and the decline of animal husbandry, agro-technological devices, and land-cultivation methods. The revival of forgotten traits of the traditional culture was initiated only in the mid-1980s. However, the acute economic and political changes of the 1990s has once again led to a departure from the traditional culture, and the media are saturated with various facets of the contemporary urban and Western cultures with all their flaws. The strongest resistance to this influence may be found in the Bukovynian village, where the traditional culture continues to be preserved and developed.

The wealth of new material in the book, which also includes a name and geographic index, will certainly spark the general reader's interest. The immense theoretical and practical significance of Dr. Kozholianko's book and its benefit to scholars and students cannot be overestimated.

## What or Who Is Really a Threat to the Ukrainian Language?\*

Andrij Hornjatkevyč

Petro P. Toločko. *Ščo abo xto zahrožuje ukrajins'kij movi?* Kyiv: Orižany, 1998. 32 pp.

The state and status of the Ukrainian language are topics on which every resident of Ukraine—including President Kuchma, who made the fine distinction between the “official” and “state” language—has an opinion. Given the key political significance of the language question in Ukraine, it should come as no surprise that the number of those willing to participate in the discussion far exceeds the number of graduates in linguistics living in the country. Recently Professor Petro Toločko, the vice-president of the National Academy of Sciences of Ukraine, director of its Institute of Archeology, and a member of the President’s Council on Language Policy Questions, entered into this discussion with his brochure *Ščo abo xto zahrožuje ukrajins'kij movi?* (What or Who Threatens the Ukrainian Language)<sup>1</sup>. Although the brochure is modest in size—only thirty-two pages—it merits attention because its author is not only a prominent scholar but also an influential critic and commentator.<sup>2</sup> Academician Toločko’s scholarly status enhances his authority as a publicist and ensures him a broad and respectfully attentive readership as well as, at times, fiery rebuttals, as was the case with his articles on the “national idea.”

Toločko’s political commentaries are clearly formulated and present a well-defined authorial position. Their overall tone—rational, responsible, and balanced—enhances his authority and evokes the reader’s confidence. It is precisely for this reason that one must question whether such positive features can replace the lack of professional knowledge when the author turns to a subject on which he is not a specialist. Let us examine Toločko’s view of the development of the Ukrainian language—a view on which he bases his arguments concerning the present status and future prospects of the Ukrainian

---

\* This is a slightly expanded translation of my article “Ščo abo xto spravdi zahrožuje ukrajins'kij movi?” published in *Sučasnist'*, 2000, no. 4: 146–53.

1. All page references to this work, as well as to other works, appear in the body of this article.

2. Toločko has written fifteen monographs and over four hundred articles. A 397-page collection of his selected popular-scholarly articles, criticism, and political commentary was recently published under the title *Vid Rusi do Ukrajiny* (Kyiv: Abrys, 1997).

language. Although I do not consider myself a specialist in socio-linguistics, I shall have to comment on this branch of language study because it comes within the purview of Toločko's brochure.

Toločko examines the thesis that "there is no nation without a language" (p. 5). He questions it by stating that there are more nations than languages. To be sure, some languages are native to a number of nations. For example, German is native to in Germany, Austria, Liechtenstein, Luxembourg, and Switzerland; English to Great Britain, the United States, Canada, Australia, New Zealand, and other countries; and French to France, Canada, Belgium, Haiti, and a number of African countries. Many more examples could be cited, but these will suffice. Yet there are some languages that are the exclusive property of one nation: for example, Japanese, Georgian, Icelandic, Swedish, Hungarian, Slovak, and Polish. Furthermore, other languages are used by ethno-linguistic communities that are often seen as part of other nations, and linguists are constantly discovering new languages. Hence it is presumptuous to claim axiomatically that there are more nations than languages. Quite possibly the exact opposite may be true. But if these nations were to lose their languages and switch to using others, they would, to a great extent, cease to exist and their cultural heritage would either be lost or become the property of others.

The Irish are a striking example of this. To be sure, Gaelic is still spoken on the western shores of Eire, and the language can be found in government documents. But in reality it has surrendered the field to English. The wonderful Irish Anglophone poets, prosaists, and playwrights are often considered to be English, and their Irishness is often forgotten. The Irish nation has lost its language and is thereby much impoverished, even if it enriches another (imperial) culture. Lately the Irish have made attempts to revive their ancestral language, but have had very limited success.

The Ukrainian language is the Ukrainians' heritage. Others will not preserve it for them, and if they were to lose it they would be washed away in a foreign sea.

Toločko writes: "One cannot force an older person who has spoken Russian all of his life to switch to [speaking] Ukrainian immediately" (p. 6). Of course not, but one can create favourable circumstances for this switch to occur. There have been numerous instances of people who, when they became aware of their allegiance to a nation, learned its language in adulthood. For example, Bedřich Smetana, the father of modern Czech music, learned to speak the native language of his country only in his mature years; so did the Hungarian composer Franz Liszt and the Finnish statesman Carl Mannerheim. Ukrainian culture also knows numerous such instances: one need only recall Marko Vovchok, Mykola Khvylovyj, Alla Hors'ka, and Helij Snehir'ov. One might protest that they were young then. Perhaps, but how many adults who have immigrated to Israel have studied Hebrew even in their later years because they have understood that this is the language of the state of Israel and that if they have settled in that country they must know its language?

Toločko is concerned about "internal contradictions that do not allow [the Ukrainian language] to develop fully" (p. 6). But what are the "internal contradictions" that have offended him, as they have many of his predecessors? As it turns out, they are the various Galician dialectal forms that have supposedly contaminated the standard language. I have no doubts that many a central Ukrainian may find some Southwestern dialectal forms strange. But is this a problem? After all, every standard language, to a greater or lesser degree, accepts into its literary koine words or expressions from all its dialects.



As an example of this, let us consider standard Russian: it has successfully combined the plosive /g/ from the Northwestern dialect with the “*akan'e*” of the Southeastern dialect. Another example is standard German, which has accepted as the norm the northern pronunciation of vowels and the southern one of consonants. It bears repeating that the “internal contradictions” of German are far more serious than those of Ukrainian. If a Bavarian and a Mecklenburger were to speak only in their native dialects, they would not understand one another. To communicate, they must switch to speaking to each other in standard German (which, by the way, is nobody’s native dialect). Yet nobody in the various German-speaking countries demands the abolition of dialects. Quite the opposite is true: bookstores there sell handbooks on the regional dialects, and among some members of the upper social strata it is fashionable to use the local dialect. Somehow the German countries have managed to cope with this situation.

English, meanwhile, has drawn its lexicon and phraseology from various dialects, subdialects, and even foreign languages. But nobody in the English-speaking countries is offended by the fact that this or another form stems from some regional dialect. As for phonological differences among the English dialects, I shall not even mention them.

I respect the Central-Dnipro and Poltava subdialects as the foundation of standard Ukrainian. But if we were to limit ourselves to only their lexicon, our language would be poor indeed. The Ukrainian language has been enriched by the playwrights from Ukraine’s steppe regions, by Lesja Ukrajinka from Volhynia, Ivan Franko from Galicia, Vasyl’ Stefanyk from Pokuttia, Jurij Fed’kovyč from Bukovyna, Hnat Xotkevych from Slobidska Ukraine, and many others.

I shall not deny that in the nineteenth century the language of the Galician Ukrainians contained numerous Polonisms, but Toločko’s claim that “the dialect was completely Polonized” (p. 7) is rather far-fetched. What, then, is the problem as he sees it?

Under the influence of Romanticism some Western and Southern Slavs, especially the Czechs and Croats, attempted to rid their language of foreign loanwords, primarily from the German. These people tried to coin words on the basis of their own Slavic roots for the new realia that were coming into their lands with the Industrial Revolution. To a certain extent the Poles followed suit, and then so did the Galician Ukrainians. Obviously these words might seem strange to central and eastern Ukrainians, but circumstances demanded Ukrainian words for the new realia. Under the conditions of the Valuev Circular and the Ems Ukase—which virtually forbade the use of Ukrainian in the Russian Empire—the Galician Ukrainians could hardly wait for words from their more easterly brethren.

In her story “*Tovaryšky*” (Friends), Olena Pčilka portrays Ljuba, a Ukrainian from the Russian Empire, who is studying in Vienna. She is ill at ease when conversing with the Galician Bučyns’kyj, for he can speak comfortably on any topic in Ukrainian while she must formulate her thoughts first in Russian and then try to express them in Ukrainian. She often lacks the necessary words. Just a story, you say? Yes, but it is an accurate depiction of the state of literary Ukrainian in Galicia and Russian-ruled Ukraine in those times.

One should also emphasize that at that time both Austrian- and Russian-ruled Ukraine were attempting to shun the linguistic influence of a strong neighbour, that is, of the Poles in Galicia and of the Russians in central and eastern Ukraine, by adopting



the lexicon from a more distant neighbour. Thus the Ukrainian language in Galicia absorbed such Russianisms as *воздух* (instead of *повітря* 'air'), *поїзд* (instead of *потяг* 'train'), *совітник* (instead of *радник* 'counsellor'), *свобода* (instead of *воля* 'freedom'), *зависть* (instead of *зздрість* 'envy'), *приклад* (instead of *приклад* 'example'), and *словар* (instead of *словник* 'dictionary'). More examples can be listed, but it is interesting that most of the above forms now considered standard Ukrainian are analogous to those in Polish: *powietrze, pociąg, radca, wolność, przykład, słownik*.

Toločko accuses the Ukrainian diaspora of using archaic words or foreign borrowings (p. 10 et passim). There is an element of truth here, but it is far from the whole truth. He is annoyed by the ending -y in the genitive singular of third declension nouns whose stems end in two consonants and of the group of five (*кров* 'blood,' *любов* 'love,' *осінь* 'autumn,' *Русь* 'Rus,' and *сіль* 'salt'). The truth of the matter is that these forms are the authentic Ukrainian ones, and only they can be found in Borys Hrinchenko's dictionary (1907–9). (And one can hardly accuse Hrinchenko of having had pro-Galician sympathies.) In the old Galician standard language the ending -y was used in the genitive, dative, and locative singular of these nouns (Simovyč, 169). In central and eastern Ukraine, on the other hand, the ending -y is used in the genitive and the ending -i is used in the dative and locative singular. So it was precisely on the basis of the Central-Ukrainian subdialects that the Orthographic Commission specified these forms in the 1929 (Kharkiv) norm. Only in the 1930s was the ending -i legislated in Soviet Ukraine for all these cases.

I readily admit that borrowings with  $\theta$  (theta) in Greek, or through it, pose a problem. There is no question that even the most diehard Galician will say and write  $\phi$ ; for example, *Вифлеєм* 'Bethlehem' (via Greek *Βηθλεέμ*). Toločko, it appears, would be pleased if *Фадей* and *Борисфен* replaced *Тадей* 'Tadej, Thadeus' and *Бористен* 'Borysthenes.' But how much luck would he have had convincing Maksym Ryl's'kyj that his patronymic should not be *Tadejovych*, Mykola Xomyčev's'kyj that his *nom de plume* should be Borys Fen, and Todos' Os'mačka that his first name should have been spelled Fodos'?

Toločko states categorically that "from the time of the first Rus' chronicles those and similar words have been written with the letter  $\phi$ " (p. 10). Unfortunately, however, that is not the case. The chronicles and other documents from those times used not only  $\phi$ , but above all the Greek theta. In his *Materialy* Sreznevskij gives countless examples of this, but even there one can find examples where  $\tau$  is written in place of the theta. The translation of Greek *αἰθήρ* 'ether' is attested both as *ЕТЕРЪ* and as *ЕΘЕРЪ*, but never *\*ЕФЕРЪ*. The theta is rendered primarily by  $\theta$ , and only rarely by  $\phi$ : *ΘΕΔОРЪ*, *ΘИМИАМЪ*, *ΘΕΟЛОΓЪ*. The *Materialy* give copious examples where  $\tau$  is found in place of Greek  $\theta$ . Let us recall that many words taken from Greek in the distant past have  $\tau$  in place of  $\theta$ , for example, *Назает* 'Nazareth' (< *Ναζαρέθ*). In more recent Greek borrowings via central European languages,  $\theta$  is always rendered as  $\tau$ : *ритм* (*ρυθμός*) 'rhythm,' *театр* (*θέατρον*) 'theatre,' *ортодокс* (*ὀρθόδοξος*) 'orthodox,' *теза* (*θέσις*) 'thesis,' and many others.

Toločko confuses two very different issues, namely, Ukrainian  $\phi$  that appeared in some instances from Middle Greek  $\theta$ , and where the /f/ has a different source (p. 10). Obviously one can only write *Фридрих* or *Фаберже*, for those names come from German and French, respectively, and have nothing to do with Middle Greek  $\theta$ . But in place of  $\theta$  we shall find either  $\phi$  (*акафіст* 'akathist,' *кафізма* 'kathisma') or  $\tau$  (*теорія* 'theory,' *ритм* 'rhythm').

It is surprising to read the following erroneous pronouncement by Toločko, given that he is a doctor of historical sciences: “And what about the totally artificial letter *r*, which was *never* part of our alphabet?” (p. 10, my emphasis). During the time of the rule of the Grand Duchy of Lithuania in Ukraine, there arose the need to write the sound /g/, which appeared ever more frequently with the introduction of Lithuanian and other foreign names and terms. The problem was initially solved by using the digraph кр. The earliest record of such use dates from 1388—КГИРДИВИДЪ ‘Girdividas.’ Later such spellings occurred with increasing frequency: КГВАЛТЪ ‘violence, rape,’ КГРУНТЪ ‘ground, soil,’ КГЕДИМИНОВИЧЪ ‘Gediminych, i.e., son of Gediminas,’ ШВИТРИКГАЙЛО ‘Švitrigaila,’ and others (Shevelov 1979, p. 623). But starting from the sixteenth century such a solution was no longer satisfactory, and our ancestors began using either the Latin *g* or a new Cyrillic letter, *r* (taken from the contemporary Greek script). The earliest record of the use of this letter that I know of is from an early sixteenth-century gravestone in Krylos near Halych, which has inscribed on it ...ЗА КОРОЛЯ ПОЛСКОГО ЗИГМУНТА АВГУСТА В РО/К/ Б/О/ЖЬИ АФЛЕ’ (During [the reign of] the Polish king Sigismund Augustus in the year of the Lord 1535).<sup>3</sup> The letter *r* is also found in the later Ostrih Bible (1583) and Ostrih Primer of Ivan Fedorov(ich) (1587), and Meletij Smotryc'kyj used it in his *Hrammatika dobrohlaholyvaho ellynoslovenskaho jazyka* of 1591 (Nimčuk, 1991, no. 1: 10). Still later the anonymous “Ostrih Cleric” (1599) writes ФѢЮРА ‘figure’ in one of his works, and Pamvo Berynda (1627) writes ГРОНО ‘cluster’ (Shevelov 1979, p. 624). Although the digraph кр continued to be used until the early eighteenth century, the letter *r* secured its place in the Ukrainian alphabet. That it is not a neologism in contemporary Ukrainian can be proven by its use in the dictionaries compiled by Želexovs'kyj and Nedil's'kyj (1885–6), Umanec' and A. Spilka (1893), and Hrinčenko (1907–9). Some rules about its use were given in *Najholovniši pravyla ukrajins'koho pravopysu* (1921), and they were elaborated in the 1929 edition of *Ukrajins'kyj pravopys*. The letter was expunged from the Ukrainian alphabet used in Soviet Ukraine in 1933 and banned from use there until 1990. Therefore Toločko's claim that the “‘artificial’ letter *r* never existed in our alphabet” betrays, at best, a lack of familiarity with historical sources.

One must remember that the sound /g/ has a long history in the Ukrainian language, as attested in such publications from the Soviet era as Bulaxovs'kyj's *Kurs sučasnoji ukrajins'koji literaturnoji movy* (1: 145–7, 193–4) or Bilodid's *Sučasna ukrajins'ka literaturna mova* (1: 132, 175–6)<sup>4</sup>. Since every Ukrainian consonantal phoneme has its own corresponding letter, someone had to remove the letter *r* from the Ukrainian alphabet in 1933 and decree that the phonemes /h/ and /g/ would henceforth be represented by the letter *r* (Moskalenko, 14). This is about as logical as ordering that the phonemes /v/ and /b/ be represented by the letter *в*.

3. I am indebted to Prof. Swiatosław Trofimenko (University of Delaware) for sending me a photograph of the gravestone.

4. To be sure, in Bulaxovs'kyj's Stalin-era grammar this phoneme is represented solely by the Latin *g*, but in Bilodid's work of nearly two decades later the traditional Cyrillic letter *r* is used.

Toločko claims that the introduction (though actually it was its restoration) of the letter *ʀ* “has diminished its usefulness not only for *Russophone* but also *Ukrainophone* citizens of Ukraine” (pp. 11–12, my emphasis). Even if that might be true for some citizens, and even if there were Ukrainian subdialects that did not have the phoneme /g/, this would not be a sufficient reason for deleting this phoneme and its corresponding letter, *ʀ*, from standard Ukrainian pronunciation and the alphabet. But the most important fact for our discussion is that the Central-Dnipro and Poltava subdialects—the subdialects on which standard Ukrainian is based—do have the phoneme /g/.<sup>5</sup>

Russophone citizens do not play a role in any of this. So why does Toločko bring them up? Since he has, one should remember that when a Ukrainian learns to speak Russian, he or she has to master the pronunciation of Russian [ʏ], which is absent in most Ukrainian dialects and also in the standard language. Another example of such adaptation is President Mikhail Gorbachev, who became accustomed to pronouncing /g/, which is used in standard Russian, even though it was not used in the dialect he grew up speaking. Why, then, would Ukraine’s Russophone citizens not be able to learn to use that phoneme when having to speak standard Ukrainian?

Toločko mentions that the letters *ѣ* and the word-final *ѣ* have been deleted from the Russian alphabet (p. 12). One could also add that *і*, *ѳ*, and *ѵ* were also deleted because their separate pronunciation had disappeared and their articulation had merged totally with that of other vowels. The reality of modern Russian justified such a reform, but the structure of the Ukrainian phonemic system is quite different, and the alphabet should reflect this. The Ukrainian language is not “going in the opposite direction” (p. 12), that is, moving backwards, as Toločko states. Its defenders are simply reclaiming that which was taken away from it.

Toločko states that he dislikes Ukrainian foreign-name spellings of the Гемінґуей ‘Hemingway’ type (p. 12). (I also dislike it, because the *y* is quite superfluous and the second *ʀ* should be replaced by *ʀ*.) To be sure, the ignoring of the phoneme /g/ by many Ukrainians when pronouncing this and other English names almost led to a diplomatic flap after an official publicly pronounced the name of the American vice-president, Al Gore, with an initial /h/ rather than /g/. Anyone with a good grasp of English can recognize the faux pas caused by using the initial fricative here. Obviously Ukrainian cannot reproduce all nuances of foreign names—no human language is capable of that. But if it does have the means at its disposal to reproduce foreign phonemes, these should be used so that Ukrainians do not appear uncultured to the outside world.

Toločko also claims that “Ukrainian is needlessly complicated by the wholesale incorporation of Galician dialectal forms (Polish and German borrowings as a rule) of the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries” (p. 12). This statement confuses two different concepts, namely, Galician dialectal forms, on the one hand, and Polish and German borrowings, on the other. The two are not the same. Such regional forms as *legin*’

---

5. It should be mentioned that some German subdialects do not have voiced consonants. An example of this type of pronunciation can be seen in Ivan Franko’s *Pans’ki žarty*; there the poet thus conveys the foreign accent of the German commissioner. Standard German does not take such subdialects into account, however, and uses voiced consonants where they are needed.

'(robust) lad', *gazda* 'master of the house', *vatra* 'bonfire', and many others have entered standard Ukrainian and enriched it. The standard language would be much diminished were its lexicon limited to words found only in the Central-Ukrainian subdialects or even the Southeastern dialect.

In the case of Polish borrowings, however, Toločko should know that they came into Ukrainian (and not only its Galician dialects) much earlier than the late nineteenth century. During the Polish-Lithuanian Commonwealth they were much more numerous throughout Ukraine than they were in the Galician dialects at the turn of the twentieth century, but most of them disappeared (Strumins'kyj, pp. 44–9). Meanwhile German borrowings penetrated not only via Polish through Galicia. Most entered the Ukrainian language via Russian, often in a corrupted form. (Let us remember that while relatively few educated Russians knew German, under Austrian rule every Galician with a secondary education had mastered the language.) And so we have such "Russian" Germanisms in Ukrainian as штат (from *Staat*), камертон (from *Kammerton*), концертмейстер (from *Konzertmeister*), маркшейдерія (from *Markscheidekunst*), феєрверк (from *Feuerwerk*), швейцар (from *Schweizer*), and many others.

Toločko deserves praise when he defends the purity of the Ukrainian language and wants to free it from Polonisms, Germanisms, and even regionalisms. But for some reason he does not utter a word about the Russianisms that abound in contemporary Ukrainian. At every step one hears давайте зробимо rather than зробімо 'let's do,' сáмий високий rather than найвищий 'the highest,' and любий rather than будь-який 'any'; in the Kyiv subway we see signs stating вихід в місто instead of вихід у місто 'exit into town.' One is struck by the deaffricated articulation of affricates, for example, /рад-жу/ 'I advise,' /кукуруд-за/ 'corn,' the palatalized articulation of /ч/ and /щ/, the change of /л/ to /н/ after hard consonants (e.g., /з исторії/ 'from history'), and many others that can be heard on the streets of Kyiv and, of course, not only that city.

"As a result, people will inevitably turn to a simpler and easier language, which Russian is" (p. 12), Toločko writes. But is Russian so much simpler and easier because it has lost the vocative case, the pluperfect tense, and the first-person plural imperative? Is the orthography really simpler when, in almost every instance, one must know where to write а, о, и, е, and so on? The author is more familiar than I with the Ukrainian-accented Russian spoken by several Ukrainian politicians of the recent past. The Russian language has been given every possible advantage in Ukraine, but the politicians themselves have been unable to master it. So is Russian really that much easier than Ukrainian? Let us not forget that the Russian language is also a synthesis of various dialects and subdialects and has probably absorbed far more foreign borrowings than Ukrainian.

The author asks "whether there is an analogous phenomenon anywhere in the world" (p. 12) for the existence of more than one orthography for a language. I can assure him from personal experience that this is the case in English, particularly in Canada, where everyone can follow either the British or American norm. The difference between these standards is insignificant and creates no impediment for native speakers. While the letter ß continues to be used in Germany and Austria, it is no longer in use in Switzerland. And what about the eastern and western dialects and orthographies of Armenian? I could cite many other examples, but these should suffice.



In view of the sound and fury surrounding the issue of the two Ukrainian orthographies, one must admit that when dealing with the native "nucleus" the differences between them are not very significant. One can read page after page of literary works before it becomes clear which orthography the author is using. Differences, and serious ones at that, arise only in the spelling of foreign words.

Toločko objects to maximally taking into account "the peculiarities of the Ukrainian diaspora's language" (p. 13). He may be right in certain respects. Indeed, the language of the diaspora is often archaic and burdened with many Southwestern dialectal features. But the language experience of the diaspora should not be dismissed out of hand. First, the diaspora has attempted to preserve, albeit often imperfectly, the authentic orthography and not submit to spelling rules that were imposed on the Ukrainian language in the Stalinist and post-Stalinist years. These forms have been forgotten in Ukraine or kept in discreet silence, but they have been preserved in the diaspora. Second, the Ukrainian diaspora is scattered throughout the world and lives surrounded by other languages. Doubtless, people with a good knowledge of foreign languages work in Ukrainian academe, but I dare say that those who live and work in foreign countries have a better command of English, French, Spanish, Portuguese, German, or any other language than their colleagues in Ukraine. Ukrainians could do worse than listen to their diasporic brethren's pronunciation and spelling of words from those languages.

To bolster his argument, Toločko quotes Academician George Y. Shevelov's statement that the Ukrainian "orthography should not wage war with the language and impose on it what is alien" (p. 15). But that is precisely what occurred in Soviet Ukraine from 1933 until 1990. All kinds of alien forms and rules were imposed on the language while depriving it of that which was part of its essence. After all, who inflicted foreign forms on the Ukrainian language? Those who distorted its orthography in order to bring it closer to Russian, or those who have been trying to restore its authenticity?

If a storm destroys my house, should I not try to undo the damage and rebuild it? All kinds of storms have ravaged the Ukrainian language over the years. Now, finally, Ukrainians have the opportunity and the duty to repair the ruin.

Toločko writes about the Old Rus' language (p. 13) as the common source of Ukrainian and Russian (p. 16) as if that were a proven fact. But reality is hardly that simple. Let us agree that the most ancient Old Rus' manuscripts were written not in the local vernacular but in a transplanted South Slavic language that would eventually absorb some local features. With time these local elements became more numerous and began to predominate. But whether an Old Rus' or common East Slavic language ever existed has not been proven. Academician Shevelov shows in his celebrated article (1994, p. 9) that dialects are generally older than the standard language. The latter eventually crystallizes on the basis of one or more dialects. Thus five dialects existed in the East Slavic area before any "Old Rus'" language, and they are the source of Ukrainian, Belarusian, and Russian. These three languages did not derive from a common language, but from five dialects. So it is erroneous to state that the Ukrainian and Russian languages derive from a single language; while Ukrainians (and possibly Belarusians) created their standard languages on the basis of the native lexicon, Russians were content to incorporate Church Slavonicisms into theirs. Inasmuch as the language of Old Rus' was largely Church Slavonic, one gets the impression that Russian is its direct descendant.



Toločko emphasizes “the place of the Russian language and literature in the Ukrainian cultural and educational process” and cites a number of Ukrainians who had a major impact on Russian culture (p. 17). Later (pp. 17–20) he enumerates Russian authors who wrote on Ukrainian themes and asks: “And what, is all this foreign literature?” Following this train of thought, one could extend his question to other cultures and literatures. We should then also consider as not foreign the writers of the Ukrainian School in Polish Literature (Tomasz Padura, Antoni Malczewski, Seweryn Goszczyński, Józef Bohdan Zaleski, Juliusz Słowacki, Wincenty Pol, Michał Czajkowski, Józef Korzeniowski, and more recently Stanisław Vincenz, Jerzy Jendrzejewicz, and Józef Łobodowski). And if so, how can we then disregard Sholom Aleichem’s rich literary legacy, which deals not only with the shtetl but also the Ukrainians living near and around it?

Ukraine has been multi-ethnic since antiquity, and this fact has significantly enriched its culture. Then why extol, as Toločko does, the Russian component at the expense of others, especially when they have reached a much higher level? Słowacki and Sholom Aleichem are far more important in Polish and Jewish literature than Nikolai Leskov is in Russian literature.

Toločko claims that Russian “is one of the six languages of international communication” (p. 25). Perhaps it would have been more accurate to say that it is one of the six working languages of the United Nations. Let us admit that it functions as a language of international communication only in the CIS countries, and even there it is gradually being displaced by English. But this is not the point. Toločko fears that by rejecting Russian, Ukrainians would be condemning themselves to isolation (p. 25). I shall not deny the importance of Russian, but I am equally certain that if the citizens of Ukraine do not study English, French, German, Spanish, and even Arabic and Chinese, they will be condemning themselves to even greater isolation. Toločko goes on to claim that “practically no one in the world reads ... Ukrainian scholarly journals, monographs, and articles” (p. 25). That may be true, but the situation of Russian works is not much better in this regard.

Toločko is concerned with the fate of those twenty-five percent (p. 15) of Ukrainian citizens who are Russophones. (Strangely, by p. 26 their number has grown to fifty percent). One can only applaud such concern for the fate of this “minority.” But does the author express the same anxiety about the ethnic Ukrainians living in the Russian Federation? He would readily support granting the Russian language official status in Ukraine (p. 26), yet he is silent about demands for granting the Ukrainian language official status in Russia. He worries that Russian is taught as a foreign language in Ukraine’s state-run schools (p. 15). But in how many state-run schools in the Russian Federation, even in those areas with a Ukrainian majority, is Ukrainian taught at all? (That there are no Ukrainian-language schools there goes without saying.) Toločko is tactfully silent about this issue.

Let us return to the question that Toločko poses in title of his brochure: what or who is really a threat to the Ukrainian language? While reading his brochure, one gets the impression that nothing is a threat to the Ukrainian language in Ukraine. To be sure, legislation has given Ukrainian state-language status, but the reality is quite different. Sadly, I must agree with those who accuse government agencies of inaction when it comes to preserving and consolidating the state-language status of Ukrainian. To worry

first of all about the status of the Russian language in Ukraine—a magnanimous gesture though it is—is to act against the interests of the Ukrainian language. I believe that such a stance would signify nothing less than a re-establishment of Russian linguistic dominance—a situation that existed until very recently since tsarist times—while relegating Ukrainian once again only to use at home and in some spheres of everyday life, in Ukrainian-language literature, and in the arts.

If one were to ask who is a threat to the Ukrainian language, one would get the impression from reading Toločko that it is above all the Ukrainian diaspora and the Galicians, who are contaminating the central Ukrainian vernacular with regionalisms, Polonisms, and Germanisms, as well as those who are attempting to restore the use of the letter *r* and the genitive singular ending *-H* of some third-declension nouns.

Is Ukrainian really threatened by Polonisms and Germanisms? Let us recall again that the majority of German words in Ukrainian came through Russian, often in a distorted form; that the number of Polonisms was much greater in the Polish-Lithuanian Commonwealth than in the language of Galicians at the turn of the twentieth century (Strumins'kyj, pp. 44–9); and that the majority of them have disappeared from the Ukrainian language. But what about the numerous Russianisms in the Ukrainian language? Again, for some reason Toločko is silent about this.

What kind of threat does the letter *r* really pose? If one looks at the 1994 edition of *Orfografičnyj slovnyk ukrajins'koji movy*, one can see that the number of words in which it appears is not very large. Therefore a person who speaks Ukrainian correctly will have no difficulty becoming familiar with the restored letter. As for the genitive singular *-H* ending of certain third-declension nouns, let us also remember that it is not a regional feature, but precisely the form used in those central-Ukrainian dialects that served as the foundation of the standard language.

In the 1930s the Ukrainian orthography was altered by administrative fiat in order to diminish those elements that differentiate it from other languages. Some wish to preserve this status quo. So precisely who is a threat to the Ukrainian language? Is it those who support the changes wrought during the 1930s? Those who wish to restore its authentic character after having witnessed how the language has been distorted? Those who want to strengthen its status in society? Or those who are indifferent to its fate? The answer, I believe, is unambiguous.

### Bibliography

- Bilodid, I. K., et al., eds. *Sučasna ukrajins'ka literaturna mova*. 5 vols. Kyiv: Naukova dumka, 1969.
- Bulaxovs'kyj, L. A., et al., eds. *Kurs sučasnoji ukrajins'koji literaturnoji movy*. 2 vols. Kyiv: Radjans'ka škola, 1951.
- Grinčenko [Hrinčenko], B. D., ed. *Slovar' ukrainskogo jazyka sobrannyj redakciej žurnala "Kievskaja Starina"*. 4 vols. Kyiv, 1907–9. Repr. Kyiv: Vydavnytstvo Akademiji nauk Ukrajins'koji RSR, 1958–9.
- Moskalenko, A. A. *Istoriija ukrajins'koho pravopysu (Radjans'kyj period)*. Odesa: Odes'kyj deržavnyj universytet, 1968.
- Najholovniši pravyla ukrajins'koho pravopysu*. Kyiv: Ukrajins'ka akademija nauk, 1921.

- Nimčuk, V. V. "Pro hrafiku ta pravopys jak element etničnoji kul'tury: Istorija 'g.'" *Movoznavstvo*, 1990, no. 6 (144): 3–10; 1991, no. 1 (145): 9–17; 1991, no. 2 (146): 18–24; 1991, no. 3; (147): 12–21.
- Orfohrafičnyj slovnyk ukrajins'koji movy*. Compiled by S. I. Holovaščuk et al. Kyiv: Dovira, 1984.
- Pčilka, Olena. "Tovaryšky." In *Peršyj vinok: Žinočyj al'manax*, 231–357. Lviv: Naukove tovarystvo im. Ševčenko, 1887.
- Simovyč, Vasyl'. *Hramatyka ukrajins'koji movy dlja samonavčannja ta v dopomohu škil'nij nauci*. 2d ed. Kyiv and Leipzig: Ukrajins'ka nakladnja, [1922].
- Sreznevskij, I. I. *Materialy dlja slovarja drevnerusskogo jazyka po pis'mennym pamjatnikam*. 3 vols. St. Petersburg: Tipografija Imperatorskoj akademii nauk, 1893–1912.
- Strumins'kyj, Bohdan. "Ukrainian between Old Bulgarian, Polish, and Russian." *Journal of Ukrainian Graduate Studies* 3, no. 2 (Fall 1978): 40–56.
- Ukrajins'kyj pravopys*. 1st ed. [Kharkiv:] Deržavne vydavnytstvo Ukrajinu, 1929.
- Umanec', M., and A. Spilka [M. Komarov et al.]. *Slovar' rosyjs'ko-ukrajins'kyj*. 4 vols. Lviv: Naukove tovarystvo im. Ševčenko, 1893–4, 1896, 1898.
- Ševel'ov, Jurij [Shevelov, George Y.]. *Čomu obščerusskij jazyk, a ne vibčorus'ka mova?* Kyiv: K-M Academia, 1994.
- Shevelov, George Y. *A Historical Phonology of the Ukrainian Language*. Heidelberg: Carl Winter Universitätsverlag, 1979.
- Železovs'kyj, Jevhenij, and Sofron Nedil's'kyj. *Malorusko-nimeckij slovar*. 2 vols. Lviv: Naukove tovarystvo im. Ševčenko, 1885–6.

# CANADIAN SLAVONIC PAPERS

---

## REVUE CANADIENNE DES SLAVISTES

Vol. XLIII, No. 4

December 2001

Appearing August 2002

Articles by Andrea Chandler on old-age pensions in Russia; Johanna Granville with "a new look at Gomułka, Nagy, and Soviet Foreign Policy in 1956"; Marina Kanevskaya on Olesha's *Envy* and "the crisis of the Russian avant-garde"; Ewa Mazierska on the cinema of Dorota Kędzierzawska; Marko Pavlyshyn on "what really happens in Kobylans'ka's *Land* and why it matters"; and Paul Wexler on "la relexification en yiddish: les juifs, les sorabes, les khazars et la région de Kiev-Polésie." Plus book reviews and a memorial to George S. N. Luckyj.

For more information, contact: *Canadian Slavonic Papers*,  
200 Arts Building, University of Alberta, Edmonton, Alberta,  
T6G 2E6, Canada.

## Book Reviews

Leontii Voitovych et al., eds. *Dokumenty rosiiskykh arkhiviv z istorii Ukrainy*. Vol. 1. *Dokumenty do istorii zaporozkoho kozatstva 1613–1620 rr.* Lviv: Instytut ukrainoznavstva im. Kryp'iakevycha, 1998. 443 pp.

Historians and researchers owe a great debt to those scholars who undertake the painstaking work of editing and publishing documentary collections. Secondary sources, even the most erudite monographs, eventually become outdated; primary sources, however, are timeless and they may be used with full confidence by future generations. It is precisely for this reason that the initiative of three international organizations—the Peter Jacyk Centre for Ukrainian Historical Research of the Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies, the Institute of Slavic and Balkan Studies of the Russian Academy of Sciences, and the Ivan Kryp'iakevych Institute of Ukrainian Studies of the National Academy of Sciences of Ukraine—to sponsor the publication of a series entitled Documents on Ukrainian History in Russian Archives deserves high praise.

This first volume in the series, containing documents on the history of the Zaporozhian Cossacks in the years 1613–20, is edited by six well-known experts on seventeenth-century history: Boris Floria, Iaroslav Isaievych, Frank Sysyn, Arkadii Turilov, Leontii Voitovych, and Lev Zaborovsky. The editors chose to examine sources in Russian archives for several reasons. No archives of the Zaporozhian Host have been preserved for this period, and there are relatively few materials in Ukraine relating to the Ukrainian Orthodox nobility or to the activists and institutions of the Orthodox Church. The existing sources pertaining to the elite and institutions of the Polish-Lithuanian Commonwealth are one-sided; moreover, they do not reveal adequately the internal life of the Ukrainian community. In the view of the editors, Russian sources are valuable because they illuminate the many-sided “aspects of Ukrainian life and political activity that were beyond the purview of Commonwealth officials and were not preserved in Commonwealth sources” (p. 44). As well, Russian archival documents show the views of the common people, relations with Crimea and the Ottoman Empire, and the attitudes of the official Russian institutions to the Zaporozhian Cossacks.

With the publication, since the 1850s, of various documentary collections, such as *Arkhiv Iugo-Zapadnoi Rossii*, 8 parts, 34 vols. (Kyiv, 1859–1914); *Akty, otnosiashchiesia k istorii Iuzhnoi i Zapadnoi Rossii*, 15 vols. (St. Petersburg, 1861–92); *Akty Moskovskogo gosudarstva*, 3 vols. (St. Petersburg, 1890–1901); and more recently, *Vossoedinenie Ukrainy s Rossiei*, 3 vols. (Moscow, 1953–54), historians and researchers have become aware that Russian archives contain rich sources for the history of Ukraine. The editors, cognizant of this “goldmine,” have decided to explore the holdings of the Russian State Archive of Old Documents (RGADA) in Moscow and concentrate on its collections of



the Department of Military Affairs, which comprises extensive records of various administrative units or desks. Interesting information on “those strata of Ukrainian society that played a primary role in the national movement” is found here (p. 47).

The book opens with three title pages, in Ukrainian, Russian, and English. A lengthy and useful introduction follows in these languages. The largest part of the book is comprised of 198 documents in the original Russian. Some of these are complete; others are abbreviated. The last document, dating back to 1630, describes the events of 1618. The volume also contains an extensive Ukrainian commentary on the documents. It is followed by a trilingual summary of the preceding primary sources. Two detailed indexes, comprising names of persons and places, constitute the final part of the book. Regrettably, the texts of the documents have not been translated into English and Ukrainian, nor the commentary into English and Russian.

Despite this shortcoming, the editors are to be commended. They have produced a volume of primary sources that will be extremely useful for the study of the history of Ukraine in the first two decades of the seventeenth century, in general, and the hetmanate of Petro Sahaidachny, in particular. They have succeeded in illuminating the background of the re-establishment of the Orthodox hierarchy in 1620. This development, which led to the national-liberation uprising under Bohdan Khmelnytsky in 1648, was one of several critical events that played a decisive role in the formation of the modern Ukrainian nation. The editors should be congratulated for their efforts and encouraged to publish all the planned volumes of the series as quickly as possible.

A. B. Pernal

Brandon University

John-Paul Himka. *Religion and Nationality in Western Ukraine: The Greek Catholic Church and the Ruthenian National Movement in Galicia, 1867–1900*. Montreal and Kingston: McGill-Queen's University Press, 1999. xxx, 236 pp. \$65.00 cloth.

It is a common assumption that individual clergymen and, at times, the church as an institution have played an important role in the evolution of nationalism among the stateless peoples of East-Central Europe. This was particularly true of the Ukrainians living for the most part in the eastern half of the former Habsburg province of Galicia. There the Greek Catholic (Uniate) Church was, for most of the nineteenth century, the only formal structure that helped to preserve the region's East Slavic population from assimilation with the Poles. Whereas the general proposition regarding the relationship between religion and nationality in eastern Galicia (which is the Western Ukraine of the author's subtitle) has been well known, the precise manner of how that relationship actually functioned only now has been fully studied in Professor John-Paul Himka's carefully crafted monograph.

The book's subtitle, *The Greek Catholic Church and the Ruthenian National Movement*, suggests from the outset that the story may not be one of a straightforward relationship of the church to the Ukrainian nationality. In fact, at a time when the national

movement among the East Slavs of Galicia was still in its formative phase, there was a debate among its elite, or national intelligentsia, as to which nationality the local inhabitants should belong. As East Slavs, they could be Russians or Ukrainians, or a distinct group unique to the region, that is, Galician Ruthenians. The latter view was known as the Old Ruthenian orientation. There also were some leaders known as Polonophiles, who downplayed the group's "natural" East Slavic linguistic and cultural connections and proposed instead that its members should accept a Polish national identity. Himka turns his attention to what he considers the two most important orientations: the pro-Russian or Russophile, and the populist or Ukrainophile. While there is no question that the author's sympathies lie with the Ukrainophiles, he nonetheless provides scrupulous attention to both orientations. Moreover, he is among the first scholars to have made extensive use of the relevant archival sources in Lviv, Vienna, Przemyśl, and the Vatican, and to have read carefully a wide variety of contemporary newspapers and journals representing the different national orientations in eastern Galicia.

Himka's theoretical premise is based on recent approaches to the study of nationalism, namely, that nationalities are not primordial phenomena whose members "passed through an almost natural process of transformation into nationhood" (p. 163), but rather a "cultural construction" formed under the direction of the group's self-defined leaders—the nationalist intelligentsia. The most important leaders during the formative stage of nationality building among the East Slavs of Galicia were priests of the Greek Catholic Church. To illustrate that point, Himka singles out certain key events in the life of the church, including the controversy surrounding the canonization of Iosafat Kuntsevych (1867), the appointment process of various bishops and metropolitans, the role of Galician priests in the conversion of the last Greek Catholic eparchy (of Chełm/Kholm) in the neighbouring Russian Empire, and the Austrian government's treason trial (1882) directed against clerical and secular members of the Russophile and Old Ruthenian orientations. In virtually all these instances Himka is interested less in the theoretical connection between nationalism and religion than in recording the facts at what he calls the "Rankean" level. That he has told the story of these little-known developments so well is clearly the greatest achievement of this monograph.

Based on a wide variety of archival sources and written with an engaging flair, Himka's book is a delight to the professional historian. By its very nature, however, a serious piece of scholarship provokes questions and raises new problems. The chronological framework is the first of such problems. The dates Himka chose to begin and end his story are, as he admits, determined in one case by political factors (the introduction of constitutional law in Austria in 1867), and in the other by religious factors (the ascension of Andrei Sheptytsky to head the Metropolitanate of Lviv in 1900). Since the stated goal of the book is to investigate the relationship between religion and nationality, the above dates, 1867 and 1900, make little sense. The entrance of Galicia's Ruthenians (led by the clergy) onto the political stage begins not in 1867 but rather in 1848, whereas the evolution of the nationality question (the eventual replacement of the Old Ruthenian and Russophile orientations by the Ukrainophile orientation) hardly ends in 1900. The outbreak of World War I, or perhaps even 1918, would have been a more appropriate ending date.

The author himself admits that he originally intended to write a monograph covering the period 1772 to 1918 (p. 14). His justification for reducing the time frame rests on two

arguments: (1) that the periods preceding 1867 and following 1900 have a well-developed literature about the Greek Catholic Church; and (2) that this monograph coincides with his two previously published books dealing with the socialist and Ukrainian national movements in Galicia. Neither argument is convincing. As an example of "well-developed literature" on the church after 1900, Himka points only to a few secondary sources on Metropolitan Sheptytsky, albeit an important figure in the pre- and post-World War I era. The author's argument that he has written two other books dealing with the same period begs the question whether the time frame used in those works was appropriate to their subjects. In the case of the Ukrainian national movement, I think not. Consequently *Religion and Nationality in Western Ukraine* is less a book that deals with a historical problem from its earliest stages until some kind of resolution than it is a series of cameos about specific aspects of a larger problem. The author's brief concluding remarks tell us nothing about the final stage of the national rivalry between Russophiles and Ukrainophiles, which was to continue for at least another two decades. Rather, in a somewhat personal and heartfelt manner they reflect on the challenges faced by the church figures featured in the preceding pages.

Another problem is conceptual. Himka returns to what I have suggested elsewhere is the simplistic view that there were only two rival nationality orientations in eastern Galicia: the Russophiles and the Ukrainophiles. He dismisses the writings of the Ukrainian historian Mykola Andrusiak and does not even mention in his bibliography the essays by Mykhailo Hrushevsky ("Konets rutenstva," 1907) and this reviewer ("Old Ruthenianism and Russophilism," 1983). These three scholars have argued that there was a third orientation, the Old Ruthenian, which was certainly neither Ukrainophile nor Russophile, despite the fact that its practitioners (Bohdan Didytsky and Ivan E. Levytsky, among others) argued in favour of a vague sense of belonging to a larger East Slavic world, all the while emphasizing a pro-Austrian and Greek Catholic Galician cultural (and embryonic national) identity. Himka admits being baffled by the "champion" of an "independent nationality of Galician Rus'," Canon Mykhail Malynovsky, for ending a pragmatic statement issued in 1871 with the words "We do not meddle in politics." It is possible to promote a religious and national program (educational and heritage-gathering stages of intelligentsia-inspired national movements) without engaging in election campaigns and party politics. Instead of accepting the possibility that Malynovsky may have legitimately represented the Old Ruthenian orientation, Himka summarily dismisses him and the entire St. George Circle to which he belonged as being "a bit out of touch with political reality" (p. 55).

Whereas the author has every right to draw conclusions that lead to a negative view of the Russophile movement, in certain instances a careful reader may be skeptical of the author's argumentation. Himka suggests, for example, that by the end of the nineteenth century the Russophile movement was "marginalized within Ruthenian society" (p. 142). But when faced with concrete evidence that the Kachkovsky Society (which he considers Russophile) may, at the crucial village level, have been "stronger than the national populist movement," he seems to dismiss the source, describing it as "revisionist research" and suggesting that the question "deserves further exploration and reflection" (p. 142). Even more problematic is the issue of the degree to which the tsarist Russian government provided monetary support to Galicia's Russophiles. The accusation was accepted as a given by the Austrian authorities, as well as by proponents of the Ukrainian viewpoint at

the time and ever since. Nonetheless, the accusation has never been fully explored and, considering the author's familiarity with archival sources, one would have expected this matter to have been seriously aired. Instead Himka simply restates the old canard and documents it with no more than a single reference to "notes" provided him by the patriotic Ukrainian historian Iaroslav Dashkevych (hardly an impartial source on this matter) from the Central State Historical Archive in St. Petersburg. Unlike the Kachkovsky Society, whose ongoing importance in Galician society both before and after World War I has been convincingly demonstrated by detailed research, the question of tsarist subsidies to the Galician Russophiles truly "deserves further exploration and reflection."

Despite such conceptual and interpretive concerns, *Religion and Nationality in Western Ukraine* is an essential starting point for anyone interested in the world of Galicia's East Slavs at the end of the nineteenth century. Himka certainly knows well the historian's craft and easily engages the reader with a style that is a joy to experience. When I finished reading this work, I was left thinking of only one thing: when will we be privileged to read the next crucial installment that covers the years to 1918?

Paul Robert Magocsi  
University of Toronto

Israel Kleiner. *From Nationalism to Universalism: Vladimir (Ze'ev) Jabotinsky and the Ukrainian Question*. Translated by Halya Kowalsky, Linda Distad, and Myroslav Yurkevich. Foreword by Wolf Moskovich. Edmonton and Toronto: Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies Press, 2000. xvi, 199 pp. \$19.95 paper, \$34.95 cloth.

This translation of Israel Kleiner's 1982 study of the writings of Vladimir Jabotinsky (Zhabotinsky) on the Ukrainian revolutionary movement represents a valuable contribution to the scholarship on Ukrainian-Jewish relations in the English language. Known more widely for his principled and controversial position in the history of Zionism, Jabotinsky's extensive intellectual and political involvement with Ukrainian revolutionary leaders is often glossed over in the numerous biographies and studies of his Zionist ideology. Kleiner's work is thus a useful corrective to this glaring omission. *From Nationalism to Universalism* focusses on three distinct periods in Jabotinsky's literary works: his early association with the Ukrainian movement and his extended debate with Struve over the celebration of Taras Shevchenko's birth; his 1921 agreement with Maksym Slavinsky to establish Jewish military units to cooperate with Symon Petliura's invasion of Soviet Ukraine; and his literary reaction to Petliura's assassination in 1926 and the subsequent trial of Simon Schwartzbard in Paris. Throughout, Jabotinsky proves himself to be a true patriot of both Jewish and Ukrainian nationalism, defending the national development of both peoples. In the context of increasingly negative relations between Jews and Ukrainians following the pogrom waves of 1919, Jabotinsky's attitude did not waver. But, as Kleiner indicates, "a two-way battle of emotions was being fought within his soul—on the one hand, pain and deep sorrow over the pogroms in Ukraine, and on the other,



sincere sympathy for the Ukrainian national-liberation movement. The first emotion stemmed from his national patriotism and personal humaneness. The second stemmed from another equally characteristic and basic feature of his worldview—a principled attitude toward the free cultural and political development of all nations. As a patriot of his own nation, he could neither forget nor forgive the bloody injustice meted out to his people in Ukraine, but, as a supporter of the freedom and independence of all nations, he wished with all his soul for the Ukrainian people to succeed in its liberation struggle” (pp. 119–20).

Kleiner’s thoughtful essay on the Schwartzbard trial is particularly valuable for his exploration of Jabotinsky’s hesitancy to wade deeply into the troubled waters of Ukrainian-Jewish relations despite his close affinity for the Ukrainian cause. Kleiner argues that Jabotinsky was prevented from publishing his pro-Ukrainian views in his principal organ, *Rassvet*, primarily because of opposition from other members of the editorial board. At the same time it is hard to dismiss the fact that defending Petliura—or at the very least diverting the focus of the trial from Petliura to Schwartzbard—would have been received very negatively by general Jewish opinion and would have lowered Jabotinsky’s stature among the prominent Zionist ideologues of the interwar period. Jabotinsky’s close association with Ukrainian political figures was seen by a large segment of Jewish popular opinion as a glaring inconsistency in his steadfast defence of Jewish causes. Kleiner argues that Jabotinsky’s attitude to the Ukrainian movement was, however, motivated by precisely the same universalist philosophy of nationalism that made him one of the most significant Zionist leaders of the day.

There are several aspects of this work that could use improvement. While the translation is quite readable and sometimes even elegant—the translators Halya Kowalsky, Linda Distad, and Myroslav Yurkevich deserve to be listed on the title page—it really should have been produced as a new, revised edition, because a considerable amount of scholarship has appeared in the twenty years since the Ukrainian original was published. Much of this literature confirms Kleiner’s central arguments. The book also betrays its origins in anti-Soviet protest literature by its now gratuitous phrases, such as “[i]n the twentieth century, the epithet “nationalist” does not go unpunished” (p. 14), and there are several small but irritating Hebrew and Yiddish malapropisms, all of which could have been eliminated with a careful reading by a scholar well versed in the topic. Also, since the intended readership of this volume would probably be less familiar with Jabotinsky’s role in Jewish history, his life and activity should have been integrated into the body of the text rather than appearing in a truncated biographical appendix at the very end.

Taken as a whole, however, Kleiner’s work illuminates a lesser-known aspect of twentieth-century Ukrainian-Jewish history. It will be useful to specialists working on the revolutionary era, as well as those generally interested in Ukrainian-Jewish relations.

Henry Abramson  
Florida Atlantic University



Natalie Kononenko. *Ukrainian Minstrels: And the Blind Shall Sing*. Armonk, N.Y.: M. E. Sharpe, 1998. xviii, 360 pp. U.S.\$25.95 paper, U.S.\$62.95 cloth.

A paucity of Ukrainian- and English-language scholarly materials on village-culture history in Ukraine has been published in the post-Communist period. Consequently there are literally dozens of fallacies and half-truths in circulation on the subject, both in academia and outside of it. Social and cultural histories of the blind minstrels, the *kobzari* and *lirnyky*, and their music are among those all too rare publications on village Ukraine.

Although Kononenko has helped to elucidate several important aspects of the lives and repertory of the blind minstrels in the nineteenth century, she has left virtually untouched many aspects of their performance practices. The most glaring omission of her work is the fact that village minstrels were musicians. The author concentrates her analysis on song texts and provides almost no information on the music, musical training, and performance practices of these village musicians. This flaw is exacerbated by several factual errors. In addition, Kononenko has applied historical methodology in a haphazard fashion. The book is strongest where she discusses topics for which there is adequate ethnographic documentation from the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries. For example, the most widely held misconception concerning the blind minstrels of Ukraine—held even by many folklorists and other specialists in both Europe and North America—is that the minstrels primarily performed *dumy*. Using ethnographic materials from the nineteenth century, Kononenko has clearly demonstrated that blind village minstrels of the time sang mostly religious songs, not songs from the Cossack past. Their repertory is presented in this book in the clearest and most comprehensive manner of any publication in any language from any time period with which I am familiar. The section on minstrel rites and songs in Part Two is particularly fascinating. Here Kononenko has consistently utilized ethnographic sources of the period as historical documentation. (These truly are “documents” from the time, because they are eyewitness accounts, because there are literally hundreds of them, and because dozens of them include face-to-face interviews with the performers themselves.)

The main problem with the book is that Kononenko has confused the historical with the unhistorical, i.e., personal conjecture. Thus, the author’s work is weakest where she attempts to introduce topics for which there is little historical documentation—in some instances, none at all. In such cases she has “interpreted” the past in a most unsatisfactory manner, willy-nilly simply inventing an “explanation”—even on topics for which virtually no documentation exists. This is not just a serious flaw in Kononenko’s book, but a major methodological problem that has plagued several folklorists who have attempted to write history, including some of those Kononenko frequently cites, such as the Soviet Ukrainian scholars Kyrdan and Lavrov.

The book under review covers four separate historical periods, not chronologically but by topics. Various chapters are devoted either entirely or partially to one or two periods. Among the topics pertaining to the pre-nineteenth century, that is, mostly the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, are minstrel guilds and the influence of the Orthodox Church, the influence of religious song texts on the Ukrainian epic, and the influence of performers of the past on living performers. The period of the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, that is, approximately from 1840 to 1920, is discussed in

chapters on repertory, misconceptions about the performers, the performers' blindness, and brotherhoods and guilds. The Communist period, encompassing the years 1928 to the early 1990s but focussing mainly on the 1980s, covers such topics as song texts. The last period under scrutiny is the post-Soviet one.

The book is more or less evenly divided between the first two periods, while the period of Communist rule and the post-Soviet period are given only minimal attention. The first two periods, however, are completely different in terms of source material. There are virtually no ethnographic sources concerning blind village minstrels for the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, and what historical sources exist are extremely sketchy.

This means that nearly half the book is written on a subject for which there are almost no period sources, that is, sources related directly to the *kobzari* and *lirnyky*, their repertory, lifestyle, and social status. Instead, the author has utilized nineteenth-century sources and projected backwards into time, apparently assuming that whatever existed in the 1880s also existed in the 1680s. This is a dubious methodology at best. For example, on pp. 133–34 and in most of Chapter Eight she discusses the existence and even the characteristics of the minstrel guilds of the seventeenth century. She cites no period sources (they do not exist, as far as I know) and has simply devised characteristics based on a few interviews that were conducted in the *late nineteenth century*. Other unhistorical statements include one on p. 134: "Practically all of the features peculiar to Ukrainian minstrelsy can be connected to the Cossack Rebellion [Khmelnytsky Uprising] in some way." On what historical source is that statement based? Another unhistorical topic (p. 99) is introduced by the following statement: "There is evidence that at least in the past, many, if not all, disabled children entered apprenticeship." I have no idea what "evidence" the author has in mind (she does not say), but I suspect it does not exist. What tsarist official would have been interested in conducting a census of blind village children to see what kind of work they performed? I do not object to speculation on the subject, but I dispute unhistorical statements wrapped in the guise of scholarship.

It should be noted that in the ethnographic literature of the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries there are, in fact, references to many blind villagers who were not minstrels, and even to some adult minstrels who travelled through villages actively seeking recruits from among blind village youths, most of whom were not recruited. (See, e.g., E. Chikalenko [Ievhen Chykalenko], "Lirnik Vasil Moroz," *Kievskaiia starina*, 1896, no. 3: 79; A. [Oleksandr] I. Malynka, "Zametki o dvukh lirnikakh Chernigovskoi gubernii: Aleksei Terentevich Masliukov i Egor Esipovich Okhremenko," *Etnograficheskoe obozrenie* 1902, no. 2: 158; and M. Speransky, "Iuzhno-russkaia pesnia i sovremennyya ee nositeli," *Sbornik Istoriko-filologicheskago obshchestva pri Institute Kn. Bezborodko v Nezhine*, 1904, no. 9: 20.) Other sources indicate that some parents of young blind villagers would not allow their children to become minstrels. (See Klyment Kvitka, "Do vyvchennia pobutu lirnykiv," in *Pervisne hromadianstvo ta ioho perezhytty na Ukraini* 1928, no. 2/3: 120.)

One of the main topics of the book concerns the Christian hospices of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries. Here the author asserts that the minstrels of this period were a part of that structure because they sang Christian songs. This is flimsy speculation at best. Kononenko's assertions are not based on period sources: the ones cited were written in the late nineteenth century, poorly documented, and do not describe the minstrels' participation in the hospices.

One of the most unverifiable statements in the book concerns repertory. According to Kononenko, the seventeenth- and eighteenth-century *kobzari* and *lirnyky* had two separate repertories that merged in the nineteenth century (this theory is propounded elsewhere in the book). Again, no pre-nineteenth-century sources are cited—because, as far as I know, they do not exist. The main justification for her belief in past differences in the repertory (and presumably performance practices) of the *kobzari* and *lirnyky* is provided on p. 154, where she writes that the physical characteristics of the two instruments, the *kobza* and *lira*, are so different that the “origins” of the instruments and their repertories had to be different. There is not a shred of evidence or a single document to support this hypothesis. Furthermore, the origins of most musical instruments in the world are impossible to determine, as are the origins of most discrete elements of culture. There is no reason to assume that differences in musical instruments *ipso facto* indicate differences in repertory. The briefest consideration of ensemble music throughout the world would immediately disprove this statement.

In her discussions of the Communist period, the author makes no mention of the atrocities and deceptions of Soviet power that were directed against the musical life of Ukrainian villages, nor does she explain this glaring gap in her analysis. Furthermore, her entire discussion of the post-Soviet period is focussed on one man, Pavlo Stepanovych Suprun, a blind bandura player (*banduryst*) living in Kyiv. However, he is no village musician: he received his training in a conservatory, performs nearly exclusively on stage, sings in *bel canto*, and plays an instrument unrelated to that of the minstrels of the past (his is the large, chromatically tuned, and factory-made *bandura*). Since most of his repertory is unrelated to the repertory and performance practices of the pre-Soviet period, the fact of his blindness seems to be irrelevant. Thus, to hold him up as a representative (or a pillar) of Ukrainian *kobza* music in the 1980s and 1990s is an undeserved distinction. Kononenko apparently is not familiar with its richness and variety in contemporary Ukraine.

The author claims that Suprun was the only *banduryst* in Ukraine who would talk to her in 1987, when all other performers were too afraid to discuss Ukrainian music with her, even “arranging meetings where a party operative could be present to vouch for their loyalty to the Soviet state.” This statement deserves special comment. Two years after Kononenko’s 1987 trip to Ukraine, in 1989, I interviewed at great length at least fifteen *bandurysty* and *lirnyky*. Although I, too, had problems with the security apparatus, I never heard or felt from these musicians a degree of fear that would prevent them from talking to me during private meetings.

I must also take issue with the author’s claim that material in the Porfyrrii Martynovych and Volodymyr Kharkiv *fondy* (archive folders) of the Kyiv Ethnographic Institute (Instytut mystetstvoznavstva, folklorystyky ta etnologii of the National Academy of Sciences of Ukraine) points to women minstrels. I have studied these unpublished archives and found evidence only of itinerant female singers called *starchykhy* about whom both Martynovych and Kharkiv collected materials. There are a few other sources from the nineteenth century ethnographic literature about them (among others, P. Bessonov, *Kaleki perekhozhie: Sbornik stikhov i issledovaniï*, 6 vols. [Moscow, 1861–4]). One may thus conclude that the author has confused the *starchykhy* with purported female *kobzari* and *lirnyky*. The *starchykhy* undoubtedly shared part of the same repertory with the *kobzari* and *lirnyky*, but women never played the *kobza* and *lira*, and they certainly did not perform them in public.

Finally, a few comments on the section entitled “Kobzari as Remnants of a Pagan Priesthood.” The author provides no sources to support this assertion, which is pure speculation on a topic for which there is no documentation. Thus there is no way to prove or disprove such a statement. One could just as easily talk about “Kobzari as Men from Mars.”

The phenomenon of blind minstrels of Ukraine in the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries alone may be discussed with real authority. In this regard Kononenko's book is a success. Contemporary performers who are attempting to continue some of the musical practices of the village past could have been interviewed, but Kononenko does not seem to have made the effort.

William Noll  
Center for the Study of  
Oral History and Culture, Kyiv

Grzegorz Motyka. *Tak było w Bieszczadach: Walki polsko-ukraińskie, 1943–1948*. Warsaw: Oficyna Wydawnicza Volumen, 1999. 552 pp.

Grzegorz Motyka, a Polish historian of the younger generation, is well known and respected for his studies of the Polish-Ukrainian conflict, particularly during the Second World War and after. Since 1996 he has published three important works: two in collaboration with Rafał Wnuk (*Podziemie polskie i ukraińskie* [1996] and “*Pany*” i “*rezuny*”: *Współpraca AK-WiN i UPA w latach 1945–1947* [1997]), and the present massive volume.

The book's title is a borrowing of the original title of Jan Gerhard's volume, which was later changed, mostly for propaganda reasons, to *Łuny w Bieszczadach* (1969). The film *Ogniomistrz Kalen* was based on this work and helped perpetuate a negative stereotype of Ukrainians in the minds of the Polish population. Despite its title, the subject matter of this book is not limited to the Beskyds, but encompasses all Ukrainian ethnic territories in present-day Poland. The conflict in Volhynia or eastern Galicia is discussed only as necessary background in order to explain some aspects of the problem, but even here some hundred pages are devoted to these explanations. The book examines the period from the beginning of 1943 to the end of 1954, when the organized Ukrainian underground in Poland largely ceased to exist.

The author quite correctly begins with a definition of the Polish-Ukrainian conflict and, in particular, the formations that took part in it. The “Ukrainian side” is defined as the Organization of Ukrainian Nationalists (OUN) and the Ukrainian Insurgent Army (UPA), supported by the civilian population. The “Polish side,” however, includes not only the anti-Communist Polish underground, but also the *Milicja Obywatelska* (Citizens' Militia), *Korpus Bezpieczeństwa Wewnętrznego* (Internal Security Corps), and *Wojska Polskie* (Polish Armed Forces) of the Polish Communist regime, as well as the Polish population. Conceptually this is perhaps the first such description of the warring sides in Polish historiography, one which allows for a more rational approach to the problem. This reviewer fully subscribes to such an approach to the “Polish-Ukrainian war,” but not



without some caution, because both sides were not averse to using their influence, large or small, with the occupying powers, be they German or Soviet, for any opportunity to harm their opponents. The Soviet and German documents provide ample proof of this, especially where the Polish side was concerned.

The monograph contains ten chapters, an introduction and a conclusion, an exhaustive bibliography, a list of abbreviations, and name and geographic indexes. The first four chapters deal with Ukrainian questions in interwar Poland and up to 1942 and with the Polish-Ukrainian conflict on Ukrainian ethnic territories there, referred to in Polish writings simply as the "Kresy." The next six chapters are a detailed, chronological description of the Polish-Ukrainian war in various regions of present-day southeastern Poland. The author should be congratulated for attempting to present this very complicated story as objectively as possible, and especially for his judicious use of sources. His presentation is based uniformly on sources of both sides to the conflict, although the author did not make use of all the Ukrainian underground documents that are open to researchers. For example, he might have benefitted from the Archive of the UPA Mission at the Foreign Representation of the Ukrainian Supreme Liberation Council and the Archive of the "Litopys UPA," which are preserved in the Peter J. Potichnyj Collection on Insurgency and Counter-Insurgency in Ukraine at the University of Toronto's Robarts Library. Also on deposit there is the entire archive of the Internal Forces of the USSR-Ukrainian Military District for the years 1944-54 (more than 150,000 pages of documents), as well as selected documents from the oblast archives of Lviv, Drohobych, and Rivne oblasts. The omission of the latter is especially surprising, since the author made a particular effort to comb the regional archival holdings of Poland. The regional and central archives of Belarus would also be of some interest to scholars who study Polish-Ukrainian relations in the regions of Volhynia and Polissia. Finally, in addition to German documents, the holdings of the Military Historical Archive in Prague and the Slovak regional archives in Prešov and Košice should not be overlooked.

In order to present the outcomes of individual battles, wherever possible the author presents post-battle assessments of both sides, which quite often are at variance with one another, especially where casualties are concerned. But even here some omissions or misstatements have not been avoided. For example, the casualties on the Ukrainian side in a battle at Jawornik Ruski (Iavirnyk Ruskyi, pp. 390-91) are given as nine killed and sixteen wounded, although Volodymyr Shchyhelsky ("Burlaka"), who commanded one of the UPA companies, gives the number of killed as ten and mentions no wounded (see Regional Military Court, Rzeszów, Sr. 1013, Akta ... 236/56/82). Another, quite reliable underground source, published in *Litopys UPA*, 16: 540-1, gives the number of casualties as nine killed and ten wounded. This last source also states that "Krylach," and not "Iar," was in charge of one of the UPA companies that took part in this battle. I mention this not because I question the Motyka's diligence, but simply to emphasize that in matters of such details the conflict of sources is almost inevitable. Of some interest to researchers is a discussion of the organization and activities of a special counter-insurgency unit, which, under the guise of the UPA and with the help of former underground functionaries, namely, Iaroslav Hamivka (called Chamiwka by Motyka), crossed over to the Poles and hunted for the UPA's homeland leader Iaroslav Starukh ("Stiah") and the commander of UPA's Sian Military District Myroslav Onyshkevych ("Orest"). No less fascinating is a summary of the activities of "Zenon" (Leon Lapinsky), former chief of the SB (Security



Service) of the Third OUN Military District, with whose help the so-called Operation S-1 involved not only the leadership of the OUN (Bandera faction) in Munich, but also British intelligence and the KGB. The end of this operation, which lasted until 1954, marks the end of Ukrainian underground activities in Poland. Unfortunately, the author had no access to materials of the OUN leadership in Munich or, for that matter, to British or Soviet intelligence archives that might shed additional light on these activities. It would have been exceptionally useful to interview some of the actors in this intelligence game, some of whom are still alive.

A rather jarring aspect of the book lies in the occasional use of Russian transliteration for Ukrainian names or titles. For example, "U vyri borotby" appears in the book as "U viri borotby"; "Samooboronni kushchovi viddily" become "Samooboronyje Kuszczowyje Widdili"; and we find other transliteration errors, such as "Zimoju w bunkri," "U mundryakh woroga," and "Niezgodni: ukrajins'ka inteligencija," to name but a few. Simple misspellings, such as "Pid soloncem Italiji" or "Spomyny cztowoho," are more excusable.

On the whole, however, Grzegorz Motyka's book is a solid contribution to Polish-Ukrainian relations. It will be welcomed by all objective scholars.

Peter J. Potichnyj  
McMaster University

Bohdan Nahaylo. *The Ukrainian Resurgence*. Toronto and Buffalo: University of Toronto Press, 1999. xx, 608 pp. \$55.00 cloth, \$24.95 paper.

This book by a veteran Ukraine watcher is a valuable addition to an as yet meagre body of literature on the formative period of Ukrainian independence. It provides detailed coverage of the period from Gorbachev's election as general secretary of the CPSU in March 1985 to the adoption of Ukraine's post-Soviet constitution in June 1996. Until the publication of this study, the only other books that dealt with Ukraine during the Perestroika period were David Marples's *Ukraine under Perestroika* (St. Martin's Press, 1990) and Taras Kuzio and Andrew Wilson's *Ukraine: Perestroika to Independence* (Macmillan, 1994). Marples's volume, however, covers only pre-independence Ukraine, while Kuzio and Wilson's contribution, although quite valuable, is narrower in scope. Nahaylo's study is more comprehensive and more ambitious, and therefore it will appeal to a broader audience than these earlier works.

The book is thoroughly researched. Nahaylo conducted the majority of his work for it during his long stint at Radio Liberty in Munich during the 1980s and 1990s. Ensnconed in Germany and with an attentive ear attuned to Ukraine, he was in an excellent position to monitor newspaper and broadcast-media accounts of the people, events, and trends that dominated Ukraine during this period. He has also done an excellent job of weaving accounts from his own interviews with key political figures (Pavlychko, Drach, Iemets, Ielchenko, Holovaty, and Iavorivsky, among others) into the narrative. Written from the standpoint of a historian (who also is a talented journalist), the book is long on political and social analysis, but comes up short with respect to Ukraine's extremely difficult experience

with post-Soviet economic reforms. *The Ukrainian Resurgence* is rich in detail and content, and despite its length this reader found its eighteen chapters well worth plowing through.

A particular strength of the book is the way Nahaylo profiles key political figures, carefully situating them in the circumstances in which they found themselves at the time. Future scholars will find it necessary to cite his characterization of personalities in their own work. Leonid Kravchuk, for instance, emerges as an extremely self-interested political opportunist who largely reacted to events, taking advantage of the opportunities before him, instead of the benign “father of the nation,” as some would have it. It is indeed ironic that Kravchuk, the Communist Party of Ukraine’s ideology chief, could forcefully oppose the founding of a national movement like Rukh and then afterwards “appropriate” much of Rukh’s program. During the 1991 campaign, on the road to assuming power as Ukraine’s first duly elected president and symbol of Ukraine’s aspirations to independence, Kravchuk passed Rukh’s program off as his own. Which is the “real” Kravchuk—the Party functionary or the democratic leader? By Nahaylo’s account, they are one and the same person; Kravchuk’s fundamental character undergoes no major “Jekyll and Hyde” transformation. Instead, over time, his responses reveal the “sly fox”—the cunning political operator, as ordinary Ukrainians came to know him. It is to Kravchuk’s eternal credit, however, that he graciously and humbly turned the reins of power over to his successor, Leonid Kuchma, following his failed bid for re-election in July 1994.

*The Ukrainian Resurgence* goes much further than personality profiles. It chronicles the trends, events, and social forces at work in Soviet Ukraine during the period under study, which led to the unleashing of centrifugal forces and, ultimately, to the collapse of the USSR. No overarching theories of the Soviet collapse are examined here, however, and the author does not engage in a dialogue with any of the existing literature on contemporary Ukraine. Still, the book successfully debunks the idea that there may have been some “grand design” to bring down the Soviet regime. The author provides the reader with an alternative and more compelling view of the Ukrainian leadership’s methodical, albeit a bit haphazard, dismantling of Kyiv’s ties with Moscow. Nahaylo clearly demonstrates how certain elements of the Ukrainian Party elite—mainly those grouped around the then leader of parliament, Leonid Kravchuk—took advantage of the increasingly apparent rifts that emerged in the Party and political structure of the USSR during the 1980s in order to exit the Union.

Nahaylo’s narrative puts a decidedly human face on the events of those crucial days. This is one of the more meritorious aspects of the book. At various times the outcome of the process that had been set in motion was much in doubt. This accounts for the Ukrainian leadership’s extreme cautiousness on various occasions, most notably during the August 1991 coup. During those particularly chaotic seventy-two hours Kravchuk failed to denounce the coup publicly, calling instead for the populace to “remain calm” and “show self-restraint.” In a nutshell, he stalled for time while he and his entourage assessed their options. It is entirely believable that they feared that the plotters might be successful. The “emergency committee’s” representatives were in Kyiv, after all, making demands and promising sanctions against those who failed to co-operate. Many notable democrats (including Iukhnovsky, Iemets, Taniuk, Pavlychko, Grinev, and Volodymyr Pylypchuk) expressed public support for Yeltsin, however, thereby embarrassing Kravchuk in his silence. When the coup failed, Kravchuk, in another demonstration of his political

deftness, managed to survive despite his apparent prevarication, and was elected president less than four months later.

The book provides an excellent summary of the rise of Ukraine's "national Communists" in the 1980s, the splintering of the CPU, and the early development of a multi-party political system. There is a remarkable story to tell here, especially as these events transpired peacefully and with a minimum of political violence. The East-West fissure in Ukrainian politics has not erupted, as some had feared. This is noteworthy. Ukraine has managed (so far) to assuage secessionist passions in Crimea without resorting to the use of force. That, too, is remarkable. It is testimony, I think, to the resiliency of the Ukrainian people and their commitment as a nation to resolving fundamental political issues peacefully. Doing so has placed Ukraine and its leaders virtually "on the brink" for the last ten years, a role that they have played well. The upshot is that, despite hardships, Ukraine has managed to preserve its independence, but only at the price of rapid reform of the political and economic systems.

Despite its achievements, Ukraine's future is still unclear. The questions that confront the nation are staggering: Will the *nomenklatura* continue to resist market reforms? When will the output collapse be abated? Can corruption be eliminated? How long will it take to legitimize the underground economy? Will Ukraine resolve its internal religious differences? Will the country ever join the WTO? Will Ukraine be admitted to NATO and the EU? The issues underlying these questions are not ones with which the former Communists and the democratic reformers are entirely comfortable, or ones that were necessarily foreseen by them in the heady days of 1991. As Nahaylo wisely observes in the final chapter, "The Strategic Outlook," Ukraine is very much in a paradoxical situation, for "the new Ukraine was not what many patriots had hoped for; but then, it was also not what the opponents of Ukrainian nationalism had feared" (p. 549).

What is ahead for Ukraine, then? We can only "stay tuned" to find out. This reader hopes that Bohdan Nahaylo will grace us with another book that places the events of the most recent years in perspective. I enjoyed this volume, learned from it, and await many more.

Robert Kravchuk  
Indiana University

Taras Kuzio. *Ukraine: Perestroika to Independence*. Second edition. New York: St. Martin's Press, 2000. xiv, 273 pp. U.S.\$19.95 paper, U.S.\$55.00 cloth.

It has been said that historians are political scientists without concepts and that political scientists are historians without facts. If this is so, then no political scientists who seek to understand the launching of Ukraine's post-Communist transition will want to be without this book, for Taras Kuzio is the chronicler *par excellence* of contemporary Ukrainian politics.

In his book, which deals mainly with the decade before 1991, Kuzio advances the thesis that the overwhelming support for national independence exhibited in 1991 both

in parliament and the referendum resulted from an alliance of nationalists and national-Communists. It was a combination of ideology with state power.

The opening chapter reviews various theories of nationalism and modernization, but regards these as being of secondary importance in explaining Ukraine's independence movement. The author prefers approaches that favour the state and its elites. History is made not by "abstract forces," but by "genuinely active agents: individuals, groups and the state" (p. 9).

Chapter Two aims to deal with the strengths and weaknesses of the national movement. With the exception of an interesting discussion as to whether Ukraine was an "internal colony" of the USSR, however, it makes a rather chaotic impression. Somewhat better is the following chapter, "Ukraine on the Eve of the Gorbachev Era," in which the author debunks much of the mythology surrounding the rule and character of Petro Shelest, who was removed as the Communist Party of Ukraine's first secretary in 1972, and of his successor, Volodymyr Shcherbytsky.

Another interesting chapter, which unravels the details of the events of 1988-89, is the fifth. But its title, "Consolidation," is misleading, since the story contained in Chapter Six, covering the years 1989-90, actually deals with that process. As Kuzio states, the years 1989-90 were "the crucial period of transition in Ukraine, during which small, isolated groups were transformed into larger alliances, and a powerful opposition was formed" (p. 105). The year 1990 saw the rise of a multiplicity of political parties, a development that forms the subject of Chapter Seven. Kuzio is wrong, however, to call this a "multiparty system," because there was as yet no stability to these parties' existence, let alone any system of interdependence among them (and there is still none, ten years later). This chapter contains a good summary of the course and achievements of parliamentary politics in 1990. The author, however, should have compared the election results of that year with those of 1989. At any rate, this chapter does give a clear exposition of the main tendencies in the development of political parties at the time.

State-building measures are well explained in the next chapter. The last substantive chapter, covering the botched coup in Moscow in August 1991 and its effects on Ukraine, is full of intriguing details. Particularly valuable are the accounts of Leonid Kravchuk's prevarication, the launching of the "Red entrepreneurs" or *nomenklatura* capitalists, the new Ukrainian state's Soviet foundations, and the separatist and regional strains in Ukraine. A brief conclusion, regrettably unchanged from the first edition, wraps up the volume.

The first edition (1994) of this book was co-authored by Andrew Wilson, who apparently declined the opportunity of being associated with this one. This second edition is thirteen pages longer and could have used closer proofreading. Except for a new section called "The View from the Centre" introduced here and there, every chapter is identical to its earlier version. Like its predecessor, the book is massively documented, but the huge amount of cited literature actually yields only the slightest of theoretical frameworks. Kuzio has a penchant for periodization, for discussing the "stages" of Ukraine's historical and recent development. This would be helpful if the criteria for determining these stages were made explicit. Otherwise the practice becomes meaningless, ritual convention.

Bohdan Harasymiw  
University of Calgary



Paul D'Anieri, Robert Kravchuk, and Taras Kuzio. *Politics and Society in Ukraine*. Boulder, Colo.: Westview Press, 1999. xvi, 344 pp. U.S.\$26.00 paper.

This book is a fine introductory volume on Ukrainian politics, society, and foreign policy, suitable for a graduate class in Ukrainian, post-Soviet, or post-Communist politics. Each chapter focusses on a different aspect of modern Ukraine: nation building, economic reform, civil society, political parties, foreign policy, and the armed forces. Each begins with a brief theoretical perspective on the topic under discussion, from mainline political-science literature; the authors assert that they are not looking at the country from a single theoretical perspective but borrowing from political-science theory for the sake of explanation and illumination.

The introduction frames the overall theme of the book: that Ukraine's transition is not simply a question of a move from a planned to a market economy, accompanied by a move from totalitarianism to democracy. Ukraine's difficulties are compounded by the additional stresses of nation building and creating a capacity to govern from the ashes of the Soviet command/administrative/imperial system. Yet those charged with the task of leading Ukraine through these four difficult transitions are, for the most part, the products of this same system. This fact, combined with rampant corruption, makes for a weak state. This, in turn, makes progress in the four areas of transition ever more problematic. In addition, Ukrainian society itself is struggling with the vestiges of the former system and is divided and fragmented along regional, ethnic, and highly polarized political lines. The authors' cautious prognosis is that we should expect more of the same—the state will not collapse, but at the same time no breakthroughs are likely in the near future, and Ukraine will continue to “muddle through” with occasional lurches in a positive or negative direction.

The most interesting chapters are those dealing with institutions that are less well covered in the current scholarly literature on Ukraine—particularly those discussing the problems of the weak Ukrainian state and of economic and military reform. The sections on the hierarchical nature of Ukrainian public administration, the secretive nature of decision-making, and the “hollow” character of government ministries all highlight the pervasive effect of the Soviet experience and give an excellent look inside the belly of the beast. My only complaint here is that these sections should have been longer and, perhaps, expanded with more concrete cases and examples. The descriptions of dysfunction carry over into the chapter on the economic crisis—it describes a weak and incompetent government that is half-heartedly carrying out the constantly changing and often contradictory policies of the elite.

The chapter on Ukrainian defence policy provides a thoroughly alarming picture of the armed forces. This chapter might have been augmented by a more careful overview of Ukraine's multi-layered and indeed highly effective domestic security system. One of the main points of the chapter is that in the Kuchma era the most direct threats to the security of the country were seen to be internal rather than external, necessitating a shift in resources to internal security. The authors, of course, cannot be faulted for the understandable lack of raw information on this issue.



Many topics in the book already have been well covered in Taras Kuzio's sizable body of work, particularly those on the re-emergence of Ukraine in the late Perestroika period into 1991, nation building, and language. The chapter on politics and civil society focusses on the problems of Party building and the Supreme Council—probably Ukraine's most studied political institution—with its well-known regional divisions, political polarization, and institutional dysfunction. The analysis of politics and civil society creates a somewhat rosy picture, perhaps symptomatic of "transitions" literature and the authors' focus on election laws, parliamentary factions, and regionalism. They may be missing the larger, perhaps more disturbing, picture and suspect as much when they write that "there is also evidence of growing voter apathy and a widening gulf between society and the state" (p. 163). This idea begs to be explored more fully.

"Transition" implies movement, specifically movement from the "old" to the "new," or at least improvement in some sense. While the authors raise the possibility that Ukraine may get "stuck" in this transition, not enough attention is paid to the relationship between state and society, and a more detailed analysis of the character of each is needed. With regard to Ukrainian society, numerous public opinion polls, particularly those conducted by the International Foundation for Electoral Systems, SOCIS/Gallup, the former U.S. Information Agency, and others consistently show that the level of trust by the Ukrainian public of its governing elite is abysmally low, even in comparison with neighbouring countries. Most outsiders in Ukraine are well aware of the contempt and fear that the average Ukrainian exhibits towards his or her rulers. Most of those visitors are also mindful of the interesting and infuriating mix of anarchic individualism, nostalgia, and paternalism evident in Ukrainian political culture.

With regard to the state, what is rapidly becoming evident is that calling Ukraine a "democratizing" or "delegative democracy" is not fully informative. It may be as fruitful to think of the governing elite, its administrative apparatus, and internal security forces as a *regime*, albeit one that has learned to stay in power and replicate itself even with institutionalized multi-candidate elections and through a variety of other methods, such as bullying the media. A legitimate question is whether further democratization, administrative reform, a true parliamentary governing majority, or a change in the tax codes are high on the list of priorities of such a regime. Another, more theoretical, question is whether the country can be viewed as placing itself along a transition continuum developed through the study of democratization of southern European and Latin American regimes, or whether we have something of a new regime type. This type of regime may exhibit the outward characteristics of a democracy—elections, parties, a parliament—but it displays many characteristics of the Soviet regime, particularly in the area of security and continued state control over key economic assets. In Ukraine's case this is combined with the unofficial patronage networks and corruption that are present in many developing countries. Certainly a key problem in state-society relations in Ukraine is the near absence of the liberal concept of the state serving society, rather than controlling and exploiting it.

The authors of *Politics and Society in Ukraine* point out that Ukraine's many political cleavages—over language, region, ethnicity—are not insurmountable, and some progress has been made in these areas. To a certain extent Ukrainian political life has become more predictable, as new institutions and practices, such as in foreign policy, take on a life of their own and adjust to new realities. This book provides a good review of

the experience of the past ten years, describes how new institutions are functioning (or not), and offers the idea that Ukraine, like other nations, seems finally to be growing somewhat predictable.

Victor Chudowsky  
Meridian International Center  
Washington, D.C.

Theofil Kis, Irena Makaryk, and Roman Weretelnynk, eds. *Towards a New Ukraine*. Vol. 1. *Ukraine and the New World Order, 1991–1996*. Ottawa: Chair of Ukrainian Studies, University of Ottawa, 1997. 124 pp. \$17.00 paper.

Theofil Kis and Irena Makaryk, with Roman Weretelnynk, eds. *Towards a New Ukraine*. Vol. 2. *Meeting the Next Century*. Ottawa: Chair of Ukrainian Studies, University of Ottawa, 1999. 174 pp. \$20.00 paper.

These short volumes are the first two entries in a relatively new series that brings together Ukrainian and foreign academic experts, government officials, journalists, and other interested authorities to examine various themes pertaining to Ukraine's evolving place in the world. The volumes contain the proceedings and papers presented at two "blue ribbon" conferences that were held in Ottawa two years apart. The first volume, *Ukraine and the New World Order, 1991–1996*, contains papers by such notables as Bohdan Krawchenko, Taras Kuzio, Borys Gudziak, Mykola Zhulynsky, Ivan Dziuba, Ihor Kharchenko, Andrii Veselovsky, Anatolii Zlenko, and the legendary Bohdan Hawrylyshyn. To experienced observers of Ukrainian political and economic affairs, these individuals need no introduction. The strength of this volume rests upon the moral weight that the contributors carry by virtue of their heroic efforts to establish Ukraine as a functioning, independent, and secure state. Each of the chapters is excellent, and each has something to teach us. In the interest of space, it is appropriate to concentrate on a few of the more noteworthy chapters.

Bohdan Krawchenko, a historian and expatriate Canadian who has laboured to upgrade the Ukrainian civil service for nearly a decade, writes on the role of state building and development of civil society as a means to enhance Ukraine's security. Krawchenko was perhaps the first to recognize that to build a free-market economy in Ukraine requires not entrepreneurs (they would emerge on their own), but civil servants trained to promote and maintain market-friendly government policies and efficient, effective administration. Krawchenko is credited with founding Ukraine's Academy of Public Administration. His essay provides a thorough but succinct summary of the issues in building an effective, functioning administrative apparatus.

Bohdan Hawrylyshyn, a Ukrainian-born expatriate, spent most of his adult life in Germany and Switzerland before returning to Kyiv to spearhead the creation of Ukraine's first graduate program in business administration, the International Management Institute. An economist by training, Hawrylyshyn is a much sought-after advisor to the Ukrainian

government on matters more broadly pertaining to Ukraine's social, political, and economic development. Due to Ukraine's prolonged period of economic stagnation, his chapter, written for the March 1997 conference, remains current. His recommendations concerning tax reform, the reduction of administrative barriers to business development, the elimination of special privileges, and an amnesty period for payment of back taxes are imperative.

Another frequent commentator on Ukrainian affairs, Taras Kuzio (a political scientist by training), has provided an exceptionally good chapter in Volume 1 on the "Domestic Sources of Ukrainian Foreign Policy." Kuzio's contribution surveys the rich texture of domestic politics, public opinion, and economic realities that have conditioned Ukrainian foreign policy. Regarding its exceedingly important relations with Russia, Kuzio notes that "Ukraine is an enigma"—although Russia remains Ukraine's most significant national security threat, it is not regarded with hostility by any more than a tiny fraction of the Ukrainian population. In this regard Ukraine has oscillated between Eurocentric and Eurasian-oriented policies, at times striking a precarious balance between the two. Somewhat ironically (and due in no small part to the skilful diplomacy of another contributor to this volume, foreign minister Anatolii Zlenko), Ukraine's foreign policy efforts have largely been successful in steering an independent path to its own future. Kuzio's chapter is thus well worth reading and rereading.

The second volume, entitled *Meeting the Next Century*, is even more impressive than the first. It contains contributions by Professor James E. Mace, former justice minister Serhii Holovaty, U.S. federal judge and legal consultant to the government of Ukraine Bohdan A. Futey, former economics minister Volodymyr Lanovy, and the noted expert on former socialist economies in transition, Anders Åslund, among many others. The topics discussed are more wide-ranging than those of Volume 1, touching on such issues as the adoption of Ukraine's constitution in 1996, the establishment of an independent judiciary, Crimean autonomy, privatization and economic restructuring, and a short section on the connections between language, culture, and national identity. As in the first volume, among the many excellent contributions are several more noteworthy contributions.

James Mace provides a synthetic overview of Ukraine's place in history and the world in his chapter entitled "Ukraine on the Threshold of the New Millennium." In it Mace masterfully reviews the challenges that Ukraine must overcome in order to become the "advanced, civilized, European country it has every right and the ability to become." One key ingredient must be the establishment of a stable constitutional and legal order. It is therefore appropriate that Mace's chapter is followed by Serhii Holovaty's critical analysis of the strengths and shortcomings of Ukraine's constitution and chapters on the evolving judiciary, including one by Judge Futey. The chapter by Ed and Kim Ratushny on establishing principles of judicial independence is especially instructive for anyone interested in the challenges of establishing rule-of-law regimes in formerly authoritarian countries.

This reader found the chapters on economic restructuring and reform to be somewhat repetitive, but collectively comprehensive in scope and coverage. Anders Åslund's contribution is as thorough and rewarding as his previous work on Ukrainian reforms. In explaining why it is so difficult to reform Ukraine, Åslund states that although the reasons vary (poorly designed policy, corruption, apathy, lack of political will), the primary cause

is “the astounding lack of civic sense in the Ukrainian administration.” Such bureaucratic indifference derives, at least in part, from “weak countervailing forces” in the larger society. In other words, the nascent institutions of civil society have proven insufficient to resist the power of state bureaucrats and their influential industrialist-patrons outside of government. As always, Åslund is provocative, and this chapter is no exception.

Finally, Volume 2 contains four short chapters on language, nationalism, and cultural politics in Ukraine. These chapters are oriented towards recent developments in literature and Ukrainian language use and their impact on society. Mykola Riabchuk’s contribution provides both an excellent and more thorough summary of the “Ukrainianization” debate, including its political implications. In the process he explodes certain myths (i.e., Ukraine as a “nationalizing state”) that have periodically threatened to hamstring consensus building among the citizens of Ukraine. Riabchuk’s analysis, which focusses on the nation as not only a “permanent plebiscite” but an ongoing search for consensus, is worthy of attention.

The general idea of publishing observations and comments of the most prominent experts and observers of Ukrainian affairs made at thematic conferences is a good one, insofar as it produces thoughtful and provocative essays. It is hoped that this will become a tradition at the Chair of Ukrainian Studies at the University of Ottawa. This reader anxiously awaits Volume 3.

Robert Kravchuk  
Indiana University

Taras Kuzio, Robert Kravchuk, and Paul D’Anieri, eds. *State and Institution Building in Ukraine*. New York: St. Martin’s Press, 1999. iv, 364 pp. U.S.\$49.95 cloth.

The latest edited volume from the prolific Taras Kuzio—this time in co-operation with Paul D’Anieri and Robert Kravchuk—delves into one of Ukraine’s most pressing problems: the fact that its state institutions remain weak and alienated from the society. The authors attempt to “bring the state back” (p. 17) into analyses of transition in Ukraine, arguing that the study of the institutions that adopt and carry out policy is central to understanding the transition as a whole. The contributors to this volume have not limited themselves to analyzing institutions in a vacuum: they recognize the importance of the state’s ability to implement policy in society and, therefore, the need to analyze the relationship between the two.

One of the strengths of the volume is its inclusion of basic, critical information on the structure and development of state institutions since 1991. The chapters by Charles R. Wise and Volodymyr Pigenko, Robert Kravchuk, and Oliver Vorndran present a strong foundation for the remaining contributors by outlining the structures that have evolved in the state sphere. Taken together, they provide an analysis of the balance of power between branches and their role in designing the rules by which they are governed. Kravchuk’s analysis is particularly important, since its concentration on fiscal policy and inter-budgetary transfers extends the discussion to power relations on a regional and



sub-regional level. The contribution of Paul Kubicek extends the discussion to explore interrelations among these institutions and societal interest groups in what he labels a limited “state-corporatist” structure. The chapter by Bohdan Krawchenko complements these pieces by providing insight into the manning of state institutions through Ukraine’s new civil service.

Moving on from these basics, the authors show the weakness of state institutions as policy-makers. The chapters by Paul D’Anieri and Sherman Garnett make a strong case that weak institutions combined with a divided society (mirrored in a divided elite) have made it difficult, if not impossible, for the state to create and implement effective foreign- and domestic-policy decisions. Exceptions to this rule are policies of nation building. The chapter by Kuzio suggests that this has been one area where policy has been implemented despite the weakness of the state. His chapter is probably the most optimistic; Kuzio concludes that there is a growing consensus as to the type of nation that Ukraine should become, and that this type is not inconsistent with examples of Western civic, inclusive states.

The remaining contributions approach institutions as they relate to Ukrainian society. A thought-provoking contribution by Roman Zyla attacks the general perception that levels of corruption have soared since independence, suggesting that greater media attention has inflated the perception of corruption levels. Regardless of whether one accepts Zyla’s line of reasoning, his work indicates that even the perception of corruption has expanded the gap between society and state. The weakness of the society vis-à-vis the state is central to Kuzio and David J. Meyer’s comparative study of ethno-political mobilization in the Donbas and Crimea. They contend that ethnic Russians have been more mobilized in Crimea, mainly because of the institutional structure of the region as an autonomous republic, which gives ethnic entrepreneurs an institutional base not available to other regions of the country.

Few would argue that Ukraine’s state and society are strong. Yet there has been relatively little literature that investigates the sources and consequences of their weakness. This volume thus represents an important addition to the field of Ukrainian studies. Its contributors not only provide basic information on the structure and competence of state institutions, but also question what that structure means for the development of the country as a liberal, capitalist democracy. As D’Anieri points out in his conclusion, the combination of a weak state and a weak society suggests that Ukraine cannot rely on one to help develop the other. Therefore the hope must lie in each to reshape itself. The extent to which this is possible remains to be seen. An important research agenda thus has been set for scholars of Ukraine and of transitions in the coming years.

Nancy Popson  
*The Kennan Institute, Washington, D.C.*

Elizabeth Pond. *The Rebirth of Europe*. Washington, D.C.: Brookings Institution Press, 1999. xiv, 290 pp. U.S.\$26.95 cloth.

This book’s dramatic, award-winning cover and intriguing title attract the reader with the promise of a new, integrative approach to the issues facing Europe in the post-Cold War era. *The Rebirth of Europe* begins with the statement that “Europe matters,” and in



the opening paragraph the intended audience is revealed—the United States. The author, an American journalist based in Germany for many years, sets out to convince her fellow citizens why Europe is important to them. She cites Europe's current economic strength and reminds Americans that the formerly divided and wartorn continent is now its main rival. In an optimistic assessment of current trends, Pond suggests that Europe is at the forefront of post-national, postmodern trends, where co-operation and conciliation have replaced warfare and conflict. Having overcome its "Eurosclerosis," the rejuvenated Europe is now poised to challenge the U.S. dollar with its new Euro.

However, it soon becomes clear that Pond's conceptual framework of Europe still seems at least partially rooted in the Cold War East/West paradigm. Pond's Europe is really Western Europe. When she writes, "For the European on the street there will clearly be an advantage in not having to carry six wallets on a holiday" (p. 165), she is not referring to Romanians or Estonians. In her analysis, the others—the Easterners—are to be included or excluded in developments at the discretion of the Westerners. The part of Europe that "matters" includes those countries involved in creating the European Monetary Union and the power brokers in NATO dealing with the former Yugoslavia. The others are important only in how they relate to existing institutional structures, primarily the EU and NATO. Transnational issues, such as the environment, human security, health, crime, information, and communications, are addressed only in passing, and regional/continental/historical issues are discussed primarily within the West European context—for example, Franco-German reconciliation.

The structure of the book reveals Pond's institutional and East/West approach to Europe. In nine chapters she sets out the debates and then traces the issues facing Europe from the beginning of the Cold War to the creation of the European Monetary Union. Her analysis of Europe begins and ends in the West, starting with a description of political and economic developments that led to the creation and expansion of the European Community (chapters 2–3) and ending with an examination of the current widening versus deepening debate in the EU and its transatlantic ramifications (chapters 8–9). The intervening four chapters (4–7) deal with NATO and EU enlargement, each analyzed in separate chapters, and a discussion of Europe's Western boundary—which countries are to be included in Europe and which are not.

The strength of the book lies in its account of the processes occurring in Western Europe, both before and after the collapse of Communism. The author demonstrates an intimate knowledge of the events, leading figures, and popular moods in West European states during the last decade. Her years of living on the Continent, covering the "Europe story" for *The Christian Science Monitor* from a front-row seat, has provided her with intimate knowledge of the details as well as the big picture, an insight that scholars rarely have. Pond not only tells the story and analyses it, she makes the main characters come alive, fills them with substance, and conveys public attitudes in a way that makes the book read like an interesting epic. Although focussed mainly on developments in Germany and, to a lesser degree, France, she presents a convincing argument (at least to the non-specialist) why these are the two dominant countries in the process of Western European integration. At the outset she explains that part of her aim is to counterbalance the predominantly Britain-focussed analysis that has shaped American opinion (pp. 3–4). Furthermore, she implies that Western Europeans are, in great measure, shaping the future

of East European nations. Therefore understanding their behaviour and motivations is the natural starting point for looking at a post-Cold War Europe.

Less impressive, though, is Pond's description and assessment of the post-Communist European states. She divides the region into Central Europe and the East Slavs without explaining the categorization and ignoring the current debates on the redefinition of Europe (for example, the writings of Larry Wolff, Timothy Garton Ash, George Schopflin, Istvan Deak, Jan Gross, and others). The Baltic or southeastern European states of Lithuania, Yugoslavia, Albania, and Bulgaria are entirely absent from the narrative.

Chapter 6, on Central Europe deals almost exclusively with Poland, leaving the reader with the impression that it is either the most important state or representative of developments in the region. The positive assessment of Poland's post-Communist decade is interesting to read; it is full of details and drama, and, as in earlier chapters, Pond conveys not only a factual account but also the texture of events as they unfolded. Some readers may find her praise for Jeffrey Sachs's neo-liberal shock-therapy model excessive. Pond credits the Poles correctly for their effort in turning their economy around and building a democratic political system, but she barely mentions the key role that Western financial assistance played in this process. The Poles are also praised for living up to Western expectations, and it is noted that they are now waiting to be rewarded by being allowed to re-enter Europe. What the chapter fails to convey adequately is the fact that Poland is a centuries-old nation that has always considered itself European, regardless of what Brussels, Washington, or Berlin thought.

In discussing the East Slavs, Pond begins with the rather dubious assertion that "For now the question of how far 'Europe' extends to the east has been answered definitively." This is immediately followed by the claim that "By its own choice the current generation of Russians, Belarusians and Ukrainians have opted out of the Western democratic and market systems" (p. 139). Many people who live in those countries and study them are bound to disagree with Pond's opinion of their Europeaness. These statements also contradict her own analysis in an earlier chapter, where she praises Ukraine and Poland for their Western behaviour and likens their rapprochement to that of two Western European states, France and Germany, after World War II (p. 75).

Perhaps the greatest difficulty with this chapter is that it is written as a contrast to the preceding one. The East Slavs are presented as having failed to reform their economies and political systems and hence to prove their Europeaness, in contrast to Poland (and presumably the other Central European nations) that have succeeded. The terms of this analysis are flawed, because one cannot simply compare post-Communist Poland to post-Communist Russia: one country is dealing with a post-colonial legacy, whereas the other is coming to terms with post-imperialism.

The chapter on the East Slavs also lacks the insider feel of the previous ones. This is all the more surprising when one looks at the list of interviews at the end of the book. Of the very impressive group of 233 people with whom Pond spoke in preparing her book (among them Javier Solana, Helmut Kohl, Richard Holbrooke, and Leszek Balcerowicz), eighty were with Ukrainians or Westerners working in Ukraine. Among them were leading politicians, scholars, journalists, diplomats, representatives of international institutions (such as the IMF), business people, union leaders, and representatives of the arts. However, Viacheslav Briukhovetsky's name is misspelled, and Leonid Kuchma is

listed as the president of Poland (pp. 268, 273). The only Russians on the list are Boris Nemtsov and Grigorii Yavlinsky.

Throughout the book references are made to the various interviews as journalistic sources. This is acceptable in some instances, but not in all of them. For example, Pond sends the reader for further explanations of American and EU policy on sanctions to an article in *The Financial Times* (chap. 9, n. 28). To support her assertion that the East Slavs have chosen not to be European, she cites an article in the *Jamestown Foundation's Prism* carried on the internet-based Johnson's Russia List (JRL; chap. 7, n. 1). The book also lacks a conclusion to pull the ideas together, and it ends rather abruptly.

Overall, the book is very readable, covering a wide breadth of European issues in an accessible way. Pond has achieved her objective by presenting a very convincing case to Americans (and others) about why Europe matters. Her book provides a worthwhile overview of the subject that should enjoy a wide general readership, including undergraduate students. (Chapter 4 has already made it onto one of my own course syllabi.) The only caveat is that this seasoned observer of the "Europe question" views it from a West European perspective.

Marta Dyczok

University of Western Ontario

Mary Buckley, ed. *Post-Soviet Women: From the Baltic to Central Asia*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1997. xvii, 316 pp. U.S.\$22.95 paper, U.S.\$59.95 cloth.

The collapse of the Soviet Union and the creation of newly independent states had a major impact on contemporary scholarship. They promoted the often neglected study of nationalism in historical perspective, reinvigorated the social sciences, and spawned a steady stream of works focussing on the dynamics of painful transition experiences as newly constructed nations try to distance themselves from the Soviet past, all in the name of creating civil democratic societies. The ways in which women have fared in these independent states and the role that gender has played in this brave new world have attracted the attention of mainly female social scientists. The volume under review brings together thirteen British scholars of anthropology, cultural studies, geography, politics, and sociology, and two activists from within Ukraine and Russia. The latter are Solomea Pavlychko, the late literary critic, and Olga Lipovskaya, the chair of the St. Petersburg Centre for Gender Issues and member of the coordinating Committee of the St. Petersburg Branch of the Democratic Union. Reflective of contemporary British and Western scholarship in general, almost two-thirds of the essays are devoted to Russian women in the Russian Federation. The remainder examine the positions and experiences of women in non-Russian nations, namely, Ukraine, Latvia and Lithuania, Armenia, Georgia, and the Central Asian republics. Mary Buckley's hope that the infusion of government money into English universities to foster the study of post-Soviet states might rectify an enduring Russocentric emphasis is a reminder of how Western governmental priorities continue to shape the study of states east of the Elbe.

Readers concerned about women's positions in contemporary Ukraine will have to content themselves with the highly polemical piece by Pavlychko as well as the conclusions of the other essays, which can only be tested against the Ukrainian case in future studies. Pavlychko's essay is a personal reflection on Ukrainian women's entrenched conservatism since the heady days of revolution and proclamation of Ukrainian independence. In many respects it reads like a Western feminist tract, in spite of Pavlychko's declaration that "the approaches of Western feminism cannot be copied blindly when analyzing the condition of post-Soviet women" (p. 222). As such, it should be viewed as a primary source or window onto the frustrations of an educated and politicized Ukrainian woman in a state that places women on a pedestal as mothers and keepers of the hearth as a justification for discrimination, in a society where women are only too ready to play those roles. When Pavlychko complains about women in prominent public roles as "women-men" who endorse rather than challenge patriarchal relationships because they have succeeded in the system, she harkens back to the divisive early years of the modern Western movement, when feminists attempted to raise the consciousness of their silent sisters. Likewise, her disappointment in the fact that women's political orientation is identical to that of men echoes the frustrations that politicized women experienced upon the attainment of suffrage in various twentieth-century Western countries. Pavlychko's idealism, and perhaps even naiveté, is a reminder of the birth pangs of feminist thinking in societies where such thought is novel and a challenge to the status quo.

Pavlychko's pessimism about women's conservatism in Ukraine is tempered by the conclusions reached by other authors. Shirin Akiner's more sensitive assessment of Central Asian women's passivity as a coping strategy that reasserts comfortable patriarchal values at a time when so much is in flux has a historical precedent, one with which Akiner appears unfamiliar. In the midst of economic, social, and political chaos after the 1917 revolutions and civil war, Russian peasant women also clung to their image of themselves as the backbone of familial stability. Similarly, Nora Dudwick views Armenian women's embrace of their traditional role of nurturer as providing them with an escape from "bad working conditions, corrupt politics, and overwork, rather than a rejection of change" (p. 248). At the same time, the statistics that Lynne Attwood provides regarding reported incidents in the Russian Federation of rape, wife battery, and female homicide committed by spouses and significant others, while only the tip of the iceberg, are chilling reminders of the consequences of a resurgent masculine culture insistent upon domesticating women. A comparable study of such incidents and the responses of women's crisis centres in Ukraine would be both welcome and timely.

The most revisionist essay in the collection comes from the pens of the sociologists Sarah Ashwin and Elain Bowers. Their analysis of official data challenges the assumption that appears in other essays in the collection and elsewhere that women are the victims of unemployment in post-Soviet Russia far more than men. Ashwin and Bowers point out that women figure more prominently in the registers of the unemployed because of their greater likelihood to register, dependent as they are on state benefits when fewer opportunities for supplementary work are available to them. The higher life expectancy of women, they argue, also translates into a disproportion of retired women on the unemployment rolls. Neither the editor of the collection nor the other authors who cite unemployment statistics, however, appear to be persuaded by Ashwin and Bowers's conclusion. It is not clear whether the other authors had access to this essay, but the editor



certainly did. Buckley's reticence to engage Ashwin and Bowers's arguments is unfortunate.

The collection's goal of portraying women more as actors than victims in their society is admirably achieved. What is less successful is the charting of "similarities and differences across states" (p. 8). A comparative concluding essay would have been welcome.

Christine D. Worobec  
Northern Illinois University

Vira Aheieva. *Poetesa zlamu stolit: Tvorchist Lesi Ukrainky v postmodernii interpretatsii*. Kyiv: Lybid, 1999. 262 pp.

Vira Aheieva, the author of several studies of modernism, is the Ukrainian translator of Simone de Beauvoir's *Second Sex*. She now has produced this "best selling" work of literary criticism devoted to Lesia Ukrainka. The first printing sold out, and a second is being considered. Aheieva argues that Lesia Ukrainka has been the victim of misreadings by successive generations of male critics who failed to understand both the writer's feminism and her modernism. Like Solomiia Pavlychko, the author closely links these two "isms," insisting that Ukrainian modernism differs markedly from other modernisms precisely in the degree to which it was developed by prominent women writers and influenced by feminist concerns.

Lesia Ukrainka's modernism led her to reject populism's "pragmatizations" of artistic values (p. 55), its focus on the peasantry, and its elevation of national concerns at the expense of personal ones. But the study also places Lesia Ukrainka at the end of a line of women writers-feminists and makes clear that she particularly admired Mariia Markovych (Marko Vovchok) and Olha Kobylanska and that their experience was useful to Lesia Ukrainka in developing her own stance on women's issues. Her feminism, which she already felt as a modernist, served to sharpen the conflict with societal norms and reader expectations and led her to focus on the drama of the individual personality in conflict with the community, on generational clashes, and on patriarchal blindness toward women's issues. In Aheieva's portrayal, Lesia Ukrainka emerges as an artist supremely concerned with the creation of an individual picture of the world—an artist who is aware that her community is incapable of understanding or appreciating her.

The biographical evidence provided by Aheieva is strong. The conflicts within Lesia Ukrainka's family (particularly with her mother, the writer Olena Pchilka) were sparked by issues such as her refusal to marry. Lesia Ukrainka regarded the vow of obedience to a husband taken during the church ceremony as humiliating and supported her sister's refusal to take it. Her remarkable correspondence with Kobylanska is presented as an example of two women deliberately and consciously engaging in self-analysis and self-discovery. Aheieva gives additional support to interpretations of many works by grounding them in biographical detail. Her critical focus falls upon several major works. "Orhiiia" is given a post-colonial interpretation. "Blakytna troianda" is seen as a version of the Victorian madwoman in the attic. "Kaminnyi hospodar" is described as an example of patriarchy's power to co-opt and bend to its interests. "Kassandra," a work that



receives the longest treatment, is analyzed as a compelling expression of the communication gap between the sexes. "Lisova pisnia" is interpreted as an example of the damage that a fanatical attachment to material interests can wreak on the individual and collective soul. Aheieva shows that Lesia Ukrainka is concerned with the denial of individual personality and voice, a process that women must endure either from the colonizing power or their own "native" patriarchy. Lesia Ukrainka's opposition to authoritarianism and her refusal to cancel the individual personality is therefore consistent across the "imperial" and "national" spectrum.

The book also incorporates a rare discussion of the writer's prose and a comparison of the early poetry to the mature works. Aheieva demonstrates that Lesia Ukrainka broke free of her "patriotic pseudonym" (p. 8) in a difficult but determined struggle. It was a struggle that, under the influence of a reading of Nietzsche, led to her negative reassessment in "Oderzhyma" of Christianity's impact on society. Readers often have not fully grasped the complexity of Lesia Ukrainka's works and their iconoclastic impact because her early "patriotic" writings have been the ones anthologized and canonized and because the more "problematic" issues that she raised in her dramas have been ignored.

Collectively, Solomiia Pavlychko, Tamara Hundorova, Oksana Zabuzhko, and Vira Aheieva have now produced a body of work that reinterprets the discourses of modernism and feminism within Ukrainian writing. They see writers of the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries struggling with positivism and bending language and literature to a subversive purpose. This purpose involved the advancement of aesthetic activity as a superior form of moral discourse, which could illuminate the dilemmas of the modern consciousness and transform it. Aheieva has provided the best close reading of Lesia Ukrainka. Her book, which is essential reading for all students of the writer, has also captured the imagination of a broader public.

Myroslav Shkandrij  
University of Manitoba

Natalyia Dudash, comp. *Rusynsky/ruski pisni*. Novi Sad: "Ruske slovo" and Organizatsiia Rusyniv u Madiarsku, 1997. 272 pp.

This book is a convergence of opposites: a big, bold, brightly coloured coffee-table book that encloses a modest, stoical, understated, and sorrowful poetic sensibility. The book's flashy packaging corresponds to its unique academic significance: this is the first historically and geographically comprehensive survey of the literary expression of Carpatho-Rusyn consciousness. As such, this book is a "must" for any Slavic linguist or serious student of the East Slavs. Indeed, many of the poets whose works grace the pages of this book would claim for Carpatho-Rusyns the status of a "fourth East Slavic people" alongside the Russians, Ukrainians, and Belarusians.

Carpatho-Rusyn poetry, as the compiler writes in her introduction, is the poetry of mountain and valley, home and abroad, heart and mind, landscape and sky. While the poets are left to explore these vast themes, Dudash herself neatly organizes the collection into six subsections, each encompassing the poetry of Rusyns living in Ukraine, Slovakia, Poland, Hungary, Yugoslavia, and North America.

Preceding each section is a helpful introductory history of Rusyn literary expression in a particular country. These introductions, prepared by scholars or poets intimately familiar with their respective countries, are all written in the appropriate local variant of the Carpatho-Rusyn language. Vasylii Sochka-Borzhavyn prepared the section on Ukraine; Anna Plishkova, on Slovakia; Petro Trokhanovsky, on Poland; Istvan Udvari, on Hungary; Natalya Dudash, on Yugoslavia; and Paul Robert Magocsi, on North America.

These six individuals were also instrumental in the selection of poetry presented in their respective sections. In addition, each of them prepared biographical data on the poets whose works are included in the anthology.

Dudash is responsible for the overall format of the anthology and is the author of a general forword, which is presented in two versions of the Carpatho-Rusyn language (spoken in Yugoslavia and Slovakia) and in English.

Earlier attempts were made to compile similar Carpatho-Rusyn literary anthologies, beginning with the work of Evmenii Sabov, *Khristomatiia tserkovno-slavianskikh i ugro-russkikh literaturnykh pamiatnikov, s pribavleniim ugro-russkikh narodnykh skazok na podlinnykh nariiechiakh* (Uzhhorod, 1893). An anthology structured along similar geographical lines as Dudash's is Petro Trokhanovsky's *Mamko, kup mi knyzhku* (Nowy Sącz, 1995). But this anthology is more limited in scope, focussing exclusively on children's poetry.

Other poetic anthologies, such as O. Rakhivsky's [Sándor Bonkáló], *Vyimky iz uhorsko-ruskoho pysmenstva XVII–XVIII vv.* (Budapest, 1919) and Antonín Hartl's *Pozdravení rusínů: Výbor z literatury podkarpatoruské, 1920–1935* (Bratislava, 1936)—were likewise limited by time frame. Still others were limited geographically to Slovakia (Anna Plishkova, comp., *Muza spid Karpat: Zbornyk poezii rusyniv na Slovensku* [Prešov, 1996]), Yugoslavia (*Antologija ruskei poezii* [Novi Sad, 1984]), or Transcarpathia (*Poety Zakarpattia: Antolohiia zakarpatoukrainskoi poezii XVI st.–1945* [Prešov, 1965]). All of the above compilations—with the exception of Hartl's, which is in Czech—presented works in the original language or dialect in which they were written, including the different variants of Carpatho-Rusyn and the Ukrainian and Russian languages. For these earlier compilers the issue of language was secondary to the larger concerns of literary merit.

Dudash follows the same path. She notes that Carpatho-Rusyn literary history is inextricably linked with the history, psychology, sociology, and linguistic issues of all of the countries in which Rusyns reside; in fact it reaches far beyond these. One need only recall that almost everywhere in Eastern Europe (except in Yugoslavia), Carpatho-Rusyns were not recognized as a distinct people until 1989. Perhaps more surprisingly, they are still denied legal recognition and national-minority status in Ukraine.

Faced with these challenges, Rusyn writers have historically faced two alternatives: to "write for the drawer" in their unrecognized, uncoded tongue, or to write for publication in one of the "officially approved" languages. Some did both, while others wrote only in approved languages. The latter group of writers was likely motivated by a desire to have a career. "Is that such a sin?" Dudash asks rhetorically in defence of the book's linguistic inclusiveness.

If the use of a common language does not unite the authors contained in this anthology, what does? Most of the authors share a sense of belonging to a distinct Carpatho-Rusyn nation.

"Listen, good people / to what I write / about how our oppressed nation / had to submit / I am unafraid / because I spoke only of the elemental truth / of how the Rusyn nation achieved its freedom." (Emil Tsaptsara, "Slovo rodnym liudēm," p. 106)

For a minority of the authors, however, the Carpatho-Rusyns are merely a branch of the Ukrainian nationality or—in the case of a few older writers—the Russian nationality. Dudash acknowledges that the inclusion of these authors in an anthology of Carpatho-Rusyn poetry might provoke criticism, but ultimately she decided to include them. And rightly so, in the view of this reviewer.

Carpatho-Rusyn writers, like all writers, live and work within a given cultural milieu and political climate that profoundly influence their direction as human beings and artists. Thus it comes as no surprise that some should obtain benefit from "becoming" Ukrainian, a nationality that enjoyed official recognition and financial largesse throughout the Communist world (although the extent and methods used to implement the pro-Ukrainian cultural policy towards Carpatho-Rusyns varied from country to country). The same can be said of the national identification of older Russophile authors who longed for unity with the Great Russian. Political expediency sometimes indicated that it was rational to "become" Russian. Despite the Ukrainophile and Russophile authors' concessions to political expediency, both groups wrote on subjects and themes that were central to the Rusyn cultural experience.

It is not unusual for small cultures, particularly borderland cultures, to draw strength and inspiration from their often larger, more powerful, and culturally influential neighbours. This is all the more so when a demographically small, isolated borderland culture shares some cultural similarities with those larger neighbours. No one would dispute the right of these authors to seek inspiration from outside their culture. By the same token, one cannot deny other authors the right to draw from deep within the silent well of a distinct, indigenous Carpatho-Rusyn consciousness. In fact, all of these writers rest comfortably side by side on the pages of this anthology. All are members of the same nation, engaged in the same struggles, expressing the same desires, despite the different ways in which they choose to define group "identity."

The last word should go to the Lemko poet, Ivan Rusenko, who wrote of his people that "Poverty has been our lot from the time of our fathers / So let us enrich our souls! / Let not our dignity be trampled underfoot / And our faith will not be broken by hardship" ("Lemky," p. 131).

Bogdan Horbal  
New York Public Library

Salo, Ivan. *Tvory*. Vol. 1. Lviv: Kameniar, 1999. 439 pp.

Ivan Salo is a minor writer who was also an elected official for a short time in the post-independence period. Before this he worked for many years as a member of the security services and as a journalist. Since 1995 he has been the chief editor of *Militsiyskyi kurier*, an organ of the armed forces. This publication brings together his short stories and a selection of his journalistic work. Roughly half the volume is devoted to each.

The cuts made by censors to Salo's three earlier books (*Stezhka, Zavtra vrantsi, and Dodomu pishky*) have been restored in the republished versions. Written in the 1960s, 1970s, and 1980s, the best of them belong to the later period and capture the stagnant, pre-glasnost atmosphere of Brezhnev's final years. Salo's stories, many of which are two- or three-page vignettes, depict the failed lives of bureaucrats. He portrays insensitive and self-serving petty officials, as well as the conflicts between the city and rural areas. His stories deal sensitively with the personal lives of small-town people in the Subcarpathian region, capturing in their dialogue, gestures, and appearance the sense of having been frustrated and duped by the more powerful officialdom in the centres. Salo has not edited out the pro-Soviet and anti-nationalist rhetoric of his earlier stories, allowing them to stand as testimony to the times and to his own evolution.

His journalism reflects the frustration, also experienced by local activists, with the total disregard on the part of the authorities in the centres of power (Lviv, Kyiv, Moscow) for local conditions. The most interesting essay is devoted to the military "polygon" that was formed in the Rava Ruska area. The essay, "Polihon na hrobakh" (A Polygon on Graves), describes the unique geographical advantages of this region, which is strategically situated on the Polish border and the continental divide. After the Soviet invasion of 1939, a decision was made to deport all the residents there and establish military bases, training, and testing grounds for Soviet weapons. The German government, which had similar intentions, continued the deportations in 1940. The Soviets, upon their return, kept clearing an ever-increasing area. Altogether 171 villages and fourteen churches were destroyed and several thousand people were forcibly evicted. Typically the villagers were surrounded by troops, ordered to collect their belongings, and then driven out, while their farms and homes were destroyed. Salo describes these events, interspersing documents made available for the first time with eyewitness accounts gathered from the villagers, some of whom were deported three times as the military appropriated more and more territory. The region, a historic one that has produced many writers and cultural figures from late medieval times to the twentieth century, is today a deserted area that has suffered ecological degradation through chemical-weapons testing.

The author has been able to research and document this episode in Soviet history because of his access to documentary sources and his own close personal knowledge of the area. The essay on the "polygon" comes at the end of the book. It not only demonstrates a vastly different attitude toward the postwar years and the authorities from that displayed in some of the earlier stories, but also provides an insight into the suppressed criticisms that periodically surface in the literary texts. The entire volume is an intriguing, implicit account of the ideological "transformation" of a Soviet military official into a critic of the Communist era. At the same time it provides valuable information on a little-known region that could not be described or discussed until recently, and on an almost completely unknown deportation of civilians and its predictable consequences.

Ivan Salo's book, published in a limited run of 300 copies, can be obtained from *Militseiskyi kurier*, vul. Sichovykh Striltsiv 9, Lviv 79000, Ukraine.

Myroslav Shkandrij  
*University of Manitoba*



Stanisław Stępień. *Ukrainoznawstwo: Materiały do bibliografii. Publikacje wydane na Ukrainie w latach 1996–1998*. Przemysł: Południowo-Wschodni Instytut Naukowy w Przemyślu, 1999. 220 pp.

The collapse of the centralized distribution network in Ukraine after 1991 has made it very difficult to keep track of important scholarly publications that have appeared there in the past decade. During the last ten years Iaroslav Isaievych published a bibliography of Ukrainian studies for 1993, and two volumes of a bibliography of Ukrainian history, listing works published in 1992 and 1993, also appeared. But to date further installments have not been released. Therefore this new bibliography, prepared by Stanisław Stępień, director of the Southeastern Scholarly Institute in Przemyśl, and covering the years 1996–98 makes a most welcome appearance.

The volume opens with Dr. Stępień's valuable overview of the contemporary scholarly publishing scene in Ukraine. A list of publications follows. It does not, however, include individual articles in journals and chapters in books. Altogether the bibliography contains 1,207 entries; some of these are cross-references to works listed elsewhere in the volume. The bibliography uses Cyrillic for Russian and Ukrainian titles and translates these also into Polish. I was unable to spot any omissions, and certainly discovered many interesting publications of which I was not aware. The main headings under which the publications are grouped comprise: general (including bibliographies, encyclopedias, and archival descriptions), philosophy, religious studies, sociology, political science, law, archaeology, history, the ancillary historical disciplines, history of culture and art, education, ethnography and folklore, literary studies, linguistics, geography, and demography. The book is rounded out by several useful lists of the main institutions publishing in the humanities, select serials issued by institutions of higher education and scholarly institutes, and the most important periodicals in the humanities and social sciences. There also is an index of names. Most of the materials listed in the bibliography can be found in the library of the Southeastern Scholarly Institute in Przemyśl.

Dr. Stępień is to be commended for compiling this excellent reference tool. One hopes that there will be subsequent installments. If so, it would be useful to provide the name of the publisher with the rest of the bibliographical information.

John-Paul Himka  
*University of Alberta*

Svitlana Pyrkalo. *Peršyj slovnyk ukrajins'koho molodižnoho slenhu*. Kyiv: VIPOL, 1998. 82 pp.

Interest in Russian argot and slang began under Communist rule, but outside the borders of the Soviet Union. Following the political upheavals that took place in the USSR in the early 1990s, numerous works and dictionaries on this subject, reflecting a variety of orientations and levels of quality, began appearing in rapid succession even in Russia itself. However, the fact that an increasing number of additional linguistic subsystems, in addition to Russian argot and slang, existed in the East Slavic-speaking



regions was scarcely noted. Some exceptions were the excellent works of Oleksa Horbatsch on the subject of Ukrainian argot. In Ukraine the issue of linguistic substandards is gradually beginning to be addressed, and interest in this subject has led to the publication of this first Ukrainian dictionary of young people's slang.

Pyrkalo's dictionary is based on a study that was written in the Modern Ukrainian Language Department at Kyiv University headed by N. P. Pljušč. It has an alphabetical structure and includes some 2,400 entries, with about ten percent of these comprising phraseological expressions. Almost eighty percent of the phraseological expressions are verbal phrases (according to a functional-syntactical classification), including, for example, *maty na kyšeni* 'to have [money] in [one's] pocket' or *prykynutysja šlanhom* 'act like a hose,' i.e., behave stupidly. These are followed by noun phrases, such as *bila hvardija, bili spravy* 'white guard, white matters/business,' i.e., consumers of white-powder narcotics, such as Efedron, or *termojaderna vijna* 'thermonuclear war,' i.e., an ugly girl.

From a semantic viewpoint, topics that appear most frequently in dictionaries of this type in all languages are addressed. Numerous entries are found in the semantic field pertaining to drunkenness, e.g., *buxaty* 'to booze'; *davyty slyvu* 'to choke on a plum,' i.e., drink daily to excess; *pjydom-perevorot*, i.e., a drinking spree; *na kočerzi* 'on the poker,' i.e., tipsy; *synjak* 'a bruise,' i.e., a (blue-faced) drunk(ard). Closely connected with these phrases are numerous expressions for feeling unwell and bodily functions, e.g., *fridriksťrase, vyklykaty džyna* 'call forth the genie,' *struhaty* 'to shave wood,' *ljakaty unitaz* 'to frighten the toilet bowl,' i.e., to vomit; *smur* 'alcohol poisoning'; *pominjaty rybam vody* 'to change the water for the fish,' i.e., to urinate; *pryv"jazaty konja* 'to hitch a horse,' i.e., to urinate; *vidklasty lyčnyka* 'to take a "dump"'; *[pro]dablyty* 'to go to the toilet'; *dabl* 'toilet.'

Another significant semantic grouping is concerned with spiritual or physical characteristics, e.g., *hal'mo*, 'brake,' i.e., a dope or (village) idiot, as well as *hal'muvaty*, *hal*, *vasja* (from the diminutive of the name Vasyli) 'idiot, good-for-nothing'; *vas'ka* (again a diminutive of Ivan) 'clumsy oaf'; *buratino* 'Pinnocchio,' i.e., 'clown, twit'; *tolik* (a diminutive of the name Anatolij) 'clumsy or hopeless person'; *udav* 'boa constrictor,' i.e., a very tall person; *uljuljuk* 'Christian activist, missionary'; *čuvak* 'bloke, mate, chum'; *čuvyča* (feminine form of *čuvak*); and *herla* 'girl.' Linked with these are expressions describing individuals characterized by their membership in a certain group, e.g., *hoblin* 'young criminal, thug, hooligan'; *hopnyk, bosjak, žužyk, žužman*, and *hopota* 'thug, hooligan'; *bryhada, kačok* 'bodybuilder, muscleman'; *debilizator* 'bodybuilding machine'; *daun-sport* 'bodybuilding.' Contemporary Ukrainian youth slang includes numerous words associated with drugs, e.g., *dvyhatysja/dvyhnutysja* 'to move, quake' i.e., to inject drugs; *dvijka* 'injection of two cubic centimetres'; *p"jatka* 'a small marijuana joint'; *zabyvaty kosjak* 'to roll a marijuana joint'; *torčalka* 'drug high'; *tros* 'vein.' Other larger semantic groups refer to lying and deceit, e.g., *travyty tjul'ku* 'to digest a fish,' i.e., to lie, and *padaty na xvist* 'to fall on one's tail,' i.e., to scrounge; to violence, e.g., *šmandrykosyty* 'to beat up' and *vidryxtuvaty tablo* 'to smash someone's face in'; to sex, e.g., *katrusyn kinozal* 'Katrusja's screening hall,' i.e., group sex, and *patyk* 'stick,' i.e., penis. Smaller groups of words represent a range of the most diverse objects or activities.

Judging by this dictionary, it should come as no surprise that numerous parallels may be drawn to Russian slang and argot. One only has to compare the above-mentioned

examples with their Russian counterparts, including *gopnik*, *gopota*, *dabl*, *unitaz*, and *gerla*. However, it is surprising to learn that Ukrainian slang expressions from the nineteenth century are still in active use more than one hundred years later. The compiler, listing such words as *xavalo* ‘mouth, gob’ and *xvejlo*, which are similar to the language spoken by the Roma in southern Ukraine, e.g., such phrases as *te xas* ‘to eat’ and *xalo* ‘eaten’ (according to Oleksa Horbač’s *Argo lirnykiv* [Munich, 1957], 30), states that the phonetic similarity with the Ukrainian *čavaty* also plays a role. Ukrainian linguistic subsystems are of significance not only for Ukrainianists, but also for anyone involved in Russian and Slavic studies. For example, *xavat*, *xava*, and *xavka* have found their way into Russian slang, and their derivation from *xavaty* and *xavkaty* in the argot of the Ukrainian blind minstrels is clear. Reviewing the current perception of Ukrainian-Russian linguistic contacts would appear necessary, in order to help dispel false stereotypes, which exist even in academic circles. Unfortunately, until now there has been little research into Ukrainian linguistic subsystems and few comparative studies.

The publication of Svitlana Pyrkalo’s dictionary is an impressive and encouraging achievement. However, its lexicographic shortcomings cannot be overlooked. For example, the author has not listed the sources she used in her research, and the very structure of the dictionary is somewhat flawed. The underlying order of each entry is alphabetical. Opposite each slang expression is a standard description or explanation of its meaning. Sometimes the context is provided, and in some cases also the milieu from which a given expression originates. Pyrkalo maintains a neutral style in her explanations. This, however, is often not enough to convey an expression’s meaning, emotional nuance, or its contemptuous, jocular, or vulgar quality. This is particularly the case when no example of the context for usage is given. For example, should “*skil'ky toj džamby: skil'ky toho žyttja*” (p. 21) and *važnyj kolja: toj, xto maje dorohyj importnyj avtomobil'* (p. 11) interpreted as jocular expressions?

Despite these minor shortcomings, this first relatively comprehensive dictionary of current Ukrainian slang is an encouraging sign that the context of Ukrainian linguistic scholarship is expanding. Further studies, in particular semantic and sociological analyses that would show the dynamic nature and breadth of the Ukrainian language, are not merely desirable, but absolutely essential.

Alexander Kratochvil  
University of Greifswald

Ivan Kernytsky. *Weekdays and Sunday*. Translated by Maxim Tarnawsky. Introduction by Ostap Tarnawsky. Philadelphia: Mosty, 1999. iv, 183 pp. U.S.\$17.00 paper.

In this collection spanning Ivan Kernytsky’s career as a writer, the author introduces the reader to the world of society’s little people—individuals who live simply, without glamour or pretensions to grandeur. He understands and appreciates such people, viewing them through a benevolent prism. These are people who had more important things to do than to listen to and partake in the demagoguery of the political and religious leaders of their

period—leaders who, in their mania for suppression, denounced all opposition and went about inculcating atheism among those who did not see the world as they did. These are people who can find an accordion somewhere and round up someone to play the old, half-forgotten songs. They are people who, instead of debating the pros and cons of the old calendar versus the new calendar, gather together at religious festivals, where they learn about one another and do not build fences surrounding petty, imaginary empires.

Emanating from these tales is a pervasive melancholy rooted in 1930s Galicia. Thus, to readers of Kernytsky's collection it will come as no surprise that today's Ukrainian Canadian authors, namely, Ray Serwylo, Kathy Kolybaba, Chrystia Chomiak, and others, have continued to write in this melancholy vein, even though this younger generation of writers, raised in different settings and circumstances, tackles entirely different themes. Contemporary writers still feel the pull of that accordion player.

Although the stories in this collection are not examples of outstanding literature, they help to explain the preoccupations of Kernytsky's generation to those who followed it. His collection shows us the link between the homeland left behind, the life that was established in a new land, and the impetus for the new generation.

For the most part the translation is quite good, and the stories, which reflect an impressionistic melancholy, read smoothly. There are a few translation faux pas, but they, though irksome, do not detract from the text. On the whole this collection successfully provides another viewpoint for those who want to understand the development of émigré Ukrainian society, culture, and literature.

Jaroslav Zurowsky, Winnipeg

## Books Received

- Allcock, John B. *Explaining Yugoslavia*. Uncorrected proof. New York: Columbia University Press. Publication date: 1 May 2000. 632 pp. U.S.\$30.00 cloth.
- Andor, László. *Hungary on the Road to the European Union: Transition in Blue*. Westport, Conn.: Praeger, 2000. xii, 201 pp. U.S.\$65.00 cloth.
- Antonovych, Myroslava. *Ukraina v mizhnarodnii systemi zakhystu prav liudyny*. Kyiv: "KM Academia," 2000. 262 pp.
- Banaian, King. *The Ukrainian Economy since Independence*. Cheltenham, UK and Northampton, Mass.: Edward Elgar, 1999. x, 173 pp. U.S.\$70.00 cloth.
- Birch, Sarah. *Elections and Democratization in Ukraine*. Houndsmills, London, and New York: Macmillan Press and St. Martins Press, 2000. xii, 212 pp. U.S.\$65.00 cloth.
- Biskupski, M. B. *The History of Poland*. Westport, Conn.: Greenwood Press, 2000. xx, 239 pp. U.S.\$35.00 cloth.
- Braichevsky, Mykhailo. *Vybrani tvory: Istoryko-arkheolohichni studii, publitsystyka*. Ed. Liubomyr Vynar [Lubomyr Wynar]. Kyiv: Vydavnychiy dim "KM Academia," 1999. 600 pp.
- Bykovsky, Lev. *U sluzhbach ukraïnskii knyzhtsi*. Ed. Liubomyr R. Vynar [Lubomyr R. Wynar] and Iaroslav D. Isaievych. Lviv and New York: Ukrainske istorychne tovarystvo, 1997. 328 pp.
- Chevchenko, Jacques. *Ukraine: Bibliographie des ouvrages en français. XVIIe–XXe siècles*. Paris: Publications de l'Est Européen, 2000. 224 pp.
- David-Fox, Michael, and György Péteri, eds. *Academia in Upheaval: Origins, Transfers, and Transformations of the Communist Academic Regime in Russia and East Central Europe*. Westport, Conn. and London: Bergin & Garvey, 2000. xiv, 334 pp. U.S.\$69.95 cloth.
- Dmytriienko, Mariia, et al. *Hreky na ukraïnskykh terenakh: Narysy z etnichnoi istorii. Dokumenty, materialy, karty*. Kyiv: Lybid, 2000. 488 pp.
- Dutka, June. *The Grace of Passing: Constantine H. Andrysyshen. The Odyssey of a Slavist*. Edmonton and Toronto: Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies Press, 2000. xxxiv, 125 pp. \$14.95 paper.
- Dyczok, Marta. *The Grand Alliance and Ukrainian Refugees*. Houndsmills, London, and New York: Macmillan Press and St. Martin's Press, in association with St. Antony's College, Oxford, 2000. xvi, 277 pp. U.S.\$69.95 cloth.
- . *Ukraine: Movement without Change, Change without Movement*. Amsterdam: Harwood Academic Publishers, 2000. xxii, 164 pp. U.S.\$19.95 paper.
- Dylągowa, Hanna. *Historia Polski, 1795–1990*. Lublin: Instytut Europy Środkowo-Wschodniej, 2000. 288 pp. 25 zł.
- Filipowicz, Mirosław, ed. *Churches — States — Nations in the Enlightenment and in the Nineteenth Century*. Proceedings of the Commission Internationale d'Histoire

- Ecclesiastique Comparée, pt. 4. Lublin: Instytut Europy Środkowo-Wschodniej, 2000. 273 pp. 27 zł.
- Fitzpatrick, Sheila, ed. *Stalinism: New Directions*. London and New York: Routledge, 2000. xviii, 377 pp. CAN\$38.99 paper, CAN\$128.00 cloth.
- Gardner, Hall, ed. *Central and Southeastern Europe in Transition: Perspectives on Success and Failure since 1989*. Westport, Conn.: Praeger, 2000. xii, 211 pp. U.S.\$59.95 cloth.
- Gitelman, Zvi, et al., eds. *Cultures and Nations of Central and Eastern Europe: Essays in Honor of Roman Szporluk*. Cambridge, Mass.: Ukrainian Research Institute, Harvard University, 2000. xxii, 646 pp. U.S.\$24.95 paper. Distributed by Harvard University Press.
- Hodos, George H. *The East-Central European Region: An Historical Outline*. Westport, Conn.: Praeger, 1999. x, 158 pp. U.S.\$55.00.
- Hrabovych, Hryhorii [Grabowicz, George]. *Do istorii ukrainskoi literatury: Doslidzhennia, ese, polemika*. Kyiv: Osnovy, 1997. 608 pp.
- Hrycak, Jarosław [Hrysak, Iaroslav]. *Historia Ukrainy, 1772–1999: Narodziny nowoczesnego narodu*. Trans. Katarzyna Kotyńska. Lublin: Instytut Europy Środkowo-Wschodniej, 2000. 359 pp. 25 zł.
- Hrysak, Iaroslav, and Iaroslav Dashkevych, eds. *Mykhailo Hrushevsky i ukrainska istorychna nauka: Materialy naukovykh konferentsii, prysviachenykh Mykhailovi Hrushevskomu*. Lviv, 24–25 zhovtnia 1994 r.; Kharkiv, 25 serpnia 1996 r.; Lviv, 29 veresnia 1996 r. Lviv: Instytut istorychnykh doslidzhen Lvivskoho derzhavnoho universytetu im. Ivana Franka and Instytut ukrainskoi arkhieohrafii ta dzhereloznavstva im. Mykhaila Hrushevskoho NAN Ukrainy, Lvivske viddilennia, 1999. vi, 377 pp.
- Hunczak, Taras. *On the Horns of a Dilemma: The Story of the Ukrainian Division Halychyna*. Lanham, Md.: University Press of America, 2000. x, 241 pp. U.S.\$44.50 cloth.
- , ed. *Russian Imperialism from Ivan the Great to the Revolution*. Lanham, Md.: University Press of America, 2000. xii, 396 pp. U.S.\$44.50 paper.
- Iatridis, Demetrius S., ed. *Social Justice and the Welfare State in Central and Eastern Europe: The Impact of Privatization*. Westport, Conn.: Praeger, 2000. xiv, 254 pp. U.S.\$65.00 cloth.
- Jakowenko, Natalia [Iakovenko, Nataliia]. *Historia Ukrainy od czasów najdawniejszych do końca XVIII wieku*. Trans. Ola Hnatiuk and Katarzyna Kotyńska. Lublin: Instytut Europy Środkowo-Wschodniej, 2000. 397 pp. 25 zł.
- Janmaat, Jan Germen. *Nation Building in Post-Soviet Ukraine: Educational Policy and the Response of the Russian-Speaking Population*. Vol. 268 of Netherlands Geographical Studies. Utrecht and Amsterdam: The Royal Dutch Geographical Society and the Faculty of Social and Behavioural Sciences, University of Amsterdam, 2000. 233 pp. U.S.\$23.00 paper. Order from Netherlands Geographical Studies, P.O. Box 80123, 3508 TC Utrecht, The Netherlands; fax: +31 30 253 5523; e-mail: knag@geog.uu.nl.
- Kelly, Catriona, and Stephen Lovell, eds. *Russian Literature, Modernism and the Visual Arts*. Cambridge and New York: Cambridge University Press, 2000. xiv, 318 pp. U.S.\$64.95 cloth.



- Koscharsky, Halyna, ed. *First Wave Emigrants: The First Fifty Years of Ukrainian Settlement in Australia*. Huntington, N.Y.: Nova Science Publishers, 2000. xii, 134 pp. U.S.\$49.00 cloth.
- Kulish, Mykola. *Зона/Blight: A Play in Three Acts*. Trans. Maria Popovich-Semeniuk and John Woodsworth with an intro by Maria Popovich-Semeniuk. Foreword by Myroslav Shkandarij. New York, Ottawa, and Toronto: Legas, 1996. xiv, 111 pp.
- Laslo-Kutsiuk, Mahdalyna. *Kliuch do beletrystyky*. Bucharest: MUSTANG, 2000. 292 pp.
- László-Kutiuk, Magdalena [Laslo-Kutsiuk, Mahdalyna]. *Exotica limitrofa: Studii comparate româno-ucrainene*. Bucharest: Kriterion, 1997. 199 pp.
- Lee, Stephen J. *Stalin and the Soviet Union*. London and New York: Routledge, 1999. x, 130 pp. CAN\$17.99 paper.
- Liulevicius, Vejas Gabriel. *War Land on the Eastern Front: Culture, National Identity and German Occupation in World War I*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2000. viii, 310 pp. U.S.\$59.95 cloth.
- Luciuk, Lubomyr Y. *Searching for Place: Ukrainian Displaced Persons, Canada, and the Migration of Memory*. Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 2000. xxx, 576 pp. \$29.95 paper, \$70.00 cloth (in U.S.\$ outside Canada).
- , comp., with the assistance of Natalka Yurieva and Roman Zakaluzny. *Roll Call: Lest We Forget*. Kingston, Ont.: Kashtan Press for the Ukrainian Canadian Civil Liberties Association and the Ukrainian Canadian Congress, 1999. vi, 85 pp. [Register of Ukrainians and other Europeans imprisoned as “enemy aliens” during Canada’s internment operations of 1914–20.]
- Luckyj, George S. N. *Seven Lives: Vignettes of Ukrainian Writers in the Nineteenth Century*. Vol. 20 (1998–9), nos. 47–8 of *The Annals of the Ukrainian Academy of Arts and Sciences in the U.S.* (New York). 208 pp. Cloth.
- Lutsky, Iurii [Luckyj, George S. N.]. *Na storozhii: Druha chastyna spomyniv*. Kyiv: Krytyka, 2000. 112 pp. Paper.
- Magocsi, Paul Robert. *Carpatho-Rusyn Studies: An Annotated Bibliography*. Vol. 2. 1985–1994. New York: East European Monographs, 1999. Distributed by Columbia University Press, 1998. viii, 280 pp. U.S.\$71.00 cloth.
- . *Of the Making of Nationalities There Is No End*. Vol. 1. *Carpatho-Rusyns in Europe and North America*. Intro. by Christopher M. Hann. xxx, 482 pp.; Vol. 2. *Speeches, Debates, Bibliographic Works*. Intro. by Tom Trier. xxiv, 536 pp. New York: East European Monographs, 1999. Distributed by Columbia University Press. U.S.\$140.00 cloth.
- Margolian, Howard. *Unauthorized Entry: The Truth about Nazi War Criminals in Canada, 1946–1956*. Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 2000. viii, 327 pp.
- Melnyk, George. *New Moon at Batoche: Reflections on the Urban Prairie*. Banff: The Banff Centre Press, 1999. 160 pp. \$17.95 paper.
- Nivat, Georges, Vilen Horsky, and Miroslav Popovitch, eds. *Ukraine, renaissance d'un mythe national*. Euryopa Études 10-2000. Institut Européen de l'Université de Genève. 274 pp. SFr 8.00.
- Oliinyk-Rakhmanny, Roman. *Literaturno-ideolohichni napriamky v Zakhidnii Ukraini (1919–1939 roky)*. Kyiv: Chetverta khvyliia, 1999. 232 pp.
- Pavlychko, Solomiia. *Lysty z Kyieva: 12 travnia 1990 – 2 kvitnia 1991*. Kyiv: Vydavnytstvo Solomii Pavlychko “Osnovy”, 2000. 160 pp.

- . *Natsionalizm, seksualnist, oriientalizm: Skladnyi svit Ahatanhela Krymskoho*. Kyiv: Vydavnytstvo Solomii Pavlychko "Osnovy", 2000. 332 pp.
- Potocki, Robert. *Idea restytucji Ukraińskiej Republiki Ludowej (1920–1939)*. Lublin: Instytut Europy Środkowo-Wschodniej, 1999. 383 pp. 29 zł.
- Prystaiko, Volodymyr, and Iurii Shapoval. *Mykhailo Hrushevsky: Sprava "UNTs" i ostanni roky (1931–1934)*. Kyiv: "Krytyka", 1999. 355 pp.
- Reese, Roger R. *The Soviet Military Experience: A History of the Soviet Army, 1917–1991*. London and New York: Routledge, 2000. xi, 207 pp. CAN\$32.99 paper, CAN\$98.00 cloth.
- Rusnak, Ivan. *Ukrainska literatura Kanady i formuvannia natsionalnoi svidomosti kanadskykh ukrainsiv*. Sniatyn: PrutPrynt, 1999. 128 pp.
- Sakwa, Richard. *The Rise and Fall of the Soviet Union, 1917–1991*. London and New York: Routledge, 1999. xxi, 521 pp. CAN\$37.99 paper, CAN\$128.00 cloth.
- Scardellato, Gabriele, ed. *Paul Robert Magocsi: A Bibliography, 1964–2000*. Intro. by John-Paul Himka. Toronto: Chair of Ukrainian Studies, University of Toronto, 2000. xii, 90 pp.
- Svarich, Peter. *Memoirs, 1877–1904*. Trans. William Kostash. Ed. Rita Dirks, Bohdan Medwidsky, and Andriy Nahachewsky. Edmonton: Ukrainian Pioneers' Association of Alberta and Huculak Chair of Ukrainian Culture and Ethnography, 1999. xxviii, 279 pp. \$15.00 paper.
- Szporluk, Roman. *Russia, Ukraine, and the Breakup of the Soviet Union*. Stanford: Hoover Institution Press, 2000. l, 438 pp. U.S.\$24.95 paper.
- Terenteva, Natalia. *Greki v Ukraine: Ekonomicheskaiia i kulturno-prosvetitel'skaia deiatel'nost (XVII–XX vv.)*. Kyiv: Akvilon-Press, 1999. 352 pp.
- Thompson, Ewa M. *Imperial Knowledge: Russian Literature and Colonialism*. Westport, Conn.: Greenwood Press, 2000. viii, 240 pp. U.S.\$59.95 cloth.
- The Ukrainian Weekly 2000: The Most Significant New Stories and Commentaries Published in The Ukrainian Weekly*. Vol. 1. 1933–1969. Compiled and written by the editors of *The Ukrainian Weekly*. Parsippany, N.J.: The Ukrainian Weekly, 2000. 287 pp. U.S.\$15.00 paper.
- Vaňko, Juraj. *The Language of Slovakia's Rusyns / Jazyk slovenských rusínov*. English translation and Slovak original. New York: East European Monographs, 2000. xx, 114 pp. and xx, 121 pp. U.S.\$35.00 cloth. Distributed by Columbia University Press.
- Verba, Ihor. *Oleksandr Ohloblyn: Zhyttia i pratsia v Ukraini. Do 100-richchia z dnia narodzhennia*. Kyiv: Natsionalna akademiia nauk Ukrainy, Instytut ukrainskoi arkhеоhrafii ta dzhereloznavstva im. M. S. Hrushevskoho, 1999. 384 pp.
- Vynar, Liubomyr [Lubomyr Vynar], Ihor Pasichnyk, et al., eds. *Osiahnennia istorii: Zbirnyk naukovykh prats na poshanu profesora Mykoly Pavlovycha Koval'skoho z nahody 70-richchia*. Ostroh and New York: Ostrozka akademiia and Ukrainske istorychne tovarystvo, 1999. 596 pp.
- Vynnychuk, Yuri. *The Windows of Time Frozen and Other Stories*. Trans. from the Ukrainian by Michael Naydan and [one story] Askold Melnyczuk. Lviv: Klasyka, 2000. 272 pp.
- Vysotsky, S. O. *Kyivska pysemna shkola X–XII st. (Do istorii ukrainskoi pysemnosti)*. Lviv, Kyiv, and New York: Vydavnytstvo M. P. Kotsia, 1998. 248 pp.

- Walter, Barbara F., and Jack Snyder, eds. *Civil Wars, Insecurity, and Intervention*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1999. x, 331 pp. U.S.\$20.00 paper, U.S.\$50.00 cloth.
- Wilson, Andrew. *The Ukrainians: Unexpected Nation*. New Haven and London: Yale University Press, 2000. xviii, 366 pp. U.S.\$29.95 cloth.
- Wolchik, Sharon L., and Volodymyr Zviglyanich, eds. *Ukraine: The Search for a National Identity*. Lanham, Md.: Rowman & Littlefield, 1999. xix, 310 pp. U.S.\$29.95 paper, U.S.\$60.00 cloth.
- Wynar, Bohdan S. *Independent Ukraine: A Bibliographic Guide to English-Language Publications, 1989-1999*. xiv, 552 pp. U.S.\$85.00 cloth; U.S.\$102.00 outside North America.
- Zlupko, Stepan. *Ekonomichna dumka Ukrainy (vid davnyny do suchasnosti)*. Lviv: Lvivskyi natsionalnyi universytet imeni Ivana Franka, 2000. 496 pp.
- . *Na chatakh ridnoi zemli: Ievhen Khraplyvy — uchenyi, orhanizator, patriot*. Lviv: Lvivskyi natsionalnyi universytet imeni Ivana Franka, 1999. 284 pp.

# ***JUS***

*A valuable resource of original research, analysis and discussion on all aspects of Ukrainian Studies*

Back issues of the Journal are available at reduced prices. Recent volumes that can be ordered have included the following articles:

**1995, Vol. 20 (1-2) — *Special Issue: Ukrainian Studies Association of Australia Second Conference***

"Creating a Sacred Place: The Ukrainophiles and Shevchenko's Tomb in Kaniv" (S. Yekelchuk), "From Osadchy to the 'Koleso' Controversy: Modernity and its Meanings in Ukrainian Culture since the 1960s" (M. Pavlyshyn), "Iurii Andrukhovych's 'Recreations' and Ukrainian Postmodernism" (S. M. Vladiv-Glover), "Imagining the Imaginary: Nostalgia and the Ukrainian-Australian Text" (S. Mycak), "Ukrainian 'External Affairs' in Australia, 1966-95: Coming Out of the 'Ghetto'" (M. L. Lawriwsky), "Poland and Ukraine: Elite Transformation and Prospects for Democracy" (J. Pakulski) [226 pp.]

**1996, Vol. 21 (1-2) — *Special Issue: Ukraine — Developing a Democratic Polity: Essays in Honour of Peter J. Potichnyj***

"Imperial Decline and Collapse as a Problem in the Social Sciences" (J. S. Reshetar Jr.), "The Nativist-Westernizer Controversy in Ukraine" (M. Riabchouk), "*Krakivski visti* and the Jews, 1943" (J.-P. Himka), "Ukraine—A Nation-State or a State of Nations?" (J. Birch), "Ukraine's Political Elite and the Transition to Post-Communism" (B. Harasymiw), "From Liberalization to Post-Communism: The Role of the Communist Party in Ukraine" (Z. Sochor), "Ukraine's Economic Recovery Potential to the Year 2000" (S. Rosefielde), "Social Policy and Political Discourse in Post-Soviet Ukraine" (A. Chandler) [352 pp.]

**1997, Vol. 22 (1-2) — *Special Issue: Hryhorii Skovoroda***

"Skovoroda as *Philosophus Ludens*" (T.D. Zakydalsky), "Skovoroda's Divine Narcissism" (N. Pylypiuk), "*The Narcissus*: Skovoroda's 'First-Born Son'" (S. Scherer), "Skovoroda's and Socrates' Concepts of Self-Cognition" (J. Fizer), "Pietist Nationalism and the Russian Rediscovery of Skovoroda" (A. Mihailovic), "Tolstoy's Skovoroda" (R. F. Gustafson), "Vladimir Ern and Hryhorii Skovoroda" (B. Horowitz), "Skovoroda in Andrei Bely's *Petersburg*" (M. Carlson), "Skovoroda: In but Not of the Eighteenth Century" (G. L. Kline) [232 pp.]

## 1998, Vol. 23 (1)

"Ukrainian-Polish Relations in Galicia in 1918–1919" (O. Pavliuk), "The Tragic Fate of Iulian Bachynsky" (I. Shapoval), "At the Crossroads of Socialism, Nationalism, and Christianity: The Intriguing Biography/Autobiography of Pavlo Krat" (W. Smyrniw), "Ukrainian Literature in Poland, 1956–1993" (O. Duć-Fajfer), "The Jewish Massacres in the Historiography of the Khmelnytsky Uprising" (F. E. Sysyn), "Toward a 'Normal' Ukrainian History" (O. Andriewsky), "Ukraine in a Grand Narrative of European History" (J.-P. Himka), "Asserting a Presence: New Translations of Recent Ukrainian Literature" (M. Pavlyshyn) [127pp.]

## 1998, Vol 23 (2)

"The Transformation and Formation of Social Strata and Their Place in the Ukrainian National Movement in Nineteenth-Century Galicia" (J.-P. Himka), "Galician Society as a Cultural Public, 1771–1914" (J. T. Pękacz), "Vasyl Podolynsky's *Słowo przestrogi* and Ukrainian-Polish Relations in Nineteenth-Century Galica" (F. Steblii), "Lewis Namier and the Problem of Eastern Galicia" (M. Baker), "Nationhood and its Discontents: Ukrainian Intellectual History at Empire's End" (D. McDonald) [154pp.]

## 1999, Vol. 24 (1)

"Conceptual Issues in Studying the History of the Ukrainian Revolution" (V. Verstiuk), "Approaches to the Study of the Ukrainian Revolution" (M. Bojcun), "Beyond the National: Peasants, Power, and Revolution in Ukraine" (M. Baker), "The Revolution at Eighty: Reconstructing Past Identities after the 'Linguistic Turn'" (S. Yekelchuk), "Stalin's War against the Peasants: Questions and Meanings" (A. Graziosi) [159pp.]

## 1999, Vol. 24 (2)

"Zvenyhorod in Galicia: An Archaeological Survey (Eleventh–Mid-Thirteenth Century)" (R. K. Kovalev), "Ukrainians in Seventeenth-Century Political Trials" (A. Rustemeyer), "Mykhailo Drahomanov's Writings on the Pan-Slavic Mission: A Russian or Ukrainian Discourse" (A. Kruglashov), "Mykhailo Hrushevsky in Moscow and His Death (1931–34): New Revelations" (I. Shapoval), "In Search of Early Modern Ukrainian Statehood: Post-Soviet Studies of the Cossack Hetmanate" (Z. E. Kohut) [166pp.]

	<b>Canada (GST incl.)</b>	<b>Outside Canada</b>
Single Issue	\$10.70	U.S.\$10.00
Double Issue or Volume (Nos. 1 & 2)	\$21.40	U.S.\$20.00

To place an order, and for details on earlier issues, please write to:

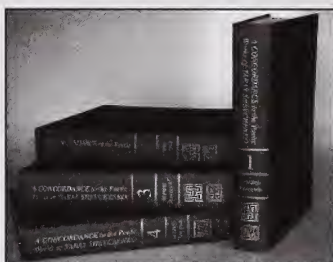
Journal of Ukrainian Studies,  
450 Athabasca Hall, University of Alberta,  
Edmonton, AB T6G 2E8 Canada      email: [cius@ualberta.ca](mailto:cius@ualberta.ca)



*Oleh S. Ilnytskyj and George Hawrysch*

# **A Concordance to the Poetic Works of Taras Shevchenko**

*A Concordance to the Poetic Works of Taras Shevchenko*, published jointly by the Shevchenko Scientific Society (USA) and Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies Press, is an invaluable research tool for scholars and students of the poetic legacy of Ukraine's national poet, Taras Shevchenko. A four-volume publication containing over 3,200 pages, it is a complete alphabetical index of all the words contained in Shevchenko's Ukrainian- and Russian-language poetry, showing both the places where each word may be found and its immediate textual setting.



The concordance is a major milestone, being the *first and only instance* of this genre in Ukrainian studies. It promises to be an important and useful guidebook not only for literary critics, but for linguists and lexicographers as well. The *Concordance* permits quick and easy access to Shevchenko's every word and provides each and every context in which the word is used. Thus, scholars can easily trace nuances of meaning and syntactical or grammatical structures, and investigate major themes or topics. To assist researchers, the edition contains a dozen appendixes that show word frequencies and other statistics.

**\$250.00 (complete set only)**

Send your cheque to:

CIUS, 450 Athabasca Hall

University of Alberta, Edmonton, AB

Canada T6G 2E8

(Add \$25.00 for shipping and handling. Canadian orders add 7% GST. Outside Canada prices are in US\$.)

# WORKING PAPERS IN UKRAINIAN STUDIES

Working Papers in Ukrainian Studies is an on-line, refereed journal that publishes original papers (previously unpublished) in Ukrainian, Russian and English. The editors welcome submissions on all subjects in the social sciences and humanities dealing with contemporary Ukraine.

## Editorial Board:

Marko Bojcun (Managing Editor)

Olena Bekh

John-paul Himka

Peter Gowan

Vladimir Kukhareenko

Pieta Angelo Monks

Serhiy Ryabov

Mykola Soroka

Tatiana Zhurzhenko

ISSN 1467-0372

[www.unl.ac.uk/ukrainecentre/wpusc-e.shtml](http://www.unl.ac.uk/ukrainecentre/wpusc-e.shtml)

University of North London

## Submission Guidelines

We do not accept articles that have been published or accepted or are being considered for publication elsewhere. We also reserve the right to edit all submissions.

Authors should submit all articles and reviews to the address below in WordPerfect (5.1, 7/8, 2000) or Microsoft Word (97, 2000) for Windows on a floppy disk or as an e-mail attachment. They should also mail two hard copies with double-spaced text in 11-point typesize to the editor for verification and refereeing purposes. Submissions should have minimal formatting—i.e., one-inch margins, paragraph returns and tabs, indents, full justification, and italics (in book and serial titles and foreign words) only. Please do not add any other coding, styles, left or right justification, superscript letters, small capitals, fonts, headers, footers, page numbering, or double letter-spaces between words or after periods.

Articles should not be longer than 10,000 words, including the notes. Footnotes should be used instead of endnotes. They should include the names of authors and editors as they appear in the work cited (do not substitute initials for first names), the full title and subtitle of the work, and the name of the publisher in addition to the place and year of publication. A tab should separate the text of the note from the footnote number preceding it. For further information regarding footnotes, please consult the 14th edition of *The Chicago Manual of Style*.

Ukrainian and Russian book and article titles, personal names, and quotations in those languages should be transliterated according to the modified Library of Congress system below—i.e., without diacritics; without indicating the soft or hard sign by using a single or double prime—except in the word “Rus”; and with Ukrainian and Russian surnames ending in -sky instead of -s'kyi or -skii. Thus, the Ukrainian alphabet is transliterated as

а—a	і—i	т—t
б—b	ї—i	у—u
в—v	й—i	ф—f
г—h	к—k	х—kh
ґ—g	л—l	ц—ts
д—d	м—m	ш—sh
е—e	н—n	щ—shch
є—ie	о—o	ю—iu
ж—zh	п—p	я—ia
з—z	р—r	ь—omit
и—y	с—s	ий—y in endings of personal names only.

**Journal of Ukrainian Studies**  
**1 Spadina Crescent, Room 111**  
**University of Toronto**  
**Toronto ON**  
**Canada M5S 2J5**

**e-mail: r.senkus@utoronto.ca**



